



MEDICO-LEGAL  
EXAMINATION  
OF THE ABUSES, ABERRATIONS, AND DEMENTIA  
OF THE GENITAL SENSE

Then gently scan your brither man,  
Still gentler, sister woman,  
Though they may gang a' kennin' wrang,  
To step aside is human

ROBT BURNS

Das Wahre is eine Jackel, aber eine ungeheure;  
desswegen suchen wir alle blingend so daran vorbei  
zu kommen, in Furcht sogar uns zu verbrennen.

Goethe

For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections for even  
their women did change the natural use into that which is against na-  
ture . And likewise also the men leaving the natural use of the wo-  
man, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men work-  
ing that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recom-  
pence of their error which was meet

ST PAUL

THE PSYCHOPATHY OF LOVE

The Abuses

ABBERRATIONS, AND CRIMES

OF THE

# Genital Sense

Done into English direct from the Original Manuscript of

D<sup>r</sup> JACOBUS X

FRENCH ARMY SURGEON

and

AUTHOR OF UNTRODDEN FIELDS OF ANTHROPOLOGY  
ETHNOLOGY OF THE SIXTH SENSE GENITAL LAWS etc etc

o

PARIS

CHARLES CARRINGTON

13 FAUBOURG MONTMARTRE 13

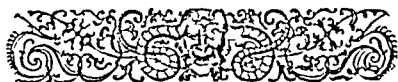


*This work, printed for a small number of Subscribers, Medical Men, Experts and Specialists in Nervous Diseases, Lawyers, Psychiatrists, Travellers and Anthropologists, is not sold to the Trade, and is strictly limited to Seven Hundred and Fifty numbered copies.*

*The present copy is,*

## FOREWORD





# Foreword

## A DEFENCE AND EXPLANATION

*There are certain subjects of human enquiry before which the intelligence of sane men reels back with horror. This is a healthy sign. The dark corners of the world's life are not for common men. There are night mare phantoms of uncanny brains which none but the resolute and trained mind of the Doctor, Lawyer, and Mental Pathologist can face and exorcise without fear of hurt.*

*The medico-legal enquiries prosecuted in the present volume I have sought to approach in a philosophic spirit.*

*No sentiment or expression incompatible with the dignity of the medical calling has been allowed to appear. In the presence of deep suffering there can be only profound pity, from the pain torn features of sorrow, Science seeks to wipe away the tears. Where vulgar minds see only matter for mirth, the surgeon perceives the need of loving care and pitiful commiseration.*

*Had I not long felt the necessity of the present work I should have hesitated to put it into my publisher's hands.*

*And this for more than one reason. A man who is bold enough to grapple with studies of this nature is always liable to have his motives misinterpreted by the base and evil-minded*

*They will attribute to him desire of gain even though he may have like myself, toiled all his days in the cause of knowledge without hope or wish of pecuniary reward. They will ascribe to him the very passions he aims at analysing because (they will insinuate), "how can a man have such an intimate acquaintance with these abominations if he has not practised them?"*

*As well impute to the doctor the maladies he diagnoses, or to the magistrate the crimes he unravels, maugre all the tortuous workings of the criminal mind*

*These folk remind one of the people who criticise the firemen that plunge into the flames, who find fault with the fishermen that put out for the breaking wreck. They personalise the self-sufficiency of the Pharisee, the wilful blindness of the Levite "who passed by on the other side."*

*Like my distinguished English confrère, Dr. William Acton in his work on "Prostitution", "I have little to say in the way of apology for my plain speaking."*

*The nature of the subject forces this upon me. To have called things here treated of by other than their right names would have been in any writer an absurdity, in me a gross one. My style is, I regret, somewhat rugged. Let it be remembered that I am but a torch-bearer, heralding the way for gallant men who will be fighting boldly long after I shall have fallen out of the march.*

*In the two first volumes, "Ethnology of the Sixth Sense," and "Genital Laws", we have studied the Anatomy and the Physiology of Normal Love. The present and two succeeding volumes will be wholly devoted to the examination*

*of its Excesses Abuses Perversions, Aberrations and Crimes*

*Following the example of Dr Krafft-Ebing we have made a special study of Sexual Inversion*

*We have endeavoured above all to give a summary in clear form and within every body's capacity of the remarkable studies of our fellow-countrymen Drs Ball Charcot Chevalier Cullerier Lacassagne Lasvigne E Laurent Lauprès, Luix Legrain, Magnan Moreau (of Tours), Pichon Thoinot and of the learned foreigners Moll Krafft Ebing Raffalovitch Tarnowsky and Westphal It cannot be denied that the labours of the above named authors have resulted in a greater amount of knowledge in this branch of medical science during the last ten years than it has had since the beginning of the century*

*We shall continue in this volume to indicate the sources from which we have borrowed and to support our theories strongly by numerous examples When the facts speak for themselves lengthy digressions are unnecessary in a work intended as this is for the diffusion of scientific knowledge*

*As regards the wording of this important part of our work we have adopted as our rule the opinions of the following authors*

*' No physical or moral distress no wound however corrupted it may be ought to frighten the devotee of the science of man, and the sacred ministry of medicine obliging him to behold every thing allows him also to say everything (TARDIEU )*

*It is wrong for us during the greater part of the time to handle the questions which relate to the instinct of reproduction with timidity and false shame and to surround them with reticence and mystery Matters relating to sexual life ought to be studied without the introduction of moral prepossessions or of preconceived ideas False shame is as hateful as frivolity It is a matter of pressing concern to rid ourself of the old prejudice that we*

*"sully our pens" by touching upon facts of this class. Of what use is it to break out into varied cries of indignant conscience, etc. . . "*

*"It is necessary at all costs to replace this old and timorous scientific baggage by a deep and calm and serene study, in which analysis will certainly succeed better than big words. To put aside our moral esthetic or religious personality, to regard facts of this nature merely as natural phenomena, with impartiality and a certain elevation of mind, is the true scientific spirit "* (Dr L CHEVALIER.)

*"It is the sad privilege of medicine and especially of a mad-doctor to be compelled to see only the reverse side of life, human weakness and misery. In its heavy task it finds however a consolation, it shows that unhealthy dispositions have given birth to all the facts which may offend the moral and esthetic sense, and in this there is something to reassure moralists. Moreover it vindicates human honour before the judgment of morality, and the honour of individuals arraigned before justice and public opinion. Besides in applying itself to these researches, it only accomplishes a duty. To seek for truth is the supreme object of all human knowledge "* (Dr KRAFFT EBING )

*If I own I have not relied upon my observations only but quoted largely from the works of other medical men, it is because I deemed it important for them to share the responsibility of many statements and conclusions which I could have abundantly established by facts which have come under my personal cognisance*

*Hence I would fain hope that the professional Expert who does me the honour of perusing the following pages will not do so without considerable profit.*

*Here the Magistrate will find the secret explanation of many a painful case which has set Society by the ears*

*The Psychiatrist will discover fresh problems which may prove fruitful of suggestion, and aid in working out the tangled threads of warped passions*

*The Libertine into whose hands the work may fall, will may-hap give pause even on the brink of the precipice*

*Lastly the Advocate who practises in the Divorce or Criminal, courts will here stumble across the basis for many valuable arguments — nay more he will learn, as D Acton has wisely hinted how in many cases of guilt fair cause may be shown for a culprit's committal to a Lunatic Asylum instead of to a Prison*

D<sup>r</sup> JACOBUS X

MEUDON

(Seine)

FRANCE

MAY 1900









ANALYTICAL  
TABLE OF CONTENTS  
TO  
MEDICO LEGAL STUDIES  
OF THE  
ABUSES, ABERRATIONS, AND DEMENTIA  
OF THE GENITAL SENSE

FOREWORD

CHAPTER I  
Factors which constitute Human Love

CHAPTER II  
Genital Excesses

Influence of Temperament upon Love — The Erotic Temperament  
— Various observations on the Erotic temperament — The Marquis  
de Sombreuse — A London Minotaur — Precocious Sexual  
Instinct — Possibility of a little boy's violating a young girl —  
Prolongation of the Sexual Instinct — The Old Man's Morbid  
Love — Jean Richepin's Poem *Pour faire peur au Chat* — Genesis  
Excitations provoked by various Affections (*Locomotor Ataxy* *Mania*  
*Phthisis* *Chorea*) — Impotence or Sexual Anaesthesia 1<sup>st</sup> Conge-  
nital 2<sup>d</sup> Acquired Remarkable Observations

## CHAPTER III

## Genital Abuses

Priapism — Observations on various cases of Priapism. — Satyriasis — Description of Satyriasis, after Moreau — Causes of Satyriasis. — Different Observations on Satyriasis — Nymphomania — Its Causes — The Three Phases of Nymphomania, after Moreau. — Classification of Professor Thoinot — Numerous Instances of Different bases of Nymphomania. — Exclusive Nymphomaniac Love, by Thoinot — Observation Relating to an Imbecile Nymphomaniac.

## CHAPTER IV

Genital Abuses (*continued*)

## On Onanism in general

Definition of Onanism of Mauby Souillet — Forms and processes of Genital Pollution in Man. — Classification by Garnier — Solitary Pollution — Pollution in Common — Observations on Pollution, Personal and in Common — Manual Pollution — Rubbings and Compression of the Penis on or in any body — Instances of Pollution through Compression of the Penis — through Rubbing of the Penis — Shape of the Penis revealing the mode employed for Masturbation — Pollution by the tickling of the gland with the end of the fingers — Pollution by the introduction of the Penis into some Body, or by a Constrictory Band round the Penis. — Observations on Pollution relating to these different ways — Pollution by special movements of the Body or by general Shock — Observations on Pollution by Hanging — Pollution by the Introduction of Foreign Bodies into the Canal of the Urethra — Incomplete Pollution — Various Instances — Pollution with manœuvres on the neighbouring Organs, principally the Scrotum and Rectum (*The Postilion of Marseille and the Commissioner's Hat*) — Posterior Pollution — This is in the Domain of Pederasty — Curious case of Posterior Pollution — The Height of Ingratitude

## CHAPTER V

Genital Abuses (*continued*)

## Causes, Signs and Consequences of Onanism in Man

Causes of Onanism in Man. — Table of Classification of the causes of Onanism — Different opinions upon the causes of Onanism. — Selected Observations on Pollution relating to the causes of Ona-

nism — Syndromes and Signs of Onanism in Man — Comparison of the Effects of Coition with those of Onanism — Diseases produced or maintained by Pollution — Local and adjacent Affections — General Affections — Consequences to the other organic apparatus — Observations upon Pouillet's Classification — The Consequences of Onanism and Poetry — Selected Observations on Pollutions relating to the Consequences of Onanism

## CHAPTER VI

### Genital Abuses (*continued*)

#### Onanism in Woman

Frequency of Onanism in Women — Classification of the forms of Feminine Onanism — Vaginal Masturbation — Observations relating to various Instruments extracted from the Vaginas of Onanists — *A* Vagino uterine Masturbation — *B* Clitoridian Masturbation — Observations on Clitoridian Masturbation — *C* Urethral Masturbation — Observations on Urethral Masturbation — Causes of Onanism in Women — *A* Physical Causes — *B* Social Causes — *C* Moral and Intellectual Causes — Observations relating to the causes of Feminine Onanism — The *Godmichets* of the Great Ladies of the French Court — Syndromes and Signs of Masturbation — Consequences of Onanism in Women — Affections resulting from Masturbatory Manceuvres in Women — *A* Local and adjacent — *B* General — Observations relating to the Consequences of Onanism — Treatment of Onanism in Women

## CHAPTER VII

### Genital Aberrations

#### Exhibitionism

Definition of Exhibitionism — Characteristics of Exhibitionism — *A* Exhibitionists weak in mind (*Imbeciles Idiots*) — Observations relating to this Type — *B* General Paralytics — Observations relating to this Type — *C* Senile and Alcoholic Dementia — Different Kinds of Delirium — Observations relating to Senile Dementia — Observations relating to cases of Alcoholic Delirium and other various Deliria — A case of Lypomania — *D* Epilepsy — Observations relating to this Type — *E* Degenerates — Observations — Exhibitionists — Rubbers — Observations relating to this type

## CHAPTER VIII

**Genital Aberrations** (*continued*).**Fetishism**

Definition of Fetishism. — Origin of Fetishism — Fetish Love, after E Laurent — General Characteristics of Fetishism — Varieties of the Fetish Sexual Act — Diversity of Fetishes -- Fetishism of the Eyes — Observations — Fetishism of the Hand — Observations. — Fetishism of the Ear and Mouth — Fetishism of Opulent Figures — Fetishism of Physical Defects — Aberrations. — Fetishism of the Hair — Observations — Handlers, rubbers, and those who cut off plaits of hair (after Macé) — Fetishism of the Foot — Observations — Fetishism of the *Odor Fœmina* — Observations — Fetishism of the Voice — Observations

## CHAPTER IX

**Genital Aberrations** (*continued*)**Azoophilism.**

Definition of Azoophilism — Men who are in love with women's aprons, petticoats and under-linen — Observations Admirers of pocket-handkerchiefs — Observations. Fetishism and azoophilism of homo-sexual Love — Observations Men who are in love with the shoe. — Observations Men who are in love with Fabrics — Observations Cutters of dresses, mantles and furs. — Burners and Defilers of dresses — Azoophilists guilty of outrages against Public Decency — Men who are in love with Statues

## CHAPTER X

**Genital Aberrations** (*continued*)**Necrophily**

Definition of Necrophily — General Characteristics of Necrophily — Is Necrophily a special aberration? — Contradictory opinions of Thomot and Krafft-Ebing — *A.* Viciously depraved Necrophilists Observations — The Convicts who violated Corpses — *B* Feish Necrophilists Observations — *C* Sadist Necrophilists Observations. — The son who assassinated his Mother and violated her Corpse — The Kanaka Necrophilists of New Caledonia — The Arab, Bechir — Louis, the Kanaka Interpreter

## CHAPTER XI

Genital Aberration (*continued*)  
Bestiality

Definition of Bestiality — Is Bestiality a Depravation or an Aberration of the Mind? — Bestiality is as the case may be either a vicious Depravation or a mental Aberration

A *Bestiality as a vice through Depravation or Perversity* — Bestiality permitted to the Mahometans as a Hygienic measure Bestiality in Ancient times Instances — Pasiphae and the Bull — The Mysteries of the Bona Dea — The Satyr and the She Goat — The Sacred He goat and the Woman — Apuleius Golden Ass — Bestiality a vice of our times — Instances Men and Dogs — Curious Observations — Ann m te boy pederated by a dog — Peasant pederated by a bull — Men copulating with dogs and bitches — Unpublished Observations — Women and Dogs — Men and She Goats — Men Mares, and She Asses — The sweet hearts of the Regiment — The Fellator of Mares — Men and Fowls — Observations — The Chinese Duck trick

B *Bestiality a Disease through Degeneracy or any other mental Cause* — Observations with comments by Thoinot — Bestiality in the Brothels of Paris

## CHAPTER XII

Genital Madness  
Sadism

Definition of Sadism — Antiquity of Sadism — Sadism exists principally among Men — Causes of Sadism — Reason of the greater frequency of Sadism among Men — Acquired Sadism and Congenital Sadism — Classification of Sadists — Symptomatic and Etiological Elements of Sadism — Relations of the Sadic act with the Sexual Life — Victims of Sadic Cruelty — Greater Sadists — A Innate — B Acquired — The Law of Greater Sadism — Observations on Greater Innate Sadists (Andreas Beschel Philippe, Grassi, Menesclou Alton The Ripper of Whitechapel Verzeni Lepage etc.) The political and military Life of Gilles de Rays called Blue beard — Nature of the Sadic crimes committed by Gilles de Rays — Depositions of his accomplices Henriot and Fonton — The guilty man's Confessions — Gilles de Rays Sadism was it innate or acquired? Gilles de Rays was diseased a Madman and not a Monster — The Violator Assassin Blanchard — Murder committed by two Pederasts upon a young boy aged three and a half — Six

curious Observations relating to innate Sadists and Greater acquired Sadists — Unpublished cases of Sadism relating to the Annamite Races — Their natural Cruelty — Political Sadists during the Insurrection in Cochín-China in 1867 — Sadic and Pederastic vengeance inflicted on a Pirate Chief — Case of Erotic Mutilation through Pederastic Jealousy. — Sadic Murder of a European for the sake of Gain

## CHAPTER XIII

### Genital Madness

#### Sadism (*continued*)

Lesser Sadics — Different Categories — Prickers of Girls — Observations — Prickers of Buttocks — Observations. — The Cutter of Ears. — The Cutter of Skin — The Sadist Cutter of Fingers. — The Sadist Pincher of Flesh — The Flagellators. — Observations on Flagellators — Symbolic Sadism. — Ideal Sadism. — Inclination to cover Women with Filth — Man who urinated upon Women — Stercoraires — Stercoraires in the Paris Brothels — Sadists and Sodomists — Mixoscopists or Tupers — The Mixoscopus of Paris. — Observations by Leo Taxil, Coffignon and Mace — A Humane Aphorism — Classification of Sadists — Peepers through Holes — The Provincial and the Pastry cook — The Sauce-pan Band — The Peepers of the Champs-Élysées — The Magic Lantern

## CHAPTER XIV

### Genital Madness

#### Sadism (*completion*).

Sadism in the Woman — Causes of the Rarity of Sadism in the Woman. — Observations of different cases of Feminine Sadism — Sadism of Catherine de Médicis — Queen Catherine and the Shoemaker's big Penis — Sadism of Pa-li, Mistress of the Chinese Emperor Cheou-Sin — Sadism of a Gay Woman before the Guillotine — Sadic Acts upon Animals — Identity of Bestial and Human Sadism — Various Observations of Sadic Acts upon Animals — Observation upon a case of Bestial Sadism co-existent with Human Sadism and Pederasty.

## CHAPTER XV

Genital Madness (*continued*)

## Masochism

Definition of Masochism — Symptomatology and Etiology of Masochism — Jean Jacques Rousseau a Masochist — Frequency of Masochism — Grouping of Masochists into three distinct Categories — *A* Masochists of the 1<sup>st</sup> Category — Three Observations regarding them — *B* Masochists of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Category — Observations regarding this category — *C* Masochists of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Category — Observations regarding them — Symbolic Masochism — Observations upon Symbolic Masochism — Masochism complicated with Sadism — Observations — Latent Masochism — Filthy acts having for their object Sexual Satisfaction — Masochism complicated with Sexual Inversion — Masochism in the Woman

## CHAPTER XVI

Genital Madness (*continued*)

## Erotomania

Definition of Erotomania — Don Quixotte and Dulcinea — Epilepsy — Observations relating to Epileptics committing abnormal Sexual Acts — Hysteria — Avowed Eroticism of Epileptic Women — Remarkable cases of Hysteria — The Bordeaux Scandal — *Madame la Baronne* — Mental Condition of Hysterical Women — Hysterical Men — Various forms of Mental Alienation connected with the Genito-Sexual Function — Observations relating to various cases of Mental Alienation — The Insanity of Puberty — Insanity of the Menopause — Utero-ovarian Insanity — Post Connubial Insanity — Relation of Mental Alienation to Pregnancy and the Menses — Obscenities of Insane Females and Criminal Lunatics







CHAPTER I

FACTORS WHICH CONSTITUTE

**HUMAN LOVE**



MEDICO LEGAL  
EXAMINATION  
OF THE ABUSES OF THE GENITAL SENSE

CHAPTER I

FACTORS WHICH CONSTITUTE HUMAN LOVE

The desire for connection is the basis of human love — Psychological element of human love — Justification for the title of the Volume (Genital Excesses Abuses Perversions Aberrations and Follies) — Genital Perversions by Doctor Pichon — Classification of the anomalies of the sexual instinct by Magnan — 1<sup>st</sup> Group The Spinal 2<sup>nd</sup> Group The posterior Spinal cerebral — 3<sup>rd</sup> Group The anterior Spinal Cerebral — 4<sup>th</sup> Group The anterior cerebral of psychic — Sexual anomalies are but the pathological transformations of the sexual instinct — D Legrain's theories — Uselessness of Classifications — Relation of genital perversions to madness — Grouping of the various Sexual Anomalies — A Excesses — B Genital Abuses — C Genital Perversions — D Genital Perversions — E Genital Follies — Mental degeneracy is the basis on which a number of sexual perversions are developed — A few words on Mental Degeneracy

**Factors which constitute Human Love**

We have seen in the First Volume that the foundation of love, among men as well as among all animals, was physiological love, *id est* carnal copulation, the natural satis-

faction of the instinct of reproduction We have laid down this law of the sexual instinct in accordance with Pillaux, and demonstrated with him that when the need for coition makes itself felt, the genital centre in man (or that which is homologous to it in the inferior species) enters on the stage and supplies to the genital organs the crethismus necessary for the accomplishment of the sexual act. The venereal orgasm then translates itself through a sensation of comfort, in harmony with the accomplishment of such an important function, a comfort which is translated into pleasure among the superior and perhaps among the inferior animals also. But in the case of man matters become complicated, for then the brain comes into play. It tries to play its part in the act of reproduction, and in proportion as the brain is developed, concurrently with civilization, its part becomes more and more preponderant. The voluptuous sensation of the act becomes precise, and is doubled by a psychic sensation. Reproduction no longer has the mere brutality of the contact and friction of the two epidermises. There is a kind of search for certain congruities, which expresses itself by the choice and the selection of the participators in the sexual act.

Among the women amongst whom he lives, or whom he meets for the first time, all of whom are able to satisfy his desire for copulation, the man distinguishes one in particular, whose possession he seeks for more specially, and the same phenomenon occurs in the woman. The determining motives are connected with the physical beauty and the moral and intellectual qualities of the subject.

The great variety which results from the difference of race, and of civilization in particular, can be understood. The Hottentot Venus, with her enormous posteriors, would make no impression upon the heart of an intellectual resident in the Boulevard des Italiens, and the latter with his

spare body, his puny genital organs, his bald head, his smooth face his eye glass and his stand up collar, would give no pleasure to a robust negress with lusty charms and an ample and lustful vulva

Thus two elements the one physical, relating to sexuality only, and beauty and the psychical, determining the choice of the woman by the man and of the man by the woman, enter into the formation of human love. But it is clear that the starting point is the voluptuous sensation of physiological love, by which is meant that the basis of human love is the *desire of coition*, but that at the same time a desire for psychical possession comes and mingles with the desire for union, which causes the man to demand of her whom he has chosen that she should abandon to him her thoughts and her whole psychical being at the same time as her body. "The desire for copulation which, we repeat, is the basis, acts upon us exactly in the same way as on the animals and is, as it is with them purely instinctive (Pillaux )

**The desire for copulation is the basis of human love** It is based on the voluptuous sensation which coition causes the man and the woman to feel, a sensation studied in considerable detail in the First Volume. It is clear that the adult who has already copulated retains from the coition the remembrance of a keen sentiment of pleasure, and certainly this sentiment will induce him to repeat the copulation later on.

Let us mention, however, after Pillaux, that individuals who are virgins without having any notion of the pleasure are urged by instinct to have connection. The male virgin seeks for the maid. He is sometimes (but not always) awkward in the accomplishment of the act.

As for the fundamental rule that the voluptuous sensa

tion of coition would be sufficient in itself to assure the continuation of the human species, it is enough to refer to the fact of prostitution. A man and a woman, who have never seen one another before, meet in the street, and go and copulate in the common room of a furnished hotel; the man induced by carnal desire, and the woman by the love of gain. And, what is more, youths go to the brothel. One says "I want to have a fair girl." Another replies. "I should like to get into a red-haired one." And the third proceeds. "I am told a negress has just gone into the house. I must have her. It must be funny." And our three young rascals go in, make their selection, perform, pay their money and come out. Then, as they stand round the door, they compare their erotic impressions, and the pleasure which they have received for their money. This is all very trivial and very shocking, I confess, but it is nature.

**Psychical Element of Human Love** The importance of the psychical element in human love is therefore relative. It is eminently variable, according to the race and its degree of civilisation, and in the race according to the individual himself. It is impossible therefore to make a general study of it in the human species, as we have made for the physical element, coition.

We borrow the following from Pillaux, who, in our opinion, has treated with a master hand this study of the psychical element in human love.

"We will regard the facts first of all — naturally keeping ourselves to a very general point of view — as an adult of our times with a cultivated mind, enjoying the fullness of his moral and physical powers, and having copulated more or less frequently.

The languages of all races express by means of the same

word the complex sensation of love, whether it is regarded before the sexual union, or whether on the contrary, it is regarded after that union has taken place. There exist, however, somewhat considerable differences in the impressions of the lover and the maid before and after copulation, and unconsciously, all the psychologists take account of these differences in the studies which they make of each particular case, for the history of any passion is always if it may be so expressed, divided by them into two chapters. In the first, they treat of the sensations experienced from the beginning of the sentiment, until the sexual union, and, in the second of the quite different sensations of complete love.

Whatever may be the nature of the desire of psychical possession, the facts demonstrate to us that when this desire is reciprocal, and at least that obstacles proceeding from the social state do not intervene, copulation inevitably takes place. The lover and the maid know what it is in regard to this and the series of actions which they perform bears forcibly the impress of the knowledge that they have a result to which the affection which they share will necessarily bring them. The male, therefore, naturally makes every effort to implant in the female's mind a sentiment analogous to that which has arisen in him, all his thoughts are turned only to this object and it is curious to observe how numerous and diverse are the purely psychical sentiments which he obeys.

During this period, to give the entire history of the sentiment, it would be necessary to relate alternations of hope and of fear through which the lovers pass, according as the acts and words of the beloved being give them grounds for believing that their affection is or is not participated. The purely sexual provocations seem sometimes to almost completely disappear and one would be tempted to concede



that the desire for union did not play any part, if one did not remark that among all the proofs that she shares his affection, which the lover demands from the maid, the most sought after and evident, are those which, like caresses and kisses, are allied to copulation itself

At the same time, jealousy makes its appearance; we have seen that it exists in the animal series, but as far as we can judge among the males only. Among us it is entirely reciprocal, on all occasions when the sentiment of love has originated, and what we have said enables us to understand that it may extend from the possession of the body to that of the thoughts, that is to say that it has, like love itself, a psychical side. the male in fact feels perfectly clearly that if the mind of the female is occupied with another male, the possession of her will escape him. Too much importance should not be attached to this sentiment of jealousy, if it did not exist, or if it were simply unilateral, as in the animal series, our organization would be extremely different to what it is to-day.

We shall see further on that among the inferior races, where the woman has not yet, if we may so express it, conquered the right to jealousy, the nuptial habits have remained relatively very similar to those of animals.

Jealousy, besides, if it is analyzed very exactly, has not perhaps a solely sexual origin, for, as it seems, we experience, when we possess a beautiful woman, something of the satisfaction which the proprietorship of a rare article causes us to feel, if it is sought after and desired by other individuals of the species. We lay stress on this fact, in the first place because it sometimes gives quite a peculiar form to love, and next, because it shews how complex the nature of this sentiment may be

Through a singular phenomenon of consciousness which we find it very difficult to explain, but which is

invariable, the lover creates out of his mistress and so does she out of him, an ideal sometimes very different to the reality and attributes to her moral and intellectual qualities which she does not possess or possesses to a very much less degree. As it very frequently happens that this remarkable state of mind is replaced by a sound appreciation of things after the sexual possession we must regard this idealization of the beloved being as resulting from the psychical concentration of all the faculties of the soul upon an object ardently and exclusively desired. What is still more inexplicable it is not uncommon for the appreciation of the external shape itself to be falsified by the keenness of the desire and for the man before copulation, to find a woman beautiful whom he will judge to be quite different when his senses have been satisfied.

Finally, we will remark that the sentiment which is inspired is far from always being shared by the person who inspires it, in spite of all the efforts which are made to bring that about. In this case, generally speaking after a more or less lengthy interval of time the desire gradually diminishes and then disappears, and the man's mind becomes free for new attachments. In other much more unfrequent cases, the sexual preoccupations or if it is preferred, the passion, is sufficiently keen for the instinct of reproduction to prevail over that of personal preservation as is proved to us by the suicides which have love for their determining cause, or again from the grave cerebral maladies resulting from the continual tension of the mind upon one sole and determined object. Our social laws take too little account of the peculiar laws of reproduction in our species for them to be able to reach the conclusion of which we have numerous instances, that suicide may even take place in the case of mutual love, when the lovers are unable to have connection.

If after a more or less lengthy period, in the duration of which the reciprocal affection has been able to grow and develop, the union is effected, the sensations experienced become quite different. Eager to obtain and receive the keen sensations of sexual pleasure, the lovers are frequently endeavouring to indulge in copulation. In the interval between the unions, their affection is mixed with peculiar sensations which are connected more or less directly with the remembrance of the pleasure they have felt, but it is above all during the sexual union itself, and under the influence of the desire, that the lovers have the clearest idea and the most entire consciousness of love. We do not mean thereby that the whole sentiment becomes purely sexual, but, if the facts are attentively studied, it is readily perceived that the seeking for the union becomes the most important element of the phenomenon, for, whatever may be the power and energy of the affection, it is not sufficient by itself to satisfy the lovers, and if circumstances stand in the way of the accomplishment of the genital act, they both suffer from the non-satisfaction of an imperious want.

In our advanced state of civilization, we endeavour, it is true, to persuade ourselves that it is not so, and many modern analysts have imagined and described cases in which the psychical sensation seems to prevail over the physical desire of the coming together of the sexes, it is impossible for us to support this view, unless it were in our power to point to an instance in which two adults of different sex felt a keen affection for one another without any desire for sexual union, such a proof, in our opinion, has yet to be found, while it is not uncommon to see connections formed and endure for a long time under the sole action of pleasure, and resulting from a single act of copulation, arising either from chance or from a passing impulse.

We have said that when circumstances stand in the way of union, the desire at length diminishes and disappears. It is the same even when possession has given satisfaction to this desire. The phenomena which accompany and bring about the replacement of affection by indifference, that is to say the end of love, are extremely interesting and allow us to analyze more completely the nature of the sensations.

We remark, in the first instance, that an affection which was very keen and very deep before copulation, may suddenly be modified or disappear or even very frequently, become changed into antipathy, when the physical ideal in the union has not been such as the lover and his mistress expected and believed that they would find. Cases of this kind are numerous and every one of us is acquainted with instances. When the lovers are separated even during the period when the sentiment is very keen, the male sometimes seeks to satisfy with another female the imperious want which he feels for copulation. We lay stress upon this fact (more uncommon it is true in the female) but the frequency of which in the male it is impossible to deny, although we appear to take a delight in believing and asserting that the need or the desire of copulation may entirely disappear in the case of the man whose mind is occupied with love.

If the separation is of long duration the peculiar state of mind in which the lovers were, when the sexual instinct individualized them into one given being, becomes slowly modified; the remembrance of this being grows less and less exact in their memory until it disappears entirely and they both of them come to seek after new amours. In other cases, without there being any separation, the lover and his mistress end by finding those sensations monotonous which nevertheless were so keen and so

sought after at the commencement, the organism is habituated to these sensations, and a feeling of satiety replaces that of want. The intervention of the psychical element may, and often does, retard the period of rupture, sometimes until the end of the sexual life, but frequently, unless at least other purely social considerations intervene, the rupture is effected. More often still, when possession lasts for some time and under the influence of satiety, or of the monotony of the sensations, a more attentive study of their reciprocal characters allows the lover and his mistress to correct the errors of judgment which they had made in forming out of the patchwork of their imagination an ideal different to the reality, the faults become apparent, and love, founded upon an inexact appreciation of the moral and intellectual attributes, vanishes away. We do not know with any exactitude how the species which most nearly resemble our own behave with regard to the duration of unions: it appears that, except in some forms of very solitary life, the male, who is strongly polygamous, adds as many fresh wives as he can to those which he already possesses, and certain observers believe they have noticed that their fresh ones are the most sought after. If these facts are exact, it would be possible to trace back the instability of desire in us to our animal origin.

However this may be, in all the preceding facts are fresh reasons for believing in the predominance of the purely physical element in complete and mutual love.

**Differents parts played by the male and by the female** We have said nothing hitherto of the difference of the parts played by the male and the female. These differences nevertheless exist, they depend upon the organism of the sexes itself, and are of the same nature as those which we have found else-

where The physiological need of copulation being more powerful and more complete in the male than in the female, the latter obeys the purely sexual impulses less readily than does the man, and it follows that as a rule the part played by the psychical element becomes more important in the female We see her, more rarely than ourselves having connection without a more or less marked sentiment of affection pre-existing in her mind In truth, her modesty and reserve, as well as the value which owing to her education itself she attaches to chastity may lead us into error regarding this, but we ought no less to arrive at the conclusion as we believe that in an advanced state of civilization, and save in case of certain exceptional natures the female's love is, if the metaphor may be employed less physical than that of the male

We leave out as not entering into our actual subject, the ties which are formed between the male and the female by the birth of children, and by the formation of a family through the marriage, and it is merely a question here of love intrinsically and in itself

Since the impulse which urges the man to seek for the female and to unite himself with her is partly psychical it may be understood how greatly the phenomena must vary with the intellectual development, that is to say, according to races and times, and, in the same race according to the individuals If, for instance, we compare the love of a savage with that of the civilized being with whom we have just been occupying ourselves we see without difficulty that the mind of the former could neither comprehend nor conceive the very delicate and slightly subtle sensations which make their way on the other hand into the mind of the civilized being It is possible, and it is even probable, that the pleasure felt in copulation is the

same in the two cases, or at least that in this respect only purely individual differences exist, to which we shall have shortly to recur, but the other impressions are necessarily very different

The savage obtains the legal possession of his companion by compulsion or by purchase, the civilized man by free persuasion and consent it can be understood that this fact alone entails profound modifications, not only in the conduct, but also in the sentiments of the man and the woman. The latter, among the more degraded tribes, occupies a very inferior social position, her husband, who is at the same time her master, treats her absolutely as a slave, and, as far as we are able to judge, asks nothing else from her whom he possesses than the mere satisfaction of the sexual want properly so called. It appears therefore that, in a very inferior state of civilization, the instinct which leads the male towards the female is almost analogous to that of animals

In a less degree, the same differences are reproduced in any civilized race, between the highly cultivated and intelligent individuals and those whose mind has been little developed by education and if we endeavour, through the writings of ancient authors, to form an idea of what love was in ancient times, we see also that these authors generally insist to a great extent upon the physical side of the sensation, the position held by the woman in the society of ancient times probably brought, in this respect, the nations which preceded us near to the tribes of actual savages and the lower classes of civilized people

But, besides these considerable differences in the nature of love according to classes, times, and localities, other great and important ones also exist according to temperament. and, moreover, in the same individual according to age. Let us compare together two civilized men of modern

times who have received exactly the same education and are qualified therefore to experience psychically almost the same impressions. One of them, for instance, will have extremely strong genital appetites, while the other will seek for sexual union much more rarely. In the same way the feelings of affection may be dominant in the one and very little developed in the other. Urged both of them by the sexual instinct, they will certainly experience very different sensations, and these sensations also vary according to the temperament and the moral nature of the woman whom they covet, or of whom they have obtained possession, and also according to age, since the sexual instinct itself of the adolescent differs from that of the old man. It may be understood how many forms love may assume according to circumstances. In fact, there are almost as many particular cases as there are individuals or pairs of individuals in view.

This subject might be extended to an infinite degree, if the study of detail entered into our purview, it will be enough to say in order to make the infinite complexity of cases thoroughly understood that the most improbable conceptions of the novelists of our times, all of whom take love as the subject of their analysis, probably always correspond to possible realities.

The reader perhaps, will find our quotation a little long. It was however necessary in order to thoroughly establish the fact that the carnal act is the corner stone upon which the psychopathy of love is supported. Otherwise it would be impossible in fact to understand the anomalies of love, from the case of the unhappy sufferer from satyriasis who is ready to leap upon any woman whatsoever and the nymphomaniac who calls the passers by in the street to the erotomaniac who *adores* his lady friend without trying to consummate the coition. Between these two conditions



so radically opposed, there is an inner position, and as Saint Augustine says · “ *He who tries too much to play the angel, plays the brute.* ”

**Justification of the title of the Work (Excesses, Abuses, Perversions, Aberrations, Follies, and Crimes of Love).** In the First Volume we studied normal love, and showed the mode of its regular working by the principles of Anatomy and Physiology We have recognized the dangers resulting from coition when performed otherwise than by the natural use of the genital organs of the two sexes

We have not adopted in this Third Part the arbitrary classification of Pouillet, who, under the general title of *Genital Abuses* includes bestiality, abnormal coitions, and masturbation, an artificial classification, as also is that of Garnier, which is very similar. Neither have we adopted the otherwise scientific classifications of Garnier and Lacasagne.

We examine them, however, for the requirements of our study in the second Volume, the natural sequel to the First, and devoted to the *Psychopathy of Love*, that is to say the thorough study of the Excesses, Perversions, Aberrations, Follies, and Crimes of Love. To make our readers thoroughly understand its value, it is sufficient for us to sum up the opinion of some of the authors whose names we have quoted in the Preface

“ Among all the disorders peculiar to the affective faculties, sexual anomalies, perversions, and aberrations are by far the most frequent and the most important. The influence which they exercise over the other feelings, thoughts, and acts, both of the individual and of Society itself, cannot be ignored without a lack of observation and sincerity, through the dangers of their manifestation in ordinary

life, their signification in clinical medicine, their import in anthropology their interpretation before the law, from whatever point of view they are considered, they attain to the first rank. They have ever been a cause of astonishment to the psychologist and the moralist, a subject of meditation for the clinical student of perplexity for the medico legist and of difficulties of conscience for the judge. In fact, upon the good working of the sexual instinct, that most powerful of levers depends the existence of the species, the foundation of the family, and the constitution of Society. It is no exaggeration to affirm that, within a certain limit the progress of civilization depends upon it. Grave philosophers have not thought it unworthy of their position to concern themselves with love and at the same time with its errors (L. Chevallier, *Intersion sexuelle* Paris Masson)

‘ Among civilized men of our times the sexual functions often display themselves in an abnormal manner. This is explained partly by the numerous genital abuses, partly also by the fact that these functional anomalies are often the sign of a morbid disposition a disposition resulting in the majority of cases, from heredity (functional symptom of degeneracy)

As the organs of generation have an important functional correlation with all the nervous system psychical and somatic relations, the frequency of general neuroses and psychoses due to sexual disorders (functional or organic) is readily understood’ (Krafft Ebing, *Psychopathia sexualis* Paris, 1895 Georges Carré)

**The Law of Genital Perversions** “ This important clinical truth, which here assumes the importance of a general law of medicine may be formulated thus

*In somatic symptoms of a general order, like alcoholic symptoms : in the immense majority of cases, the sexual tendencies, the genital perversions in a lunatic, must be considered not as a cause but as an effect of the mental form which it displays to observation.*

Here, we believe, is the right explanation of many *mental deviations* attributed exclusively to sexual abuses. It is thus that attentive clinical observation ought to interpret the great majority of cases, where, in morbid psychology, the phenomena appear to consist in genital perversions of a pathological order in particular. It is unnecessary to search for another origin for them. In other terms, during the greater part of the time, the grossest fault of diagnosis is committed in considering, in the case of a lunatic, the disorders of the genital sphere as the *univocal cause*, whereas a mad doctor, who was a judicious observer, would see merely an *effect* of the disease, by the same title as the other mental symptoms result from a determinate *mental form* which includes them all." (Dr Georges Pichon, *Folies passionnelles* Paris, 1891. Dentu.)

The eminent chief of the clinical staff of the Sainte Anne Asylum remarks a few lines lower down, upon the scientific heresy committed by a large number of medical men by virtue of that common but fatal axiom, *post hoc, propter hoc*; and the undeserved consequences, *the moral blemish*, which may weigh upon the poor lunatic and all his lineage by the fault of a physician.

And Dr Pichon adds : " These considerations in particular have induced us to devote a few lines in our book to *impassional conditions of a genital order* considered as causes of madness in general. For us it was a strict duty, an absolute obligation, to point out such etiological errors, to prove the falsity of the opinion which is so prevalent, and which in mental alienation, in the case of the poor creatures de-

prived of their reason so often and so wrongly attributes their madness to sexual perversions

Supported by these three opinions, selected from among a number of others, we can lay it down as a law that the different anomalies of sexual instinct are merely, as D Legraine says proteiform pathological transformations of this instinct This is how he proves it

### Classification of the Anomalies of the Sexual instinct by Magnan

Of all the classifications proposed for the study of sexual anomalies the most remarkable is that of M Magnan (*Des anomalies des aberrations et des perversions sexuelles* — communicated to the Academy of Medicine, Jan 13<sup>th</sup> 1885) It is based upon the anatomy and the physiology of the cerebro-spinal axis divided into three great zones, upon each of which devolves a quite distinct part in the accomplishment of the important genital function all three performing their office simultaneously and harmoniously in normal love These three zones are the *medulla*, in which are the centres of erection and ejaculation, the *posterior train* the seat of the sexual instinct properly so called and of the sensations of touch, sight, and smell which bring it into play, the *anterior train* with the superior sentiments of the beautiful, of affection, the sentiment of admiration, modesty etc

It is from this harmonic association of sentiments and instincts that the irresistible power of love results, H Spencer remarks

According to these data Magnan distinguishes four groups as the intervention of such and such a region is wanting to the physiological consensus Let us consider them

**1<sup>st</sup> GROUP. The spinal.** They are reduced to the simple reflex. The exaltation of the medullary function causes the genito-spinal centre of Budge to act separately, independently of all cerebral participation. It is then a question of priapism, or of certain aspects of satyriasis or nymphomania. If, on the other hand, we suppose the medulla to be prevented from acting, we have on the contrary certain cases of impotence and of genital crises.

**2<sup>nd</sup> GROUP The posterior cerebral spinal** Among these the reflex starts from the cortical layer of the posterior cerebral region to meet the medulla. " Situated behind the ascendant parietal circumvolution, this region contains the sensitive and perceptive centres. This zone is nothing else but the organic substratum of the appetites and instincts, the seat of the cerebral automatism every time that the anterior region happens to lose the chief functional direction. " (Magnan ) It is the purely brutal instinctive act. The sufferers from it hasten to satisfy their appetites, without anything being able to stop them. Such is the case of the lady whom the mere sight of a man provokes to voluptuous sensations. Nymphomania and satyriasis enter into this group. If, on the contrary, the centres are prevented from working, the subject is affected with *frigidity*. The want remains nil. Or again, the instinctive instigations remain normal, but the sufferer loses the sensation of pleasure during coition. This is known as *genetic anaesthesia*.

**3<sup>rd</sup> GROUP. The anterior cerebral spinal.** The physiological mechanism of the sexual functions exists in its completeness in these sufferers, but with falsified or perverted elements. As in the normal state, this is also a psychical influence emanating from the anterior

cerebral surface, an idea, a sentiment, an inclination which exerts its influence in its final stage on the medulla but being perverted in its whole action it brings the genito spinal centre pathologically into play

This group supplies, according to Magnan, the greater part of the sexual perversions and aberrations. It includes the patients who perform the sexual act with other creatures than woman (bestiality, pederasty) or who only meet with the genesic excitement from the sight from the contact with or thought of things which normally do not have any part to play in the exercise of the genital function (shoe-nails, varnished boots, white aprons, red ribbons etc.)

**4<sup>th</sup> GROUP** — **The anterior cerebral or psychical** Among these patients there is a kind of disappearance of the functional power from the genito spinal centre, to the benefit of the anterior cerebral regions. The inferior instincts are no longer felt the act of generation itself becomes indifferent the medulla and the posterior brain remain silent the whole frontal region is paramount under the influence of idealism This is love without the venereal desire apart from all carnal preposessions

In this group are included the platonics the ecstasies, and the erotomaniacs It is the same also with those who fall in love with statues

**Sexual Anomalies are but the pathological transformations of the Sexual Instinct**  
 D Legraine has brought this law clearly to light according to the classification of Magnan ' that sexual anomalies are but the proteiform pathological transformations of the sexual instinct He admits with Pillaux, that the sexual instinct is the foundation of normal love " But

however this may be, love is naught for man but a hidden incentive to reproduce himself, though lovers may bear me a grudge for this positive declaration : it is always instinct, avowed or unavowed, conscious or unconscious, which speaks and serves as the pretext for love : remove these two things and love no longer has any grounds for existence it disappears or takes a pathological form.

Such is the normal condition. In the pathological condition, it must still, to exactly appreciate the cases, start from the instinct of reproduction which is the corner-stone of the edifice. The anomalies, perversions and aberrations which are observed are in reality but the proteiform pathological transformations of this instinct. And Magnan's groups nearly all meet together there, to form but one, that of the posterior cerebral

It is easy to account for this. The only group which could separate itself from the rule is that of the spinals. That is the only one in which it is possible really to clearly perceive the isolated action and the theoretic dissection of the centres, the characteristic of which is to combine their action at a normal period with that of the other cerebral centres suited to the sexual function. Such is the case with the idiot who mechanically practises onanism without the instinct of reproduction inciting him to it, at least to all appearance. Again these cases are perhaps debatable, and more complex than they appear. But let us eliminate the spinals, which besides count for but little in the number of sexual abnormals.

Let us now see all that relates to the posterior brain, in consequence of the disorders of the instinct, and it will be easy to see that they unite together all the rest. "

The learned head physician of the Ville-Evrard Asylum shows that all the possible cases of sexual anomalies, taking

their classification by Magnan, may be considered as pathological transformations of this instinct. Let us quote the final conclusion of his argument

"The complexity of all these cases which analysis reveals to us is so real that it would be possible to show in each one of them the participation in more or less equal shares of each of the nervous territories contributing to the genital action. The pure psychic himself is only a psychic in appearance. The contemplative lover, in fact does not only find satisfaction in the adoration of his ideal, he experiences a veritable sexual pleasure through spiritual cohabitation with the beloved being. It is not uncommon for this kind of transfiguration to be even accompanied by erection and ejaculation. The sexual act is accomplished in an abnormal manner, it is true, but it is accomplished in its entirety, it has attained its end the *instinct* has received satisfaction. The instinct moreover always exists at the bottom of every abnormal sexual act, it regulates the attitudes even with those who are least instinctive in appearance.

To sum up the first part of this study leads us to the conclusion that abnormal sexuality whatever its aspect may be is in short nothing but an extensive disease of the instinct, whether the instinct apparently disappears or whether, it adapts itself more to its object, that is to say whether it becomes perverted or whether it becomes in some way hypertrophied and bringing the individual entirely into subjection in his moral and intellectual sphere. This disease of the sexual appetite which attacks one of the two principal forms of the instinct of self preservation is, in my opinion absolutely the counterpart of that which attacks the other of these forms *the instinct of nutrition* and which displays itself in those aberrations anomalies and perversions of the *appetite* so well known under the names of *boulimia*, *pica*, *malaria*, and *coprophagie*.



And if a natural pathological classification of the anomalies and perversions were to be thought of, I think that it ought to be founded no longer on the external symptomatic appearance, but on the multiple and complex notion of instinct " (Dr Lagraine. *Des anomalies de l'Instinct sexuel et en particulier les Inversions du Sens genital*. Paris, 1896. Georges Carré.)

**Uselessness of Classifications** It is evident that Dr Lagraine is not a supporter of classifications, and that that of Magnan seems to him sufficient large because it appears to him to be the clearest, the simplest, and the best adapted to supply the observer with solid data.

Krafft Ebing, Chevalier, Ball, Lacassagne, and Lampt have given classifications, among which that of Lacassagne is noticeable as being natural, very simple and at the same time very general. But, following the example of Thoinot, we do not see any interest in giving these classifications, and we are satisfied with having given that of Magnan, the value of which is indicated by Lagraine, and also demonstrated by Georges Pichon in his study of genital perversions and their relation to madness.

**Relation of genital Perversions to madness.** " Without referring back so far, can we even touch upon the study of the *anomalies of the sexual instinct* in connection with the causality of madness, without alluding, incidentally at least, to their new modalities so excellently demonstrated recently by Monsieur Magnan? With regard to this new practical physiological classification, we might evidently enter upon a complete description. But, in their principal lines, we may at least shortly point out the forms of this classification which are most clearly brought out. Have we not, in fact, in these types of anterior-cerebral,

posterior-cerebral, spinal cerebral and spinal, a most sure diagnostic scale for certain forms of madness? On the other hand do we not find in these ideas of *genital inversions*, *perversions of bloodthirstiness*, of *vampirism* and of bestiality, characteristics which are seen in certain judicial reports? For, I repeat from the *erotomaniac* lunatic "in love with a star to the *lowest degenerate*, who obeys his irresistible instincts of bestiality, and extends his unhealthy brutality so far as to profane the putrefied corpse of a child which has died of confluent small pox, all the abnormal acts may display genital depravities

And in the species, from the particular point of view of *genital excesses* we do not regret these digressions, since they allow us to state afresh the clinical truth which we enunciated a short time ago, *a priori* as we look upon it and have uttered it as a veritable law of psychiatry. How ever numerous may be the clinical forms in which we recognize sexual perversions, in the immense majority of cases they must be considered as effects and not as causes (G Pichon)

### Logical grouping of certain Sexual anomalies

We shall not however, adopt Magnan's classification in the following account. It is enough for us to have brought forward all its medical value. It appears to us to be more simple to give the enumeration of the different anomalies of the sexual instinct by dividing them into five great groups according to their morbid degree. Thus we have (A) Genital Excesses — (B) Genital Abuses — (C) Genital Perversions — (D) Genital Aberrations — (E) Genital Follies

And we believe that it is possible to include in this very elastic list the whole number of the anomalies of the sexual

instinct We therefore should have the following general grouping.

**A. Genital Excesses** Erotic temperament Precocious sexual instinct, and sexual instinct prolonged beyond the normal period of sexual life. Genesisic excitements in certain affections (ataxy, mania, chlorosis, phthisis).

Impotence or sexual anaesthesia

**B. Genital Abuses.** Onanism. Priapism. Satyriasis  
Nymphomania

**C Genital Perversions.** Sexual Inversion in the two Sexes.

Pederasty Sapphism

**D Genital Aberrations.** Fetishism. Exhibitionism.  
Bestiality Necrophily.

**E Genital Follies** Sadism Masochism Hysteria.  
Erotomania

Genital Follies of the menopause Epileptics Puerperals

**Mental Degeneracy is the basis on which many sexual perversions are developed**

L. Thoinot, whose volume appeared just at the moment when we were completing our work, has the same opinion as Pichon upon the cause of genital perversions, but he has the merit of proving them

“ Sexual perversions are in the immense majority of cases but not in all cases diseases of the brain, and the troubles or affections which they display are somewhat

variable We shall see among them, *epileptics general paralytics senile individuals* and the *insane* But those that we shall especially see are *mental degenerates*

A category of individuals exists, unfortunately very numerous in whom morbid causes, *hereditary* in the majority of cases, *acquired* (individual) in some others, have hindered the regular development of the nervous system from this impeded development *imperfections* result, and that too from an early age, which mark the individual for all his life These *psychical* and sometimes also *physical imperfections* are what are called stigmas, and the individuals thus spoilt are *mental degenerates*

Hereditary degeneracy is the transmission to the descendants of an *original vice* which has its source in very diverse affections of the progenitors

Among these affections we notice

#### (a) Diseases of the nervous system

Organic diseases such as ataxy, general progressive paralysis neuroses, — such as epilepsy, hysteria, chorea, — and finally various mental diseases

(b) Poisonings, such as alcoholism in particular, which plays a great part in the procreation of degenerates

(c) Infectious diseases such as syphilis

But you must know that healthy parents may procreate an hereditary degenerate if injurious conditions exist at the time of the fecundating coition thus children who are conceived by a father when he is drunk, easily become degenerate

Yet further the child has been conceived under good conditions by healthy parents but a morbid cause affects the health of the mother who bears it in her womb and the child is affected in the development of its nervous system It is so when the mother experiences a fright, a keen emo

tion, and *a fortiori* when she is smitten with an infectious or toxic disease.

### **A few words upon mental Degeneracy.**

And now one word upon the etiology of *nonhereditary* mental degeneracy. The causes which impede the development of the nervous system affect the subject either in early or later infancy, or even later still in adolescence; the degenerates, says Cotard, are *congenital*, *infantile* and even *juvenile*

The affections which act in this distressing manner during early infancy are various infectious diseases, such as infantile paralysis, typhoid fever, etc.

This is sufficient with regard to the etiology: let us make now a very brief clinical study, pausing on the symptoms which display the greatest medico-legal interest. You are aware that the symptoms of mental degeneracy are of two kinds, physical and psychical.

The varied and inconstant physical symptoms, or rather stigmas, consist in malformations of the different parts of the body.

Let us quote at random the cranial malformations, hare-lip, dental anomalies, malformations of the ear, hypertrophy of the mammae (in man), palmated fingers and toes, the hands or feet clubbed, hermaphroditism, unorchidy, cryptorchidy, etc

The psychical symptoms, or rather stigmas, are much more important.

They may be arranged in order under the four following heads:

- I - Anomalies of the intelligence.
- II - Episodical Syndromes
- III. - Frenzies.
- IV - Sexual perversions

Sexual perversions are far from belonging to the degenerate alone. There are certainly other sufferers who display them also, and this I will ask you to note but it is no less perfectly established that in few morbid states do sexual perversions show themselves in such variety and with such frequency as in the degenerate.

The reason of this is very simple. The mental degenerate is off his balance in the widest sense of the words—off his balance in his intelligence, off his balance in his will power and his sensibility, off his balance in a word throughout his whole nervous system. The harmony is no longer sound among the various nervous departments for the normal accomplishment of a function *such as the function of reproduction* and does not exist in him, and the consequences are as follows.

‘The sensitive centres perform their functions in freeing themselves from the control of the psychical centres, the sexual instinct manifests itself in all its intensity, and imperiously demands satisfaction—this is the origin of certain impulsive attacks of nymphomania in women. If they are inhibited, the sexual instinct never reveals itself—this is frigidity.

The intelligence itself presents the strangest anomalies in what concerns the sexual act.

The individual then finds his excitant no longer in the being of the opposite sex whom he has chosen, but often in a creature of his own kind (inversion of the sexes) in intercourse with animals (bestiality) with inanimate beings (necrophily) in the use of inanimate things, as white aprons, red ribbons etc (fetishism). The psychical centres perform their functions without the co-operation of the sensitive and spinal centres—this is the case with con-

templative lovers, dreamers, seekers after the ideal, absolutely detached from the sexual act which is repugnant to them (erotomania), Magnan and Legrain, *les Dégénérés*.

Such, gentlemen, sketched in broad outline, is the physiognomy of the degenerate, a physiognomy which you must recognize it dominates nearly the whole medico-legal side of the study of sexual perversions, a study which we are now about to enter upon". (L. Thoinot. *Attentats aux Mœurs et Perversions du Sens génital*. Paris, Octave Doin, éditeur, 1898).





## CHAPTER II

### A GENITAL EXCESSES

Influence of Temperament upon Love — The Erotic Temperament — Various observations on the Erotic Temperament — Dog's criminal tongue — Condemned for rape — A human satyr — The passionate dame — The Marquis de Sombreuse — A London Minotaur — Precocious Sexual Instinct — The girl nymphomaniac — Salacity in boys — Possibility of a little boy's violating a young girl — Prolongation of the Sexual Instinct — The Old Man's morbid love — Jean Richepin's poem — Pour faire peur au chat  
 Genesic Excitations provoked by various Affections (Locomotor Ataxy Mania Phthisis Chorea) — The erotic mad demoiselle — Impotence or Sexual Anaesthesia 1<sup>st</sup> Congenital 2<sup>d</sup> Acquired — Cases of Psychopatic impotence — The philosophic student — The mutilation loving workman — Remarkable Observations

**A Genital Excesses Influence of Temperament upon Love** — We have seen in the First Volume that the desire for venereal pleasures and the genesic power in particular are not the same in all individuals. The sanguine temperament, and above all the bilious temperament inspire strong propensities for the performance of coition, and in addition powerful means of satisfying them. Subjects of a nervous temperament are also very addicted to the pleasures of Venus. Individuals of a lymphatic temperament appear to be less inclined for coition than the preceding.

Nevertheless, there exists a temperament which is more particularly disposed to the pleasures of love, and which may be denominated the erotic temperament.



**The Erotic Temperament** A special disposition, most often of an exaggerated kind, is the characteristic of this temperament. It is more uncommon than the others, for very few are the men who are able to wage twelve actions in the course of one night. Six-chambered revolvers are still pretty common, but before one with twelve shots we must take off our hat, and above that it comes into the category of those repeating rifles which can be fired 15 or 16 times without reloading the weapon!

Without having any appreciable or constitutional features, like the sanguine, bilious, and lymphatic temperaments, the erotic temperament is closely allied to the nervous temperament. The peculiar effects of it are the sole difference. From this results its greater frequency in the woman, owing to the multiplicity and the predominance of her erogenous foci brought into action by the genital centre.

It is chiefly augmented in the two sexes by anti-natural and solitary habits, or by such habits with another partner. By requiring artificial means, and a longer duration to reach the conclusion, Garnier says that these habits of onanism directly arrest the action of the genital centre and the erogenous centres upon which they react. They thus end by creating this particular temperament, or raising it to a greater height, as in the case of those who indulge in natural venereal excesses. Tardieu draws the following picture of it.

“ In the case of the passionate woman, the predominance of whose nervous system chiefly exalts the erotic thoughts and sentiments, it is revealed by the amplitude of her fleshly endowments and the abundance of her hair, by the mobile expression of her countenance, the easy animation of her features, the brilliant light of her eyes, the burning flame of her looks, the thickness and bright red colouring of her lips, contrasting with the whiteness of

her teeth the development of her breasts and organs is a confirmatory proof of it

The man who is a prey to the erotic temperament is a reasoning madman, except upon the object of his sexual imagination itself, which leads him to onerous abuses as well as to venereal excesses. The principal of this temperament is the facility of erection which is often violent and persistent. Externally these individuals are distinguished by a lascivious look brilliant and flushed by blood shot eyes, a voluptuous and smiling mouth, pale complexion, if not animated by their lust or flush by their excesses in alcohol and tobacco, by indecent manners and speech, and by a provocative appearance showing the thoughts, desires, and passions by which they are agitated

"From the difference of the various temperaments proceeds the different capacity for coition of men from 25 to 45 years of age. Some who are keen and choleric, hasty and passionate, indulge in it to satiety after time or at various intervals while others who are more calm lymphatic and cold only repeat it with difficulty. It was necessary and indispensable every day to a young man aged 24, while merely one sexual connection a month was sufficient for another taller and stronger than the former a retired soldier aged 27. In this there is the effect of custom and constitution. Eroticism is developed by the very use and abuse of the function. Certain individuals can never attain to the exploits of their comrades. They must not disquiet themselves. Just as the radical powers of the body each one has his own degree in this respect which it is always imprudent and dangerous to overpass (Garnier)

We quote from Krafft Ebing three cases of the erotic temperament

**1 Observations on the Erotic Temperament.** Madame E. , aged 47. A maternal uncle was affected with mental alienation the father was a man of an enthusiast turn of mind, given to excesses in *Venere*. From infancy the patient was nervous, eccentric and romantic, and displayed an excessive sexual inclination when she had barely emerged from childhood. She was addicted to sensual pleasures ever since the age of 10. She was married when she was 19 years old. She lived on good terms with her husband, but, although he was sufficiently endowed, he did not suffice for her : she had, until her latter years, several lovers besides her husband. She was fully conscious of the shame of this kind of life, but she felt her determination fail in the presence of this insatiable inclination which, at all events, she tried to conceal. She said later on that it was from *andromania* that she suffered.

The patient has given birth to six children. Six years ago, she fell out of a carriage and suffered a considerable shock. As a result of this accident, she was affected with melancholia, complicated with mania that she suffered from persecution The patient was approaching the time of menopause; she had, at this latter time, frequent and very abundant menstruations. The violence of her former inclination is diminished, a fact which she observes with pleasure. Slight degree of descent of the matrix and prolapsus ani ”

“ The two following observations show what a violent, dangerous and painful condition constitutes sexual hyperaesthesia for those who are affected with this anomaly.

**2 Hyperaesthesia sexualis. Delirium acutum ex abstinencia** On May 29<sup>th</sup> 1882. F. , aged 23, a shoemaker, unmarried, was received into the

hospital He is the son of a very violent and choleric father and of a neuropathic mother whose brother is a lunatic

The subject has never had any serious illness, nor is he addicted to drink, but at all times he has had great sexual desires Five days ago, he was seized with an acute psychical affection In full day, and in the presence of three witnesses, he attempted a rape had an obscene frenzy, and masturbated himself to excess, three days ago, he had an attack of furious madness, and, when he arrived at the hospital he was in a very grave condition of *delirium acutum*, with fever and very violent phenomena of motor excitation By means of a treatment with ergotine, a cure was obtained

On Jan 5<sup>th</sup> 1888, the same individual was received a second time displaying symptoms of furious madness He was at first morose, irascible, disposed to weep, and affected with insomnia Then after having made an unsuccessful attack on some women, his rage grew more and more violent

On Jan 6<sup>th</sup> his condition became aggravated he had very serious *delirium acutum* (throwing himself about, grinding his teeth, grimacing, etc, symptoms of motor excitation, temperature rising to 40.7) He masturbated himself altogether instinctively He has been cured by an energetic treatment of ergotine, which has lasted until Jan 11<sup>th</sup> After he was cured, the patient gave very interesting explanations of the cause of his illness

At all times he has had great sexual longings His first coition took place when he was sixteen Continence has occasioned head aches a great psychical irascibility dejection, want of inclination for work and insomnia As he lived in the country, he but rarely had an opportunity of satisfying his requirements, he replaced it by masturbation He had to masturbate himself once or twice a day

For two years, he has not had connection. His sexual excitation grew more and more intense, he thought only of a means of satisfying his instinct. Masturbation did not suffice to allay his continually increasing torments due to continence. Latterly, he has had a violent desire for coition, more and more acute insomnia and irritability. He has but a brief remembrance of the period of his illness. The patient was cured in the month of December. He is a very agreeable man. He considers his irresistible instinct as a pathological case, and has grave doubts about the future.

**Dog's criminal tongue.** 3. On July 11<sup>th</sup>, 1884. R..., aged thirty-three, a clerk, attacked with *paranoia persecutoria* and *neurasthenia sexualis*, was received into the hospital. His mother was neuropathic. His father died of a disease of the spinal marrow. From infancy he has had a very strong sexual instinct, of which he was fully aware when he was six years old. Since that period he has been addicted to masturbation, since he was fifteen years old, to pederasty for want of anything better, sometimes he has had tendencies to sodomy, and latterly he has indulged in abuses of coition *cum uxore*. From time to time he has had perverse impulses, the idea of playing the *cunnilungus*, of giving cantharides to his wife, whose libido does not correspond to his own. A short time after his marriage, his wife died. The pecuniary position of the patient grew worse, and he no longer had the means of procuring women for himself. He returned to his habit of masturbation, and availed himself of the *lingua canis* to procure ejaculation. From time to time he had attacks of priapism bordering upon satyriasis. He was compelled to masturbate himself to avoid the *stuprum*. In proportion as the sexual neurasthenia has increased, there has been a

diminution of the *libido nima*, which he looks upon as a salutary relief

The latter case is very curious. It shows clearly that under the impulse of a temperament strong to morbidity, these desires, when not satisfied, cause the normal sexual instinct to deviate and lead the subject on to pederasty, sodomy, and bestiality.

We know that Gall, the famous phrenologist (see Vol. I) has placed the seat of the genic sense in the cerebellum, and that the hypertrophy of that organ was a positive sign to him of the individual's inclination for the pleasures of love. A most distinguished surgeon, Laverne (*les Forçats considérés sous le rapport physiologique moral et intellectuel observés au bagne de Toulon*), who through his position was able to make valuable experiments to either support or invalidate Gall's ideas, relates as follows:

**Condemned for rape.** 'A literary convict, accused and convicted of several rapes, gave an explanation one day of the means of diminishing the frequency of this crime, and reasoned in a very sensible manner, saying that in a certain class of men strongly inclined to wrong and anti-natural acts, physical tortures alone would have the power of impressing the mnemonic brand of that which they ought not to do any longer. How many convicts, condemned for rape, have confessed to us that advice, penalties, prison, the irons, are but a feeble barrier against the revolt of the flesh? It must certainly be said that these subjects are the most immoral in the world, they have overexcited themselves by their course of reading, their criminal habits and idleness, the cerebral organ, which nature has as it were detached from its great bulb, to insolate it and concentrate it entirely upon the life of reproduction. Is the cerebellum in fact the centre of philogeniture? The proofs which

demonstrate this proposition count among the most probable of phrenology, here, the history of the symptoms in the diseases has come to the aid of the art, and it has so often justified the previsions of the physiologist, that at the present day if any one succeeded in shaking the belief in craniology, the power of the cerebellum in the sentiment of physical love would always remain the cornerstone of the edifice ”

“If instances of this are desired we can refer to the following.

**A human satyr** A familiar of the haunts of prostitution, a man-satyr if there ever was one, addicted to all the aberrations of lewdness, lost all his vices after a violent conflict in which his adversary struck him a vigorous blow with a stick on the back of his neck

An officer in the navy, of superior rank, remarkable for his qualities of acuteness and refinement of mind and his extreme bravery, made me feel his head I found that he was broad across the back of his neck and that he had round and unequal bumps on the cerebellum. I acquainted him with my moral diagnosis. What he told me could not find a place in a work of this kind, but it is a fact that no moral penalty, no privation, no physical sufferings of the keenest nature, no antiaphrodisiac means, were of any avail against the vigour of his local temperament. It was a disease, a hypertrophy perhaps of a point of the cerebellum. In the keen exacerbations of these attacks, the weight, the fatigue, the warmth of the back of his neck, warned him in spite of himself of what was wanting to his regimen. When calm succeeded the tempest, he mentioned that he felt a painful oppression at the enlargement of the marrow at the lumbar region.

This officer, struck with cerebellous apoplexy, at first lost the aforesaid power, but it returned together with the

signs of an imperfect cure, and then, haltingly it is true, he proceeded to indulge imprudently again in bodily debauchery. A second attack of apoplexy killed him, but to his last moment, having gradually lost all his affective and intellectual faculties, he did not cease to reason accurately on all that concerned his passion.

**The passionate dame** “A lady much inclined to the pleasures of the senses, a woman who was broad at the back of the neck and subject to an almost continual inflammation of the cerebellum, had a fall. The violent concussion which she experienced in the region of the cerebellum changed all her being: she became as insensible as marble, and retained a pronounced repugnance for those pleasures which before she had sought after passionately.

“The case is that of a woman of ordinary height, but of a strong constitution, having a very pleasing expression of countenance, very polite in her manners, and showing considerable reserve in her behaviour. She answers perfectly all questions which are put to her, and applies herself to all kinds of work, in spite of her years, with as much activity as perfection. During four years there was not an obscene word, not a gesture, not the smallest moment of agitation, not a movement of an enervation, she is perfect as long as she is confined, but absolutely incapable of making a right use of her liberty. All her life long, from her very childhood, she has sought after men, as a young girl she used means of provoking them.

Of the most docile, amiable, and lively character, blushing when any one addressed a word to her, casting down her eyes when she found herself in the presence of several persons, as soon as she happened to find herself alone with a man she was suddenly transformed, lifted up her petticoats and attacked him with savage energy. Her



parents got her married, in hopes of putting a stop to her licentiousness. Marriage for her was but a scandal the more; she loved her husband with madness, but she loved with an equal madness every man with whom she happened to find herself alone. When she was a grandmother, she continued the same kind of life. One day she brought into her house a little boy 12 years of age, but when she wanted to touch him in an obscene manner, the child took to flight and went and told his brother, who went into the house pointed out to him by the complainant and gave her an unmerciful beating. During this scene the son-in-law came in, and before they had time to tell him anything, took the side of him who was beating his mother-in-law.

Age has not cooled the fire which devoured her, the more excesses she committed, the livelier and stouter she grew, and the fresher she looked.

She was a widow, and her children banished her to the suburbs, where they helped her with a small income. Becoming old, she was compelled to pay a fee for the services which she exacted, and as the small allowance which she received was insufficient for this purpose, she worked with indefatigable ardour to obtain the means of paying a larger number of 'overs.

After sojourning four years at La Salpêtrière, she died of cerebral hemorrhage.

The same sexual excitation is met with in men.

An old man who died mad, and whose epileptic son was himself gifted with an extraordinary generic appetite, was irresistibly impelled several times a day to sexual intercourse. It frequently happened, even when he had guests at his table, that he would take away his wife in the middle of the repast, to indulge in coition. Rich, and the owner of a large estate, he had established in his farms.

relays of love, having made as many of his farmers wives his mistresses as would yield to all his desires. Seized at the end of his life with acute mania with obscene delirium and onanistic frenzy, he quickly succumbed.

By the side of these scientific observations which show that the erotic temperament may pre exist without being the effect of a mental disease let us put in evidence the erotic man so well described by Dubut de Laforest

**The Marquis de Sombreuse** "The descendant of one of the oldest families in Brittany, left an orphan at an early age, enormously wealthy, M de Sombreuse had passed his life in travelling throughout the world. For several years this nobleman, who was reaching his 60<sup>th</sup> year had resided in a palace at Saigon, when suddenly an intense desire to see France again sprung up in his mind, which had grown somewhat weary of everything he decided to leave Cochin China and to pass the rest of his days in Paris, near the Mauvals his sole-surviving relatives. To observe his attitude in Emilie Plock's drawing room, to see him emptying his glass without paying any attention to the women, it might have been supposed that from that time drunkenness was the old Marquis sole vice. This would have been an error. The old man was one of those beings who only live and move for sensual activity. He was the living proof that the passion of the senses is the only one which does not forgive, which drags along its victims — men and women — until their last hour, which wears them away and consumes them as long as there remains any strength in the muscles any movement or light in the intelligence. The gambler is cured as soon as he has no more money the victim of alcohol dies, as soon as he can no longer drink, the sensual creature ever works on, even

when his body is used up and finished (incapable) To the decay of the vital organism succeeds the gradual enfeeblement of the pleasures of the mind, for the mind itself enjoys the greatest pleasures of all, it is the most tenacious, the hardest to equal, the most rebellious against the inevitable influences of old age.

This immoderate genital appetite, which M de Sombreuse had never attempted to restrain, he inherited from his family, which had continually formed ties within the limits of consanguinity, being too proud and too unreasonable to permit new blood to regenerate it with elements of vitality. For centuries, the de Sombreuse family, riveted to its estate in Brittany and, so to say, cloistered within its manorhouse, had refused all foreign alliances. Cousins had always married cousins, and from this had resulted a gradual enfeeblement of the work of generation.

Far from keeping a watch upon himself, the Marquis, whose childhood had been unhealthy, at first gave a free course to his inclinations, his desires being augmented by the possession of an immense fortune. But when he reached man's estate, and while he traversed the Russian steppes, his muscular powers, at one time shaken, were strengthened by the violent exercise and the long marches, and soon the weakly being was transformed into a kind of Northern Hercules, with broad shoulders and powerful chest. There was a struggle between the overflowing physical activity and an original blemish. Till this hour the equilibrium had been maintained, in spite of his continual wanderings in the different climates of the world, in spite of the continuous toil of a defective brain, so supremely powerful is bodily health when thoroughly understood " (Dubut de Laforest *Le Gaga*. Pathologie Sociale. Paris, Paul Dupont, éditeur, 1897 )

A description follows of the violent love felt by de

Sombreuse at the sight of his cousin Julie, the wife of his relative de Mauval. After vain efforts to drive the image of Julie from his mind by plunging into dissipation, like a wise man, a lover of change and dainty morsels, de Sombreuse was obliged to admit that he was conquered. "But the remembrance of Madame de Mauval remained anchored within the old man's brain, who instead of averting his thoughts from her, attached them only more closely. The whole tale turns upon de Sombreuse's Machiavellian idea of mining his cousin de Mauval morally and physically, of making a *gaga* of him, in order to succeed the more easily in seducing his wife.

**A London Minotaur** D. Minime gives us the picture after nature of a salacious and libidinous Englishman. 'Just us' says the author of the enquiry "in the Labyrinth of Crete, there was a monster known as the Minotaur which devoured the virgins abandoned to him in the windings of his cursed lair, so there exists in London at least one monster who may be considered as the absolute incarnation of brutal lust. The tyrant of the labyrinth of Crete devoured his booty of seven virgins and as many youths only once every nine years. Here, in London, clothed in a garment as broad, with linen as fine, and looking as respectable as any Bishop, with no ignoble covering or filthy bestial countenance to distinguish him from the rest of his equals, there is a Doctor, now retired from his profession, who has devoted his leisure time and his fortune to the corruption of virgins.

This is the gentleman adds the author of the enquiry, 'whose number of virgins, required from his procurers is three a fortnight, all maids who have not yet been seduced. But his devastating passion sinks into insignificance in comparison with M. whose whole life is devoted to

the satisfaction of his depravity. During my investigation in this infernal circle, his name was continually sounding in my ears. Such and such a procurer had found some girls for , such and such a woman was hunting for virgins for , such and such a girl was waiting for —, such and such a house was pointed out as the resort of . Every-where I met with his traces, and I began to make enquiries in the mysterious world of the supernatural in reference to this redoubtable personage. I soon obtained the proof that this modern Minotaur really existed, this Tiberius whose Caprea is in London.

My part, in the commission of enquiry, is not to devote individuals directly to the popular execration, and the name or address of this creature will not appear in the columns. But the fact of his existence ought to be borne in mind, as a striking demonstration of all the power given to a rich man to dishonour not only hundreds, but thousands of poor women.

M actually boasts of having ruined 2,000 women. He never has to do with the regular-street prostitutes, but he pays largely to have actresses, shop-girls, and others of that class. In him, all his acts are subordinate to this main business of his life. He has paid his victims, no doubt — he never gives less than five pounds sterling for a girl — but the question is whether this reckless waste of £ 3000 to £ 5000 to purchase the consent of young girls to their own dishonour is not a formidable aggravation of the evil which he has been permitted, for some mysterious end, to inflict upon his kind.

The blindest incredulity must admit that in this English gentleman we have a Minotaur more hideous by far than that which Theseus overcame and of which Ovid sung in his Fables ” (Docteur Minime, *la Prostitution et la Traite des Blanches à Londres* Paris, Marpon et Flammarion, 1886 )

**Precocious Sexual Instinct** The sexual instinct may not only be over-excited through an erotic temperament, but it may moreover be developed long before the normal period of the puberty of the two sexes

This is demonstrated by the following observations. Let us remark that before a certain age it is very difficult, both for the girl and boy to find a way of satisfying their inclination

“Heredity is one of the most formidable of these. If the boy imitates the habits of his father it is so still more fatally with mother and daughter. No lascivious mother ever had a chaste daughter. The proof of it is in this very striking and authentic instance

A girl aged five, gave herself up to manualisation with frenzy both night and day. Her mother, who was evidently hysterical and devoid of moral sense, promised her that if she would abstain from it during the day that she would take part in it herself when she put her to bed. She kept her promise so well that she carried it out one evening in the presence of a stranger, to whose stupefaction she gave the above mentioned reason for her culpable weakness. Such monstrous aberrations can only spring from diseased brains

It is superfluous to relate afresh all the different affections, already pointed out, to which the child is liable. The nervous susceptibility of little girls exposes them far more than boys to meningitis or brain fever, convulsions, eclampsia and to cholera in particular, which seem to attack them in preference

A girl aged eight, reduced to a disquieting state of thinness, had such a considerable agitation of her limbs that she could no longer make any use of them, or even remain in bed. She was confined to a closed arm chair. The muscles of the face and eyes were agitated and puckered. It

was thought that she had worms, but when vermifuges were administered, they remained without effect. Dr Morelot, who was then consulted, recognized the effects of a bad habit, of the existence of which he was soon convinced. Some advice and considerable watchfulness on the part of her parents, the use of cold baths, musk and camphor, brought about a complete cure.

The direct influence of masturbation was very evident in the case of a young girl of good temperament, who had not previously suffered from rheumatism. She was seized with choræa after solitary practices repeated as many as four times a day. When she was sent into the country she quickly recovered. She returned to Paris and lived, when she was 20, with a law-student in 1875, who to calm her erotic desires, practised manualization of the clitoris upon her. The choræa returned again each time for several days, and then ceased until these manœuvres were again performed.

Four youths of from 15 to 18 years of age were living together for the sake of their education, in a family where there were three daughters of from 7 to 12. The youngest of the latter was so lustful that she incited the youths in turn, separately and in secret, to touch her by her coaxing ways and her bold caresses, placing herself between their legs or on their knees when they were sitting down. When she was alone, she placed herself astride on the edge of a chair to masturbate herself. An acute meningitis quickly carried her off, which demonstrated the morbid nature of this extreme precocious salacity. But it then happened that the young fellows incited the sisters to the same manœuvres, through the extreme liberty which they enjoyed in this thoughtless household." Garnier *De l'Onanisme*.

**The girl nymphomaniac.** "Adèle B.. is a young

girl aged 14 with a pretty face, but of that kind of beauty which only lasts during extreme youth This child is very depraved On all occasions when workmen are engaged at the Asylum, it is necessary to watch her with the greatest attention She tries to attract them, to provoke them, makes them signs to follow her, kisses her hands to them, and goes so far as to make indecent gestures in their presence, it is then necessary to shut her up

When she was ten years of age, she caused trouble to her family by telling her father that her mother had rolled on the bed with her cousin As she is very untruthful and was thoroughly acquainted at an early age with all that she ought still to be ignorant of at the present day, she is quite capable of having invented this sad story

When she was 11 years old, she accosted in the street a young boy aged 15, who had been sent to Paris by his parents to learn the business of a tanner This young man had a room of his own, his conduct had been good up till then and he had worked industriously She asked him to show her where he lived, she led him astray, and proposed that she should remain with him These two children lived together for two months At length her parents, after a long search, succeeded in discovering her, and placed her under our care She speaks of her adventure without the slightest emotion or embarrassment "it was, she says 'very amusing and very agreeable, and it is unfortunate that it came to an end so soon'

When she was deflowered this young girl was still far from the time of her first menses She did not have them until after she had remained with us over a year when she was twelve and a half We have kept her for several years, and she ought to have remained with us always However she answered correctly all questions



which were put to her, and to the eyes of all the world she was not a lunatic

Adèle B .. 's mother asked earnestly to be allowed to remove her we resisted this for a long time, as we foresaw what would happen She persisted, and the young girl herself, in the hopes of obtaining her freedom, was on her best behaviour, and promised everything which was desired, we let her go

A short time after she was met in company with some soldiers, then in a state of drunkenness, and then in the family way, finally we learnt that she had died in giving birth to a child " (Crélat *Folie lucide*).

**Salacity in boys** Sexual precocity is very frequent in man We shall give in the chapter on Onanism various observations of young masturbators who have consummated their manœuvres at 7, 8, and 10 years of age Vogel even relates the story " of a little boy *one year old*, who had a passion for rubbing his thighs one against the other and thus to occasion the erection of his penis The women who saw him acting thus laughed at it. Nevertheless, the mother forbade them to tolerate such an abuse, but the child's tears and cries prevailed over her maternal orders He repeated the act several times a day, and at night as well, often after a quarter of an hour's interval during the performance, his face became inflamed, his eyes sparkled, his breathing grew rapid The mother asserted that out of the erect penis she had seen a certain moisture emerge during a kind of spasm At length, weakened and bathed in sweat, the little fellow ended by falling into a deep sleep " (Pouillet *De l'Onanisme*).

When, by chance, salacious little boys who know through masturbation to put their little affair into erection, find themselves alone and without witnesses with little

girls, they do not hesitate to copulate with them I quote two instances of this from Tardieu, but how many cases occur of which we are ignorant especially incestuous cases of a brother with a sister in poor families where they all sleep in one bed room The father comes in drunk and begins to copulate with his wife The brother and the little sister, who are often lying on a pallet bed, hear if they do not see, and repeat between themselves what they see done by the authors of their being

Let anyone take a street walker from the outer Boulevards, let him gain her confidence by a few presents after giving her medical attention gratis, and one evening after the consumption of a few liqueur glisses of brandy following upon a good dinner washed down with several bottles of wine the damsel will cynically confess that she was deflowered by her small brother or her small brother's companion has taken it upon him to revenge himself on his sister This precocious lewdness is not peculiar to the white races It is developed excessively in the yellow races and particularly in the Annamite race and as a proof of this we give the the Tonkinese proverb that "for a girl to be a maid when she is eight years old, she must have neither father nor brothers" However this may be Tardieu's observations are very characteristic

**Possibility of a young boys violating a little girl** There are cases in which the defloration, the complete tearing of the hymen in little girls has not been possible, owing to the very slightly developed dimensions and the peculiar thinness of the sexual organ of the individual who has been guilty of the crime

Sometimes it will be an adult whose exceptional conformation will allow of complete intromission into the parts of a little girl, sometimes it will be a very young boy

whom a lamentable precocity will have rendered guilty of a rape upon a child of his own age, and in this case the conformation of the shape allows an intercourse in some sort natural...

In two other cases, I have just seen, in the case of a little girl four and a half years old, a tear of the hymen produced with violence by a young boy of twelve, and a little later, a girl of eleven deflowered by a small boy aged eleven and a half. The latter case deserves to be reported in some detail. The little girl, aged, as I have said, only eleven years, is not completely formed. The hymen membrane is entirely torn from top to bottom, its shreds are floating and display the characteristics of a recent wound resulting from an act of violence which has certainly entailed an effusion of blood. As to the author of this violence, he was a small boy aged ten, lively and very intelligent, in whose looks could be read the proof of his precocious disposition. His penis, without being excessive, was easily turgescient, the gland especially, which was exposed by the prepuce without any trouble; the urinary meatus was of a bright red colour, the testicles, rather voluminous, had come down into the purses. There was otherwise no defect of conformation, and no disease. After similar instances, it is impossible for me to share Casper's opinion, who declares, in an absolute manner, that a little boy of eight cannot accomplish a complete sexual act. If any doubt is felt about it, I may add that I have seen a child of six who, serving as an instrument for the shameful amusements of a man of bad character, had been brought together with a little girl of his own age, and guided, it is true, by another person's hand, was able to proceed to a complete intromission. These facts therefore must be admitted, and we must see in them a motive for examining, with even still greater

care, the question which we have just been debating

‘ I have seen a mulatto boy in Paris, less than three years old, throw himself not only upon little girls, but upon women and call upon them boldly and obstinately to satisfy his desires. He manifested erections of a more than momentary kind in his sexual parts, which were by no means prematurely developed, but which displayed dimensions proportionate to his age. As he was surrounded with girls who indulged him in the satisfaction of his desires, which was an attractive game to them owing to its singularity, he died of consumption before he had reached the end of his fourth year. His cerebellum was extraordinarily developed. The rest of his head was of ordinary dimensions for his age. ’ (Gall *De la Phrénologie* )

Gall was also acquainted with a boy age five who, considering his bodily shape, appeared to be sixteen. His sexual parts were entirely developed, the back of his neck was wide and convex. He had a strong beard, a harsh and manly voice, in a word all the signs of full and entire virility. In this child the instinct of propagation showed itself in the most pronounced manner.

Another child aged ten, in the same physical conditions as the preceding, was detained in a House of Correction at Leipzig for having violated a young girl.

**The Sexual Instinct Prolonged** The persistent sexual instinct is no less frequent than the precocious. It may almost be said that when the instinct is precocious in a subject of an erotic temperament, and at the same time endowed with a vigorous constitution this instinct, provided that the generative organ has not been injured by genital excesses, may be prolonged much beyond the normal period. In the First Volume we have quoted

instances of old men having connection and even getting children at a very advanced age

The Marquis de Sombreuse reproduces the type of the old man in whom the sexual instinct is persistent. Nevertheless the hale and vigorous old man must not be confounded with the neurose individual whose withered genital organs refuse to serve him, and who seeks in acts of shameful debauchery for means to satisfy his passions. From the senile debauchee to the depraved, and from the latter to the madman, there is but a step which it is very easy to take.

**The Morbid Love of the Old Man.** Often when the physical powers remain vigorous, the moral powers decay. The portrait of the old man drawn by Esquirol and Legrand du Saulle is not always true, says Dr Laurent with good reason. The cases of intellectual longevity are relatively rare. For the few who retain their mental powers in their integrity, how many there are who border upon insanity! "The ideas, the character, the habits, the acts and the passions may be modified by the progress of age," says Dr Chivet. And he adds: "In a general way it may be said that the nervous system is weakened in its working, and that it re-acts less than before, even when it is excited by moral impressions of any nature" (Chivet. *Contribution à l'étude de la Folie chez les vieillards*. G. Steinheil Paris, 1889).

"The memory grows weak, the perception is clouded, the will becomes idle. And thus the old man feeble and weak, may become the laughing-stock of those who surround him. Therefore it is no uncommon thing to see passions become kindled at that age which are hardly justified by the almost extinct physiological functions. And this love will feel the effects of the soil which has given it

birth It will be a weak vacillating love, from which all voluntary initiative will be excluded The old man allows himself to be circumvented with a surprising facility by her whom he loves, and thus it is that he is brought to marry his cook or some adventuress ' (E Laurent, *l'Amour morbide* )

A considerable distinction therefore must be drawn between the old man vigorous physically and morally, and him in whom the sexual instinct survives in moral and physically decrepitude This also is Krafft Ebing's opinion " There are rare cases in which the sexual instinct is preserved to a very advanced age *Senectus non quidem annis sed viribus magis aestimatur* (Lethman ) Æsterlen even reports the case of an old man of 83, who was condemned by the Wurtemberg Court of Assizes to three years hard labour for offences against morality Unfortunately he says nothing about the kind of offence nor of the physical state of the accused man

The manifestations of the sexual instinct at a very advanced age do not constitute in themselves a pathological case But the existence of pathological conditions must necessarily be admitted when the individual is worn out (decrepitude), when his sexual life is already extinct for a long time and when, in a man whose sexual wants beforehand have perhaps not been strong, the instinct manifests itself with great power, and demands imperiously to be satisfied, and is often even perverted

In such cases, good sense will cause the existence of pathological conditions to be suspected (Krafft Ebing *Psychopathia Sexualis* )

**Jean Richepin's Poem — Pour faire peur au Chat** The old man who does not know how to restrain his desires, and is the victim of his lascivious ima

gination, and impelled to unbounded excesses, assuredly is making his way towards the grave.

It is for his benefit that Jean Richepin has written his poem *Pour faire Peur au Chat*.

Quand la romance est romancée,  
Après les derniers roucoulis,  
Que reste-t-il? Morte pensée  
Os démoellés, sens aveulis,  
Et nuques en torticolis  
Ou le poil suant s'échevèle  
Au chat! Au chat, oiseaux jolis!  
Au chat! C'est un mange-cervelle

Au chat! Sa morsure pansée  
Résiste à tous les alcalis  
On en sent toujours la lancée  
Des virus qu'on croit abolis  
Dans la chair aux mille replis  
Le venin caché se révèle  
Au chat! Au chat, beaux bengalis!  
Au chat! C'est un mange-cervelle,

Ceux que la débauche insensée  
Gave de sa truffe en coulis,  
Avec la vieille fiancée  
Vieillissant tôt les traits pâlis  
L'haleine en lècheurs d'aillolis,  
Les reins ensablés de gravelle,  
Au chat! jeunes ensevelis!  
Au chat! c'est un mange-cervelle

**Genesisic Excitations induced by various Affections** Various affections may induce abnormal genesisic affections in no wise connected with the subject's genital vigour. These excitations are often evidence of a grave malady

*Locomotor ataxy* Locomotor ataxy is often revealed by a very exaggerated venereal appetite. An ataxic patient confessed that he was able to repeat coition 8 or 9 times a

night before he entered the hospital. Another younger patient also said that he had sexual intercourse as many as eight times during the 24 hours.

*Rabies* Rabies through the deep seated troubles of inner vation and the perversions of every kind which it induces, is a neurosis occasioned by the intromission of its particular virus. There is nothing surprising therefore in its reacting on the general economy. A Paré tells a story of a man seized with the commencements of rabies who performed the venereal act more than sixty times in the twenty four hours. Two cases of authentic rabies have been observed by Messieurs Constantin Paul and Josias. In the one the subject, a man aged 50, a keeper in the forest of Vincennes was bitten by a mad dog, recognized as such at the Ecole Veterinaire d Alfort. The patient at the end of the second day of the convulsive period, had pollutions, preceded by a violent itching of the sexual organs, and asked several times that his wife would share his bed with him.

The second case refers to a child aged 9, also bitten by a mad dog. This child towards the end of the sixth day displayed until his death the symptoms of disury and veritable satyriasis.

*Phthisis* The great *libido* of consumptive patients is a remarkable fact. Krafft Ebing quotes from Hoffmann the case of a consumptive peasant who on the evening preceding his death had again satisfied his wife. There are numerous instances of consumptive patients who, at the commencement of their malady have had a precocious *libido*. But when the disease has gained in extent and wasted away the sources of vitality, the *libido* gives place to complete impotence.

*Chlorosis* D. Moreau of Tours has pointed to chlorosis as being capable of producing a violent erotic excitation in



certain young girls, and draws attention to the following observation by Baillarger

**The erotic-mad demoiselle** “ Mademoiselle C , twenty-four years of age, born of a mother who is actually a lunatic, displays all the symptoms of well-characterised chlorosis her face is pale and slightly swollen, the general weakness is considerable; besides this there is suppression of the menses, gastralgia, sound of breathing in the region of the heart and carotids . , etc To these symptoms is joined a remarkable perturbation of the intelligence The patient’s imagination is unceasingly occupied with erotic subjects Mademoiselle C ., delights in relating, with the exactest details, the sensations which she declares she often feels, in spite of herself, in her genital organs Several women who reside in the same town as she does, and who used to come and visit her, have been obliged to give up seeing her on account of the obscenity of her talk, and of the disgust with which she inspires them

The patient passes her days lying on her back, with her legs parted and bent on her thighs. It is in vain that she has been remonstrated with regarding this, she says that “ it is the only position which she can endure, because as soon as she brings her thighs together, she feels a burning heat in her genital parts, soon followed by a very keen sensation and by the venereal spasm She adds that her imagination contributes greatly to encrease these symptoms, and declares that she has unceasingly in mind *enchanted spots and voluptuous images* which she endeavours in vain to drive away

Mademoiselle C. declares that she began to feel these pains in her genital parts when about *four years old*, and that about this age she was induced to indulge in onanism

The symptoms increased at the time of the appearance of the menses

After describing the means which she employed to get rid of the ideas which possessed her, Mademoiselle C indicates the causes which usually produce these same ideas

“ Solitude silence, the clear sky the song of birds, the beauty of the country, were, or rather have been since that time and always will be, hurtful to me Bowls of flowers even in my room are enough to bring to my mind the picture of these enchanted spots ’

These genital sensations, so strong that the patient felt at every moment slight impressions which sometimes increased to an excessive degree at sleeping-time, followed her even in her slumbers Erotic dreams awoke her with a start ‘ Frequently, she said, while asleep I have had such *violent sensations*, that the mere belief that I was at my last moment made me *roll on the ground and lose consciousness* I woke up and I had violent spasms and frequent pains at the heart which have never left me since *These sensations in the parts* soon became such violent physical sufferings that I felt horrible twinges in the breasts, chest and stomach so that I was obliged to eat every two or three hours

The symptoms of this singular affection became still more aggravated The desires of her mind entirely overcame her imagination, and there were at the same time *fits of weeping, feelings of oppression in the stomach chest and breasts, spasms, suffocation, and the most violent head aches* Then supervened what Mademoiselle C calls the last symptoms, those which she does not dare to describe in her letters She declared that not only did she feel spontaneously, in spite of herself, these voluptuous sensations but that she sometimes distinctly felt that these sensations were produced by a body which introduced itself into her

organs, that is to say, that there was then a complete reproduction of the venereal act

As the result of a treatment, of the nature of which M. Baillarger is ignorant, Mademoiselle C. . left the hospital after a few months, perfectly cured of her chlorosis and of her erotic hallucinations. "

**Impotence (sexual anaesthesia)** We have pointed out in the First Volume the principal causes of impotence and indicated the aphrodisiacal treatment to remedy it. We treat of impotence in this place from the psychopathic point of view. Impotence being the opposite to sexual excitation, it is very natural for us to study it after the latter.

I shall not proceed to enumerate again the principal causes which produce impotence. I am content to divide them into two great classes, 1<sup>st</sup> Congenital Sexual Anaesthesia, 2<sup>nd</sup> Acquired Anaesthesia, *id est*, men who for one cause or another have become impotent, after having at first been in possession of their powers.

**Congenital Anaesthesia** Abstracting the subject from whom the genital organs being malformed or incomplete, impotence fatally results therefrom, it may be asserted that unquestionable instances exist of the total absence of the sexual sense, occasioned by cerebral causes, cases in which, in spite of the normal development and working of the genital parts, all inclination for the sexual life is absolutely wanting, or has been wanting at all times. These are creatures of a very uncommon kind, degenerate in whom we may meet with functional cerebral troubles, symptoms of psychical degeneracy.

Legrand du Saulle quotes a classical observation of this D. ., aged 33, born of a mother affected with mania

that she was persecuted This woman's father was likewise affected with the same mental disease, and finally committed suicide The mother was mad, and her mother had an attack of puerperal mania Three of the patient's brothers died at an early age, and another who survived was of abnormal character D when he was 13 years old was already possessed with the fear that he would become mad At the age of 14, he tried to commit suicide Later on he led a vagrant life, and as a soldier was guilty of frequent acts of insubordination and folly He was of limited intelligence did not display any symptom of degeneracy, had normal genital parts, and at the age of 17 or 18 had runnings of sperm He had never masturbated himself, never had had any sexual feelings or desired to have sexual intercourse with women

P 36 years of age, a day labourer, was received at the beginning of the month into my hospital, for spasmodic spinal paralysis He declares that he is sprung from a healthy family He has stammered from infancy His skull is microcephalous The patient is a little silly He has never been sociable, and has never had any sexual inclinations The sight of a woman says nothing to him No inclination for masturbation has ever manifested itself in him He has frequent erections but only in the morning at the time that he wakes when his bladder is full, there is no trace of sexual excitation Pollutions are very rare with him during his sleep, about once a year, and then he dreams that he has to do with women But these dreams are not of a very clearly erotic character He declares that he does not experience any sensation of pleasure properly so called at the moment of pollution He says that his brother, aged 34 is constituted from the sexual point of view in the same way as he is as for his sister he believes that the case is the same with her A younger brother,

he says, is of a normal sexuality. An examination of the patient's genital parts has not led to the discovery of any anomaly, save a phimosiis " (Krafft Ebing )

" An hereditary hysterical, affected with claustrophobia and other intellectual disorders was suddenly seized with such an aversion for sexual intercourse that she fled from her husband every time that he showed any desire of this kind

M X . , a merchant, of a nervous constitution lymphatic, anaemic, with neuralgia of the pupils, trembling of the hands, heaviness of the head, his sleep is disturbed by confused dreams and frightful nightmares, his appetite is nil, his digestion painful, and he suffers from constipation M. X .., who is aware of his condition, has no strength or courage for work, not even to take longish walks. He wishes to marry, but the very idea of a woman troubles and chills him " (Cullerier )

In his *Psychopathia Sexualis*, Krafft Ebing sums up in a remarkable manner the study of Impotence from the psychopathic point of view, and we borrow from him all the following.

**Cases of Psychopathic impotence** " Hammond (*Impuissance sexuelle*, Berlin, 1889), among his numerous observations, can only quote the three following cases of *anaesthesia sexualis*.

W . , 33 years of age, vigorous, healthy, with normal genital parts, has never felt any *libido*, and has in vain tried to arouse his absent sexual sense by reading obscene books, and by relations with prostitutes

These attempts have occasioned him only disgust extending to nausea, and nervous and physical exhaustion; even when he forced the situation, he was able but on a single occasion to obtain a very transient erection W ..

has never masturbated himself since the age of 17 he has had a pollution once in every two months Important interests necessitated his marrying He did not have the *horror feminae* and eagerly desired to have a home and a wife, but he felt himself incapable of accomplishing the sexual act and he died a bachelor during the North American Civil War

X, aged 27, with normal genital parts, had never felt any *libido* Erection could not take place either through mechanical excitation or through warmth, but instead of *libido* he then had an inclination for alcoholic excesses The latter led to spontaneous erections, and he sometimes masturbated himself He had an aversion for women, and coition causes him disgust If he attempted it when he was in erection the latter ceased immediately He died in a state of coma, following an attack of hyperemia of the brain

Madame O of a normal constitution in good health with regular menses, aged 35 married for 15 years has never felt any *libido* and has never known the erotic sensation in her commerce with her husband She had no aversion to coition and it appeared that she sometimes found it agreeable but she never had any desire to repeat the cohabitation

By the side of these cases of pure anaesthesia we ought to recall those where as in the preceding the psychological side of the *vita sexualis* presents a blank page in the individual's biography, but where from time to time rudimentary sexual feelings are shown at least by Masturbation According to the subdivision established by Magnan an intelligent classification the sexual life in this case, would besides too dogmatic the sexual life in this case, would be limited in the spinal zone It is possible that in certain cases there nevertheless virtually exists a psychological side of

the *vita sexualis*, but it has weak foundations and is lost through masturbation before it can take root for ulterior development

In this way the intermediate cases between congenital sexual (psychical) anaesthesia and acquired anaesthesia would be explained. The latter menaces a number of damaged masturbators. From the psychological point of view, it is interesting to observe that when the sexual life wastes away too quickly it produces also an ethic imperfection

**The philosophic student.** As remarkable instances, let us quote the two following cases which I have already quoted in the *Archiv fur Psychiatrie*

F. J., aged 19, a student, was born of a nervous mother whose sister was an epileptic. At the age of four he had a severe affection of the brain, which lasted for a fortnight. As a child he had no heart, he was cold to his parents, as a pupil, he was strange, reserved, isolated, always investigating and reading. He was greatly gifted for study. He began at the age of 15 to indulge in masturbation. Ever since puberty, he has had an eccentric character, hesitating continually between religious enthusiasm and materialism, studying theology and the natural sciences. At the University his companions thought him crazed. He then read Jean Paul exclusively, and played truant. He is absolutely wanting in sexual feelings for the other sex. He allowed himself once to be induced to copulate, but did not experience any sexual pleasure in it, he found coition a folly, and has never tried to return to it. Without any serious motives, the idea of suicide has often come to him, he has made it the subject of a philosophical thesis in which he declares that suicide as well as masturbation are very useful acts. After repeated preliminary studies on the effect

of the poisons which he tried upon himself, he tried to commit suicide by *grammes* of opium, but he recovered and was conveyed to a lunatic asylum

The patient is void of all moral and social feeling His writings denote on incredible frivolity He possesses extensive knowledge but his logic is altogether strange and outlandish He has no trace of affective sentiments With the unparalleled irony and indifference of a surfeited man he rails against everything, even the most sublime things With philosophical sophisms and false conclusions, he pleads the lawfulness of suicide, which he intends to avail himself of as another would perform the most ordinary act He regrets that his pen knife has been taken away from him With that he would have been able like Seneca, to open his veins while he was in his bath A friend lately gave him a purgative instead of a poison which he had asked for He said making a joke that the drug had taken him to the closet instead of taking him to the other world Only the great operator armed with the trepan, could cut out of him "this foolish and dangerous old idea", etc

The patient has a voluminous skull of a rhomboid shape, and deformed the left part of the front is flatter than the right The occiput is very straight His ears are very wide apart and considerably projecting, the exterior orifice of the ear forms a narrow slit His genital parts are flaccid, his testicles very soft and very small

Sometimes the patient complains that he is possessed with the mania of doubt He is obliged to examine into the most useless problems, haunted by an obsession which lasts for whole hours, which is painful to him and fatigues him beyond measure He feels himself then so weakened that he is no longer capable of forming any correct idea

At the end of a year, the patient was sent away from the Asylum as an incurable When he returned home, he



passed his time in reading and weeping, and occupied himself with the idea of forming a new Christianity, because, he said, Christ was affected with a mania for greatness, and had duped the world with his miracles

After residing for a year with his father, a psychical excitation being suddenly produced, he was again confined in the Asylum. He displayed a mixture of initial delirium, of delirium of persecution (devil, anti-Christ, thought himself persecuted, monomania of poisoning, voices which troubled him), monomania of greatness (believed himself to be Christ, the Redeemer of the Universe). At the same time his acts were impulsive and incoherent. At the end of five months, this intercurrent mental disease disappeared, and the patient returned to his former state of primitive intellectual incoherence and moral imperfection

**The mutilation-loving workman** E, aged 30, a working painter out of place, was caught in the very act, he tried to cut the scrotum of a boy whom he had induced to go into a wood. He gave as his reason that he wanted to destroy this part of the body, in order that the world might not be peopled any further. In his childhood, he said, he had, for the same reason, made incisions in his genital parts. His genealogical tree could not be made out. Since his infancy, E. had been an abnormal from the intellectual point of view, he dreamed, and was never gay, he was easy to excite, passionate, and was always meditating, he was weak in his mind. He detested women, loved solitude and read much. Sometimes when alone committed follies. In his later years, his hatred of women became accentuated, he bore a particular grudge against pregnant women, by whom, he said, the misery of the world was augmented. He also hated children and

cursed those who had given them life, he had communistic ideas declaimed against rich men and priests, and against God who had originated rich and poor. He declares that it would be better to castrate children than to beget fresh ones who will be condemned to poverty and misery. This was always his idea, and at the age of 15, he had already tried to emasculate himself so as not to contribute to unhappiness and to the increase of the number of men. He despises the female sex which contributes to the augmentation of the population. Twice only, during his life has he had himself masturbated by women, except for this incident he has never had anything to do with them. From time to time, he has had sexual desires. It is true but never any desire to give them natural satisfaction.

E is a vigorous and muscular man. The constitution of his genital parts betrays nothing abnormal. On his scrotum and penis are to be seen numerous cicatrices from incisions, traces of former attempts at emasculation. He declares that the pain prevented him from completely executing his project. At the articulation of the right knee there is genu valgum. No symptom of onanism can be noted. He is of a gloomy character, self-willed and passionate. Social feelings are absolutely foreign to him. Apart from insomnia and frequent head aches, he has no functional disorders.

These cerebral cases must be distinguished from those in which the absence or rather the atrophy of the organs of generation constitutes the cause of the functional impotences, as the latter is seen in hermaphrodites, idiots and *crétins*. A case of this kind is mentioned in Maschotta's book.

'The petitioner asks for a divorce on the ground of her husband's impotence who has never accomplished the sexual act with her. She is 31 years old, and a virgin. The

husband is a little weak-minded; he is strong physically; his external genital parts are properly formed. He declares that he has never had a complete erection or ejaculation, and he says that intercourse with women leaves him absolutely indifferent. ”

Aspermia alone cannot be a cause of sexual anaesthesia, for, according to Ultzmann's experiments, even in a case of congenital aspermia, the *vita sexualis* and the genesic power may be produced in a perfectly satisfactory manner. This is a fresh proof that the *libido ab origine* must be attributed to cerebral causes only.

The *naturae frigidae* of Zachias represent an attenuated form of anaesthesia. They are met with more frequently in women than in men. But little inclination for sexual intercourse and even a manifest aversion to it (without having, be it understood, any other sexual equivalent) the absence of all psychical or voluptuous emotion during coition, which is simply conceded as a matter of duty, - these are the symptoms of this anomaly which I have often heard husbands complain of in my presence. In such cases it is always a question of women neuropathic *ab origine*. Some among them were at the same time hysterical.

2<sup>nd</sup> *Acquired Anaesthesia*. The acquired diminution of the sexual inclination as well as the extinction of that sentiment, may be attributed to various causes.

These may be organic or functional, psychical or somatic, central or peripheral.

In proportion as age advances, a diminution of the *libido* is physiologically produced, likewise, immediately after the sexual act, there is a temporary disappearance of the *libido*.

The differences regarding the duration of the conservation of the sexual inclination are very considerable and

variable according to the nature of each individual Education and manner of life have great influence on the intensity of the *vita sexualis*

Occupations which fatigue the mind (very deep study), physical weariness, abstinence, grief, and sexual continence have undoubtedly a harmful effect upon the maintenance of the sexual inclination

Abstinence acts at first as a stimulant Sooner or later, according to the physical constitution the activity of the genital organs is relaxed, and the *libido* at the same time is weakened

In every case, in the sexually ripe individual, there is an intimate correlation between the working of his genesic glands and the degree of his *libido* But the first is not always decisive, as is demonstrated to us by the fact that sensual women, even after the menopause, continue their sexual intercourse and may display phases of sexual excitation, but of cerebral origin

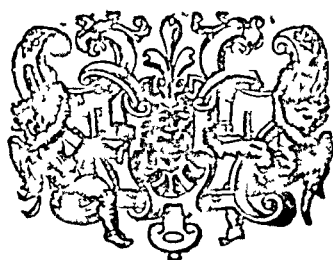
We may also see in eunuchs the *libido* remaining for a long time after the production of sperm has ceased

On the other hand, experience shows us that the *libido* has as an essential condition the function of the genesic glands and that the facts which we have just quoted merely constitute exceptional phenomena As peripheral causes of the diminution or disappearance of the *libido*, we may include castration, degeneracy of the genesic glands marasmus, sexual excesses in the form of coition and masturbation and alcoholism In the same way we may explain the disappearance of the *libido* in the case of general troubles of the digestion (diabetes, morphinism etc )

And lastly we must also make mention of atrophy of the testicles which has sometimes been observed as a result of diseases of the cerebral centres (cerebellum)

A diminution of the *vita sexualis* due to the degeneracy

of the nerves and of the genito-spinal centre, occurs in the case of diseases of the brain and the spinal marrow. An originally central lesion attacking the sexual instinct may be produced organically by a disease of the cerebral surface (*dementia paralytica* at an advanced stage), functionally by hysteria (central anaesthesia), and by melancholia or hypochondria.





## CHAPTER III

### GENITAL ABUSES

Priapism — Observations on various cases of Priapism

Satyriasis — Description of Satyriasis after Moreau — Causes of Satyriasis — Different Observations on Satyriasis — Nymphomania — Its Causes — The Three Phases of Nymphomania after Moreau — Classification of Professor Thoinot — Numerous Instances of Different Cases of Nymphomania — Exclusive Nymphomaniac Love by Thoinot — Observation relating to an Imbecile Nymphomaniac

**Priapism** Priapism is the antithesis of impotence through want of erection of the penis. It becomes, in addition (*vide* Vol I) a cause of impotence when the overworked organ declines to perform its duty by virtue of that well known law that action invites re action.

The causes of this persistent and sustained erection which fatigues the patient are numerous. Some proceed from a neurosis, from an affection of the spinal marrow of the cerebellum and even of the brain and we have pointed out (*vide* Vol I) the history of those men who hang themselves voluntarily seeking by this strange means to obtain erections and even ejaculations.

Certain authors, Garnier and Pouillet among others have indicated onanism as a powerful cause of priapism. Have they not taken the effect for the cause? At other times continence and chastity must also be enumerated as causes. However this may be the observations beneath indicate to the reader that priapism is a proteiform affec

tion, the genesis of which it is not always easy to determine.

**Observations on various cases of Priapism.** M Magnan quotes the case of a lady aged 35, a distinguished musician, but neuropathic, gastralgic, and ill-balanced. For twelve years, she had been a prey, at periods, to an erethismus which only yielded with very great difficulty to applications of cold water.

The same author gives in addition the following observation: "The subject is a neuropath aged 55, whom I had occasion to see with M Bouchard, the patient is deaf and the son of a deaf man, and has a brother and sister who are both hard of hearing. and afflicted with lunacy and melancholia. For several years he has been tortured with a priapism, which compels him to pass part of his nights outside his bed. He continually feels a sensation of heat in the loins and penis. After a very short slumber, he is woken up by a painful erection which compels him to get up, and which sometimes withstands washing and applications of cold water. He remains standing upright, lamenting his condition, and hurrying up and down his room, then when the organ is less turgid, he installs himself in a cane armchair, where with his legs elevated by means of a cushion, he succeeds sometimes in enjoying a few hours repose.

Sexual approaches, though rare and infrequent, have no influence on this state which is also independent of any moral action." (A. Cullière. *Les Frontières de la Folie*.)

"A Spanish gentleman, aged 22, very dark and as hairy as a he-goat, rather tall, but weak and delicate, owing to a coxalgia of which he bears the traces, and which confined him for a long time to his bed, had been

initiated at an early age into manual onanism with a second party, by his tutor. For some months, he has tried to rid himself of this habit by frequently resorting to prostitution, not only in his own country but while travelling in Italy and France. He has never been satisfied by this means. On the contrary, it overexcites him and he cannot refrain, when he returns home from indulging in masturbation as being the more pleasureable. He solicits therefore a means of effectively combatting this priapism.

An analogous case was shown upon the 6<sup>th</sup> of April 1889. A tall English youth aged 19, asked to be cured of a priapism with which he had been attacked about six months previously, when he first knew a woman. Addicted to masturbation ever since the age of 14 or 15, he had resolved of his own accord to cure himself of it by entering the houses of ill fame in his own country but far from allaying his sexual needs coition only excited them the more. During the three months that he had been at Paris for his studies the priapism has increased, he cannot practise coition without being led irresistibly to repeat it again, in spite of the disgust with which prostitution inspires him. He does not dare any more to satisfy his pressing wants, and thus finds himself threatened contrary to his wishes with a return to his fatal habit.

"An American student, affected with neurosis, was able to remain an absolute virgin until his 23<sup>d</sup> year, although he is tall and strong. He was then seized with priapism, and an examination revealed several physical anomalies: incomplete phimosis through a contraction of the prepuce confining the gland, when it is raised with a marked inflection of the penis to the right when in erection. Testicles pendent. He had had ever since the age of 12, nocturnal pollutions returning regularly every third week until his 20<sup>th</sup> year. They gradually increased in



number, to every tenth day at first, then to two or three times a week. He thus remained absolutely a virgin by reason of his hereditary neuropathic constitution.

Having left his studies to come to the Exhibition, he was taken with persistent and insupportable erections a few days after his arrival. The shapeless and tumescent state of his penis did not allow him to have connection without danger."

"One of the best of our colleagues, who became a doctor after being a seminarist, was thus a victim to his faith and to his chastity. In spite of his gigantic height, he lived a single life in absolute continency, and was cruelly tormented with insomnia repeated every night, and by violent erections. His nervous temperament was so over-excited after an attack of cholera, in 1849, that his existence was one long martyrdom until the end of his life, in 1875, at the age of 55. Neuralgic pains, augmented by the privations of the siege of Paris, kept him for twenty years in a state of surexcitation and suffering unequalled save by his Christian resignation and patience."

Garnier

Priapism being the type of the anomalies of erection is often produced by convulsive affections, such as hysteria, epilepsy, and tetanus. We know that rabies produces priapism by an effect analogous to that of cantharides. It is also observed in leucocythaemia and anaemia without any appreciable cause. Peabody has observed an example of it in a coachman aged 28.

"It suddenly supervened, without any appreciable cause but a serious chill, in a sailor aged 55, the father of twelve children. And as a proof that it was a question of an irritation of the medulla or of its membranes, all the anodynes and sedatives, internal and external, were of no avail, in spite of his remaining in bed." (*The Lancet*. May 1887.)

“ A later case, observed in the United States, shows still better all the gravity of it in a man aged 53 After painful preoccupations he fell into a state of extreme prostration, in Sept 1883 He was then seized with erotic dreams and seminal losses, and frequent erections occurred during the day

He took a voyage in order to allay it, then he gave up his business to nurse himself In Jan 1886 Professor Charcot was consulted Douches with strychnine and arsenic, were prescribed and produced a momentary amelioration

After trying every possible treatment, and despairing of his cure he returned to the United States in June 1887 D Burchard observed on his arrival an advanced state of emaciation, without any cerebral or medullary affection There was no disease of the genito-urinary organs The painful crises of erection then took place from three to twenty times a day and often lasted for several hours

Ice was applied to the vertebral column at the commencement of the attacks, with sub cutaneous injections of morphine and atropine, if the crisis was not arrested, inhalations of chloroform Rest in bed, milk and peptone against dyspepsia

In the interval between the attacks alternative applications of very hot and very cold water upon the vertebral column hot irons repeatedly Ergotine and strychnine internally

A fortnight later he only had eleven to twelve crises of erection, much less painful, in the twenty four hours Soon a day passed without a paroxysm, and the hydro pathy was after that replaced by continued electric currents In three months the cure was complete Such a success requires no comment

Garnier therefore is right in showing the differences

which exist between essential priapism produced by a disease of the medulla, most frequently entailing impotence, and that which results from venereal excesses and abuses, or from consecutive lesions. The latter usually involves only sexual anomalies through excess, disappearing as soon as the cause of it is stopped.

Let us finish what refers to priapism by a last very curious observation taken from Pouillet. A sufferer from aspermatorrhæa, before his disease, was one day having connection on a bench in a public promenade. The spermatic ejaculation was near, when all at once a keeper came up. Fear and shame lending him wings, our young man took to flight, generously leaving his too-yielding companion to the hands of authority. When he arrived home he found that his penis was turgid and erect; he sprinkled it with cold water and wrapped it round with compresses, but the erection continued. Affected with a painful dysury four or five hours after his adventure, he tried to pollute himself without success. He repeated his attempt a dozen times with the same want of success. He then repaired to a bathing establishment, and, there, he laid himself in a bath and tortured his penis for the space of an hour; at length the seminal evacuation took place and the priapism ceased, but from fear of seeing it appear again the patient continued to pollute himself several times a day, and did it so well that, three years afterwards, a spermatorrhæa was the result of his habitual manipulations.

**Satyriasis.** Satyriasis, from whatever cause it proceeds, is characterized by erotic delirium, continual erections, and insatiable desires, together with a spermatic possibility of satisfying them, without however the seminal emission preventing their recurrence.

According to Moreau (of Tours) and Krafft Ebing the

Satyriasis of the man has for a counterpart the Nymphomania of the woman

Satyriasis is for men what Nymphomania is for women, and the causes of it are all those which we have enumerated principally continence onanism, and the abuse of aphrodisiacs Satyriasis just like nymphomania displays numerous different degrees, which sometimes render its diagnosis difficult

“ From the mere surexcitation of the genital organs, the disease may extend to the most complete delirium with that irresistible impulse which dominates the will, destroys almost all the other faculties, and one of the most ordinary consequences of which is rape not the rape of young girls or women, but the so to say unconscious rape the sufferer from satyriasis meets a woman whom he does not know in the fields or on the road Let this woman be old or young, ugly or beautiful attractive or without any elegance it matters little to him, it is a woman when he sees her he is no longer master of himself, his senses appeal to him invincibly, he throws himself upon the unhappy creature, kills her if she resists, and consummates his crime on the still warm corpse (1)

Satyriasis is announced by frequent erections, sponta-

(1) We can very well judge of the effects of satyriasis by what we observe in the great ape when he perceives a female We know what fury animates him then and what happens to the wives of the American savages Bayard *de l'Uteromanie* (Thèse de Paris 1836) A Traveller and Student of Anthropology to whom I submitted this remark writes me as follows — American Savages ?!!! Hardly I know both North and South America fairly well This must mean Africa I should say to the wives of the African negroes of the Gaboon districts As a matter of fact there are no Apes in the Americas only monkeys The ape is an old world beast I have little doubt both Apes and Monkeys would try especially Drils Mandrils and Chacmas but all would be much more ready to do it in a State of captivity than wild

neous or provoked by the sight of women, who appear to be surrounded with a luminous halo. The imagination is possessed by lascivious images, and by an irresistible impulse to the pleasures of the senses. Erotic dreams disturb the slumber, which is interrupted by numerous pollutions. Soon a delirium breaks out, sometimes quiet sometimes furious, accompanied by violent desires to satisfy them all means are good, all objects are indifferent.

The other senses do not remain inactive, but participate in the general disorder the sensibility acquires a singular development sometimes the most voluptuous hallucinations charm the sight, sometimes the slightest brightness makes a painful impression upon the retina. the least sound grates upon the ear, or it is filled with harmonious strains.

The genital organs have such sensibility, that the slightest brightness excites convulsive movements and causes the emission of the seminal liquid.

Then the symptoms rapidly increase in intensity.

The sufferers are thirsty, and vomit, according to Arétée, a large amount of a pituitous matter similar to that which is upon the lips of the he-goats at the moment when they rush upon their females *Siti laborant, pituitam largius evoment quam labris spuma, quomadmodum hircis in libidinem ruentibus, insidet, quin etiam haud absimilis odor est.*

The face is red and animated, the eyes are projecting, the foaming mouth and the physiognomy show an expression similar to that of animals in a state of rut, in these paroxysms, the sufferer carried away by the transports of his desires, springs upon the woman whom he may chance to meet, without regard for her age or appearance they have been known to repeat the venereal act more than forty times in a night without being satiated

To these paroxysms, the duration of which cannot be

fixed succeeds a veritable period of collapse during which the reason resumes its sway the patient is sad, melancholy, and ashamed of his excesses and it is not uncommon to see him seek in a voluntary death an end to the physical and moral tortures to which he is the prey

The continuity of the delirium, the violence of the fits of passion, the incoercible fury of the desire, characterize the disease when it has arrived at its final period The genital parts inflamed by the persistent nature of the priapism are attacked with gangrene, and death almost always terminates the disease when it has reached this stage

On other occasions the priapism coming to an end, the delirium becomes less violent, and disappears together with the concomitant symptoms, and there remains only a general fatigue and a great exhaustion of the organism which may be re-established by appropriate means A cure has taken place —(Moreau *Les Aberrations du sens génésique*)

This picture of Moreau's may appear to be a little overcharged Krafft Ebing estimates it as follows « Moreau is of opinion that these conditions are of a class apart he is certainly wrong in approving of this theory The complexity of the sexual symptoms is always only a partial phenomenon of a psychosis (mania, frenzy, hallucinations) — (Krafft Ebing)

**Causes of Satyriasis** Satyriasis is rare Cases of nymphomania are more frequently observed

The causes of satyriasis are very clearly indicated by Krafft Ebing

‘ Abstinence combined with a continual stimulation of the sexual sphere by psychical and peripherical irritation (*pruritus pudendi*, oxyures) may provoke these conditions, but in all probability only in blemished individuals

The assertion that it may also be produced as a result of poisoning by cantharides, appears to be based on a confusion with priapism. The pleasureable sensation which is manifested at the commencement of *priapism through poisoning by cantharides*, is soon changed into a contrary sensation. Satyriasis and nymphomania are acute psycho-sexual morbid conditions.

Among this category of patients must be classed the men who, for the most part after the abuse of Venus, especially through masturbation, suffer from sexual neurasthenia but have at the same time a very developed sexual *libido*. Their imagination is overheated, the same as in the acute cases, their mind is filled with improper images, so that even the most sublime things are defiled by cynical scenes and images.

The thoughts and ideas of these persons aim only at the sexual sphere, and, as their flesh is weak, they reach, aided by their imagination, the greatest sexual perversities."

Professor Thoinot says that the history of satyriasis cannot as yet be represented with clearness. "The chaos appears to me to be as yet almost impenetrable. Under the same heading authors group together the most dissimilar facts. We see there cases of acute priapism produced by cantharides. We find labelled as satyriasis the well-known cases of Sadism of Galles de Retz and the assassin Leger, we notice cases of so-called *sexual caducity*, cases of epileptic satyriasis, etc. .. In short, light has yet to be shed upon this *caput mortuum* of genital pathology. There is no doubt, in my opinion, that degeneracy does not count in the causes of satyriasis, and a fine observation of extraordinary exaltation of the genital sense in a child 9 years of age appears to me singularly suggestive on this point. But I do not wish to venture for the moment upon this as yet un-

stable ground " — (D Thoinot *Attentats aux Mœurs* )

Let us simply give some observations which appear to us to be interesting, and we shall recognize the justice of Professor Thoinot's observation

**Various Observations on Satyriasis** On July 7<sup>th</sup>, 1894, in the afternoon, Clemens, an engineer, who was proceeding to Vienna from Trieste on business, left the train at the station of Bruck, and, crossing the town came into the commune of Saint Ruprecht, situated near Bruck, where he attempted a rape on a woman aged 70, who was alone in the house. He was caught by the inhabitants of the village, and arrested by the local authorities. When questioned, he declared that he was looking for the posting house in order to satiate his overexcited sexual instinct upon a dog. He frequently suffered from similar attacks of surexcitation.

He did not deny his act but he excused it through his disease. The heat, the shaking of the carriage, and anxiety regarding his family, which he wished to rejoin, had completely troubled his senses and made him ill. He showed neither shame nor repentance. His attitude was frank, he had a calm air, his eyes were red and shining, his head hot, his tongue white, his pulse full, soft, and beating more than 100 pulsations, his fingers slightly trembling.

The accused's statements were precise but hasty. His looks were roving, with a manifest expression of lubricity. The medico-legalist who was summoned, was struck with his pathological state, as though the accused were at the beginning of alcoholic delirium.

Clemens age is 45. He is married and the father of a child. The conditions of health of his parents and other members of his family was unknown to him. In his childhood, he was weak and neuropathic. At the age of 5 he



had a lesion of the head owing to a blow from a hoe. He still bears on the bone of the right occiput and on the right frontal bone, a cicatrix one inch long and half-an-inch wide. The bone is a little sunk. The skin which covers it is adherent to the bone.

Pressure upon this spot causes a pain which radiates thence into the lower branch of the trigeminus. Pains too are often produced spontaneously. In his youth he frequently had syncope, and, before the age of puberty, rheumatic pneumonia and inflammation of the intestines. Since the age of seven, he felt a strange sympathy for men and notably for a colonel. At the sight of this man, he felt as though a dagger struck him in the heart, he kissed the ground on which the colonel had placed his foot. At the age of ten, he fell in love with a deputy of the Reichstag. Later still, he grew hot after men, but this affection was purely platonic. Early in his fourteenth year he masturbated himself. At the age of 17, he had his first intercourse with women. With the habit of normal coition disappeared the former phenomena of sexual inversion. In his youth he was in a peculiar state of acute psychopathy, which he himself designated as a « kind of clairvoyance ». From the age of 15, he suffered from hemorrhoids with symptoms of *plethora abdominalis*. After the abundant hemorrhoidal hemorrhage which he had every three or four weeks, he felt better. Besides he was always a prey to a painful sexual excitation which he allayed sometimes by onanism, sometimes by coition. Every woman that he met excited him. Even when he was among the women of his own family, he felt urged to make immoral proposals to them. Sometimes he succeeded in overcoming his instincts, at other times he was irresistibly impelled to immoral acts. When, in such cases, he was put apart, he was satisfied, for, he said to himself, "I am in need of such a correction

and of this support against these too-powerful desires which trouble me No periodicity could be observed in his sexual excitations

Until 1861, he indulged in excesses in *Venere* and got several blennorrhoeas and chancres

In 1861, he married He felt himself sexually satisfied, but became troublesome to his wife owing to his excessive requirements In 1864, he had, at the hospital an attack of monomania, he fell ill again the same year and was taken to the G Asylum, where he remained confined until 1867

In the Asylum he suffered from returns of his maniacal state, with great sexual excitations He assigns as the cause of his disease, at this period, an intestinal catarrh and many vexations

Later on he recovered his health He was quite well but suffered much from the excess of his sexual requirements As soon as he was away from his wife his desire became so violent that it was all the same for him to satisfy it with human beings or with animals During summer-time especially, these promptings became excessive, at the same time an afflux of blood to the intestines took place Clemens, who has reminiscences of medical works which he has read, is of opinion that in his case the ganglionic system dominates the cerebral system

In the month of October 1893 his occupations obliged him to live apart from his wife Until Easterday he had no sexual intercourse, except that he masturbated himself now and again Beginning from this time, he made use of women and dogs From June 15<sup>th</sup> till July 7<sup>th</sup> he had no occasion to satisfy his sexual want He experienced a nervous agitation and felt fatigued, it seemed to him that he was growing mad The violent desire to see his wife again, who lived at Vienna, caused him to leave his situation for

a while. He took leave. The heat of the journey and the shaking of the train had completely disordered him, he could no longer endure his state of genital surexcitation, complicated with a strong afflux of blood to his intestines. He was seized with dizziness. Then, when he reached Bruck, he left the carriage. He was, he said, quite upset, did not know where he was going, and at one time the idea came to him to throw himself into the water. He had as it were a fog before his eyes.

*Mulierem tunc adspexit, penem nudavit, feminamque amplectans conatus est.* The woman however cried for help, and it was thus that he was arrested.

After the attempt, the clear knowledge of his act suddenly came to him. He confessed it frankly, remembered all its details, but he maintains that his action had something morbid about it. It was stronger than he.

Clemens still suffered sometimes from head-ache and congestions; he was at times very agitated and restless and slept badly. His intellectual functions are not disordered, but he is naturally a strange man, of a soft character and wanting in energy. The expression of his face has something of the wild-beast about it, and bears a stamp of lubricity and oddity. He suffers from hemorrhoids. The genital parts display nothing abnormal. The skull is, in its frontal part, narrow and a little retreating. The body is strong and well-shaped. Except for a diarrhoea, no trouble of the vegetative functions has been remarked in him. "

The sexual hyperaesthesia may be continuous with exacerbations, or be intermittent, or even periodical. In the latter case, it is a peculiar cerebral neurosis (see the special Pathology) or a manifestation of a state of general psychological excitation (episodical mania in the *dementia paralytica senilis*, etc.).

A remarkable case of intermittent satyriasis has been

published by Lentz in the *Bulletin de la Société de Médecine légale de Belgique* No 21

" For three years the farmer D , aged 35, married and enjoying general esteem had attacks of sexual excitation which became more and more frequent and more violent. For a year past, these attacks had grown aggravated and become crises of satyriasis. Nothing could be observed from the hereditary point of view, any more than from the organic

D , tempore, quum libidinibus valde efficeretur, decem vel quindecim cohabitationes per 24 horas exegit, neque tamen cupiditates suas satiavit

Gradually a state of generalised erethismus was developed in him, with an irascibility extending to pathological attacks of rage, at the same time an inclination to abuse the use of alcohol shewed itself. These attacks of satyriasis were so violent that the patient had no clear ideas, and urged by his blind instinct, let himself proceed to lascivious acts. *Qua de causa factum est ut uxorem suam alienis viris immovero animalibus ad coeundum tradit, cum ipso filiabus praesentibus concubitem exsequi jussisset, propterea quod haec facta majorem ipsi voluptatem afferent*. He did not remember any thing of the matters which occurred at the period of these crises and his extreme excitation could lead him to frenzy. D confessed that there were moments when he was no longer master of himself, if he had remained without satisfaction he would have been constrained to attack the first woman he came across. This state of sexual surexcitation disappeared all at once after each violent moral emotion.

" An instance is mentioned of a soldier who was rendered furious by his erotic temperament and who was hung at Montpellier for the crime of rape. This man was seized with satyriacal fury at the sight of a girl whom he

met in the country Impelled by genital violence, he threw himself upon her without troubling himself about the peasants who surrounded him and beat him with sticks, without attending to the crowd which showered blows upon him and tried to drag his victim away from him, the soldier, with eyes aflame and his features in convulsions, satisfied his passion like a furious madman. ”

Professor Bordin supplies an observation upon three young satiriacs in whom the genital predominance was revealed at an early age, and was announced by an excessive development of those organs and a very precocious puberty. These little satyrs, aged from 11 to 13, short, thickset, stupid and almost idiots, lived under the active, incessant influence of the genital instinct, and had no other thought but that of satisfying the ardours which they felt

One of these satyriacs died from seminal losses before he reached his 16<sup>th</sup> year The two others, affected with erotic madness with transports of fury, were bound, garotred and shut up in a Lunatic Asylum.” (Debay, *l'Homme et la Femme* Paris, 1881 )

“ Marc came across, in an Asylum, a man between 30 and 40, small and deformed, with a high colour, of a sharp and and irritable temperament, having fine teeth and hair inclined to red, who lost his reason after great excesses of debauchery He indulged in acts of disgusting cynicism, speaking only of his past and future prowess in the most filthy terms; he declared that he had obtained the favours of some of the women of the highest position in Paris, and delighted in describing the most lascivious scenes which he declared had passed between him and the most celebrated actresses of our theatres, several of whom nevertheless were well-known for their discreet behaviour.

Although his shape is twisted, he believed that he was loaded with all the gifts of fortune, that no woman could

resist him, and as he had resolved to possess his sister, because she had the finest leg he had ever seen, he reckoned upon obtaining a dispensation from the Pope, which would allow him to consummate the incest

The police had been obliged to confine him provisionally in an Asylum and to leave him there at the disposition of his family, owing to the scandal which his conduct had occasioned in the promenades and other public places

\* A man had fulfilled his public functions with credit until his 50<sup>th</sup> year. Then an immoderate ardour for venereal pleasures was excited in him. His looks are bright and animated, he frequents the haunts of debauchery, indulges in every excess and returns afterwards to the society of his friends to depict to them the charms of pure and spotless love. His ill-conduct increases by degrees, and it is necessary to keep him confined. Solitude excites his passionate imagination. He paints in fiery touches the pleasures which he has tasted with those whom he calls celestial beauties. he is in an ecstasy when he speaks of their graces and their virtues. he wishes to rear a temple to Love, and believes that he himself is raised to the rank of the gods. these were the preludes to a delirious frenzy — Dr Paul Moreau, *De la Folie*

**Nymphomania** Nymphomania (or *uteromania*, *uterine frenzy*, *andromania*) is an affection exclusively confined to the woman defined by Moreau (of Tours) as a morbid excitation of the organs of generation. venereal desires of such violence that they engender a mental disorder which may run through all the stages which separate simple aberration of mind from the most furious delirium constitute its pathognomical characteristics

Nymphomania according to L. Thoinot, is not a mor-

bid entity, it is a syndrome like the majority of sexual perversions. According to Dubut de Laforet, by going back to the ancestors a sexual perversion is always found.

“The offspring of an old gentleman who married late in life, was affected with erotomania, and succumbed in a crisis of general paralysis Marguerite d’E.. had developed the germs of the evil through carnal excesses as a child, she was inflamed by the violence of her wants, as a young girl she gave herself up to onanism. Nevertheless, thanks to the watchful care of a maniacal but virtuous and tender mother, she remained a virgin until her marriage, when she was married, she deceived her husband, justifying the book of the Hindoos (the Manava Dharma Seesta) the fountain-head of all the psychologists, physiologists, pathologists and anthropologists. “the evil nature is taken from the father, or from the mother, or from both of them together, never can the origin be hidden ” (Dubut de Laforest *Pathologie Sociale* )

And, studying the well known nymphomaniacs, Prosper Lucas (*Héredite Naturelle*) finds that all are the offspring of parents subject to a sexual blemish.

Numerous physicians and authors have occupied themselves with nymphomania We shall content ourselves with giving, with Moreau, the description of the symptoms or phases of this curious affection · they are three in number.

**The three Phases of Nymphomania**, after Moreau (of Tours)

“In the first phase the woman instinctively resists the thoughts and desires which assail her. It is, in a word, the picture of the common, ordinary sexual desire, carried to a high degree. The woman who experiences the attacks of this unknown ardour, tries at first to repel them. The in

clination dominates her, but reason still holding its sway, she represses its outbursts and subdues its violence. Mistress of herself, aided and restrained by a feeling of modesty, strengthened by the assistance of morality and religion, her struggles are within and nothing so far causes her to suspect the imperious want which in mastering her. Nevertheless her restlessness or her agitation render her the object of particular attention. A change in her character is observed: she was formerly gay, open, unreserved, she becomes sad, dissembling and taciturn, in other circumstances the simplicity of her manner gives place to the pretensions and manœuvres of coquetry, in the presence of men her breathing grows more rapid, her pulse grows in force and vivacity and the expression of her countenance, her walk, her attitudes, her very conversation at length reveal all the fires which consume her.

In the second stage the symptoms are much more pronounced: her intellect and consequently her will are beset, sometimes even overcome and estranged. The memory may still contend against the storm, and the reason and judgment may be seen partly retaining their empire.

‘During this period,’ says Louyer Villermay, ‘the woman no longer feels the inward struggles. Freed from all restraint, she gives herself up without reserve to all the impetuosity of her senses, to all the ardour of her temperament, to the delirium of her imagination: she takes pleasure in the most lascivious ideas, in the most voluptuous conversation, and in reading the most obscene books, her desires are full of ardour and lasciviousness. *voluptates semper anhelant*. All that does not flatter her fatal inclination and her dominant passion, all that is not connected with venereal pleasures wearies, fatigues and irritates her. If the conversation upon such subjects dries up, she brings it back to them with effrontery, or when the talk passes



away to questions of general interest, she takes no part in it, and retires in order to conceal the turpitude of her thoughts and actions. At the sight of a man, all her being is agitated, her sensibility grows keener, her imagination rises, her countenance becomes animated, her cheeks grow red, her eyes are sparkling, a devouring fire is on the point of breaking out; her breast is agitated, her breathing is hurried and quick, violent palpitations then frequently occur, and general disorder and acceleration of the circulation, the most passionate expressions are upon her lips, she lavishes sighs, offers, the most tender looks, and lastly the most voluptuous attitudes, to induce the man who is the object of her desires to satisfy her lewd passion.

The flame no more is hid within her veins,  
For Venus wholly now her prey retains.

*Generally*, in proportion as nymphomaniacs seek for the society of men, they display an aversion to that of women, they frequently even maltreat them for no other reason than the identity of sex.

These symptoms ordinarily increase at each period of menstruation, and particularly in the presence of men. In this stage there is a perversion of the moral faculties, and a slight derangement of ideas - the imagination is more and more enthralled, the memory and the judgment are intact. "

Sandras (*Maladies nerveuses*) says that he has seen a young woman of good birth passing through all these stages; through a progressive nymphomania she had fallen successively to a dissolute life, and from thence to the rank of the prostitutes who abound in Paris. The unhappy creature eagerly walked the streets, and tried in this way, as she said, to cure herself. Within a few years she reached the very last stage of degradation! All this, at its commence-

ment was limited to ideas at first restrained, then satisfied by onanism, the reading of improper books and too free conversation had gradually revealed the malady which an expiring sense of modesty still concealed from indifferent eyes at length the evil had blazed out in all its violence even to the most obscene talk and gestures, even to the solicitation of every man, even to flight from the paternal abode to devote herself to the only calling which enabled her to satisfy the acts which she required. And all this without madness without hallucinations, without any apparent disorder of the intelligence, but without any moral restraint being able to arrest such a miserable impulse.

When it has reached its third period, this malady presents the most deplorable, the most distressing picture. The delirium takes possession of the unhappy creature, and according to Cabanis expression, 'nymphomania transforms the most timid girl into a Bacchante, and the most delicate modesty into a furious audacity which nothing equals not even the effrontery of prostitution. The physical constitution does not withstand the general nervous surexcitation, fever and the most profound marasmus come to complete the ruin of the shaken organism. "Every man whom the nymphomaniac meets becomes the object of her ardour she calls him and solicits him, if he hesitates she uses cunning and artifice to seduce him or to keep him near her. Are her prayers, her supplications her caresses of no avail? Is all the armament of glances and coquetry without power? she has recourse to menaces, and soon to them succeed acts of violence. *Scintillant oculi, mala mens, oratio blanda*. She pursues the man who refuses to yield to her passion throws herself upon him and beats him.

Her reason growing more and more disordered and the exaltation of her feelings being carried to a still higher

degree, man may not be the only object of her attacks, an anti-natural inclination has existed in some cases. Manget speaks of a young girl of good family and very virtuous, who, being a prey to this malady, *homines et canes ipsos ad congressum provocabat*.

All the features of the face are in disorder and agitation. The patient is often consumed by an intense thirst, her mouth is dry and burning, her breath is fetid, her thickened saliva forms a foam, she grinds her teeth and tries to bite every thing she comes across. Sometimes a most violent feeling of strangulation has been observed, and a most characteristic horror of water or liquids.

The woman is then insensible to the weather, to cold or pain - neglecting the care of her person, she abandons herself to a repulsive uncleanness, she indulges in a thousand unreasonable actions the imagination offers nothing but lewd images and painful dreams. This disorder has its origin in the uterine organs, but either in consequence of its natural progress, or through the general exaltation, the local disorder makes sensible progress; the clitoris often attains an enormous size, especially with women who have yielded to onanism, the labia majora and the vagina swell and sometimes become excoriated. a running more or less thick and fetid lubricates all these parts, and adds to the inflammation which spreads to a considerable distance. In certain cases, no apparent disorder exists towards the vulva, but sensibility or irritability is so much developed there, that the slightest touch, the mere friction of the garments or the slightest movement, is sufficient to excite a shivering, a general state of spasm or of intolerable pain. Often, following upon the strongest attacks of uteromania, just as after the most violent fits of delirium, a collapse follows, a prostration of the strength, against which too much care cannot be exercised

A small, wretched pulse, frequent hiccoughs, a sardonic laugh, a cold general sweat announce the death which then most frequently comes to put an end to so many ills. But often too the malady passes to the chronic state and displays periodical exacerbations the paroxysms of which do not cease except to give place to an absolute prostration.

**Thoinot's Classification** Moreau is content with including under this description the different cases of nymphomania. This is the fault which Thoinot (in his *Attentats aux Mœurs*) finds with him and he proposes a more rational classification. He begins by setting aside that which was formerly called nymphomania from a genital cause, brought about by the affections of the woman's genital region, by parasites (oxyures) of the rectum and the vulva, a kind of false nymphomania, which a little attention is sufficient to cure radically.

True nymphomania, he says is that which Foville calls cerebral nymphomania — in order to make it clear that the seat of the affection is in the brain. We meet with this true nymphomania under various circumstances.

1<sup>st</sup> In the first place as it has been for long regarded, the *episodical symptom of a psychosis* general paralysis periodical madness at the phase of excitation etc. A very interesting type of this episodical nymphomania of the psychoses, is *senile nymphomania* that which occurs in the old woman with senile dementia more or less clearly characterized.

2<sup>d</sup> Another variety of nymphomania is the following the subject is suddenly seized with an attack of nymphomania of extreme violence, accompanied by intense delirium which in a few days leads to death.

3<sup>rd</sup> Degenerate Nymphomania supplies a third group. Its characteristics are the following. Precocious appearance

of aberration, and its persistence throughout the subject's whole life the anomaly is not an episode of the genital life of the subject, but it is her genital life itself.

Character of impulsive obsession in the morbid manifestation, full conscience, hereditary blemishes, and personal marks of degeneracy in the subject

The nymphomania of degenerates is weak, in a word we may say that weakness is the type of all the perversions of the genital sense, which are themselves marks of mental degeneracy.

Thoinot again distinguishes two classes in the nymphomania of the degenerate, *aggravated* or *greater nymphomania*, and on the other hand *attenuated* or *lesser nymphomania*.

The latter is distinguished from the former, in that the patient, though having desires as keen as those of the greater nymphomania, can overcome them and knows how to satisfy herself beyond the permitted intercourse which only beguiles her needs for an instant by the pleasure which she receives either with or without the aid of solitary onanism, by the sight or the ideal evocation of the man

**Examples of different cases of Nymphomania.** Bearing in mind the reserve imposed by Thoinot's observations we proceed to give numerous examples of the different cases of nymphomania

“ A little girl not yet three years old, when lying on the ground or leaning forcibly against a piece of furniture, agitated her body with singular violence Her parents at first thought that this action was merely play , but soon observing with grief that it resulted from a kind of libertinism, they endeavoured carefully to correct such an unfortunate habit, having recourse sometimes to caresses and prayers, sometimes to menaces and her feelings of shame, and finally to corrections , they appeared to have no success.

The child grew up and the evil increased to such a degree that at table, in society, at church at the sight of an agreeable object she indulged in every possible way in her manœuvres which were followed by a considerable ejaculation. When anyone asked regarding the period at which she sought to reach her paroxysm, she was silent or confessed that she felt an extreme pleasure. At the moment of her crises she seemed to have almost entirely lost her sight and hearing. Owing to her parents' threats and reprimands, she abstained from indulging in her fatal inclination when in their presence but nevertheless she sought for solitude in order to satisfy it. Often she was found weakened and depressed. — Moreau (de Tours)

This young girl married, and becoming pregnant was free from her disorder. She died in giving birth to a child when she was 15 years old.

' A young girl of marriageable age and of uncommon beauty, belonging to a family of high rank, made use of heating foods, and passed her life in indolence. She soon became enamoured of a young man of low extraction, and lost her sleep because her relatives were opposed to a marriage of which she dreamt in secret. A little later all the signs of nymphomania showed themselves. Her conversation and songs were cynical, her gestures lascivious and disgusting. The efforts which were made to restrain her excited a redoubled exaltation. At every instant she tried to escape quite naked. The efforts of several vigorous men, the bonds which they used to restrain her and to prevent her from precipitating herself upon the individuals of the other sex whom she provoked to the venereal act, succeeded with difficulty in keeping her fixed in her bed. Her nights were passed in insomnia, her face burning and highly coloured, her eye gleaming, her talk erotic, her breath fetid, her tongue dry, her pulse accelerated, and her body

weakened by fatigue. An acrid and, so to say, corrosive liquid escaped from her sexual organs. Death at the end of a short time terminated this distressing scene. It is true that she had been bled thirty times in ten days!

When her body was opened, it was found that her ovaries were of considerable dimensions, spread with vesicles as large as peas, the dimensions of her clitoris were also extraordinary

Mademoiselle O... was a young girl, an only daughter, aged 15, belonging to wealthy parents who had neglected to instruct her and to procure for her the benefits of a good education. When she had spent several years at school, they thought that their object was gained, and thought only of getting her married, they married her, in fact, before she was sixteen years old, to a young banker of the town. The husband was greatly beloved throughout the district, his wife was a child who was about to finish growing up and complete her education under his virtuous direction. Such at least were the wishes and prognostications of the inhabitants. Nothing, in fact, contradicted them during the first six months of this union, but hardly had the half year passed away, before terrible things were known. This child of sixteen had sought for and obtained the embraces of her husband's clerks. It was not one clerk that she loved, it was three, it was not the clerks who had seduced her, it was she who had seduced the clerks, and in her shameless transports she takes no precaution against the publicity of her debauchery. She speaks familiarly to the clerks in the presence of the servants; she lets them surprise her kissing them, and in this critical situation she bursts out laughing and feels no embarrassment. She was overheard one day saying to one of these young men. "My husband, who will be at business until half-past eight, takes me at 9 o'clock this evening to a ball at the

Prefecture I shall wait for you fully dressed at half past seven, I wish you to pay court to me in that costume The unhappy woman did not become *enceinte* until a little less than a year after her marriage so that it was not known if the child which she brought into the world was her husband's or sprung from her criminal amours The same uncertainty hangs over those which came later, for she continued her life of debauchery for a long time ' Prêlat, *Folie lucide*

" A young woman, belonging to an honourable family, felt and at first knew, how to repress voluptuous desires then she satisfied them for a while by onanism Conversation of an extraordinary freedom then revealed the dispositions which a remnant of modesty still kept hid and finally her provocative gestures and her lascivious talk led to attacks of disorder her flight from the paternal roof, and her inscription on the registers of the police Fallen to the rank of the most abject creatures she hardly succeeded, in her infamous and very active industry in allaying the flames of her ravenous lewdness And all this took place without any apparent disorder of her intelligence without any hallucination, without any madness but without any moral restraint being able to arrest such a miserable impulse In a few years she fell to the very last stage of degradation

' A lady aged 49, of a sanguine and particularly nervous temperament experienced from the most tender age the most lively sensations, and an extraordinary inclination for venereal pleasures to which her will was always a stranger At eight years of age, the accoupling of animals irritated her and led her irresistibly to illicit touches having her menses at eleven years of age, from her thirteenth year she had acquired her full development with puberty the same dispositions were maintained, but without



any sensible increase of them, at seventeen, she married a man 36 years of age, vigorous, and much inclined to the pleasures of hymen. She received his embraces several times following without being satisfied, *lassa, sed non satiat*a often too, after three connections, she abandoned herself to Lesbian habits in order to satiate her desires. A statue, a picture, the sight of a man, the simplest contact, a word, was sufficient to excite violent desires at night, in her dreams, her imagination retraced to her lascivious pictures, which acted upon her senses with surprising force. Nevertheless, in society, this lady imposed upon herself such reserve that nothing transpired regarding those dispositions which grieved her bitterly.

When she was forty, she gave birth to her eighth child; seven years after she ceased to have her menses and was a widow when she was 48. Two months of absolute continence had barely elapsed when she again felt the most violent desires, a lively heat and a continual spasm about her genital organs. Night was the period of the greatest agitation, while she was wakeful the most lewd thoughts, and when she was asleep the most erotic dreams possessed her mind. Overcome by the power of her inclinations, she gave way two or three times, but she received from these touches only an ephemeral relief. This lady, in whom the temperament alone entailed disorder, did not utter, even during these attacks, any unbecoming word, so that her conversation displayed a perfect contrast with the condition her senses, and consequently of her imagination. She was, it is true, singularly restrained by the presence of two young ladies, who had never known or even suspected their mother's veritable disease (1) "

We will draw attention to the early age at which this

(1) Louyer-Villerimay, *loc cit*

lady's malady began. If we had thought of giving a complete sketch of this observation, we might have divided it into three parts and denominated the chapters infantile, adolescent and adult but it would have been a fault to divide up such a remarkable fact, which moreover, allows us to follow the development and the ever-increasing progress of this horrible malady.

"A young lady of a bilioso sanguine temperament was a long time the prey to the disappointment of an unfortunate attachment. Avoiding with equal care the society of men and that of her companions, she was sad and thoughtful. At the age of 30, she became more gloomy and subject to hysterical symptoms, and did not go out except to go to the church, the priest of which, advanced in age and of good reputation formed all her society. A short time after she felt an itching over all her body, but more pronounced on her face which had been for a long time covered with pustules.

Soon she lost her appetite, and felt a great physical as well as moral revolution, her eyes were more brilliant than ordinarily. Hitherto she had expressed herself sensibly and in well chosen terms, but one holiday she went very early to the pastor's, and attracted notice by her indecent acts and by her shameful and lascivious talk. The priest took her back to her parents who wished to give her a woman-keeper, but she refused it saying that she had always detested persons of her own sex. At mid day, she was found with her face to the ground, and the hair on her head standing on end.

Later on, she sat herself in a chair, her face was red, her eyes sparkling, the pulse was beating unequally and with rapidity the hypogastrium was slightly swollen and painful. In reply to questions which were addressed to her she threw into the assistant's face a glass of lemonade.

Half an hour afterwards, she uttered a loud cry, then recited the third strophe of the ode to Priapus. "In my presence », says Dr Jauzion, from whom we borrow this observation, « she threw herself upon her keeper, entreating him in the most expressive terms to satisfy at once the ardour which was consuming her, and threatening, in case he refused, to take his life. »

In the meanwhile the pastor was using all his efforts to calm her, but she bounded out of her bed, as naked as a Bacchante, and prayed him, in a fearful voice, to satisfy her senses, declaring that she had always loved priests in preference to all others.

Then they tied her hands and feet, and the priest prepared to exorcise her. Soon she grew drowsy and her genital parts were sprinkled with a disinfecting liquid. This calm was attributed to exorcism. The pulse became less rapid and the hypogastrium less strained · her highly coloured face was covered with an abundant sweat. The patient appeared to be insensible; thirteen leeches were applied to her vulva, then she was plunged, for two hours, into an almost cold bath.

During the night, she was tolerably quiet, but she muttered continually, the pulse was then weak, and the breathing difficult, she frequently carried her hand to her face; the clitoris was in erection.

The next morning, all at once, there came to her an unbridled and furious desire for venereal pleasures; at the same time she left her bed, threw off her chemise, came down stairs and threw herself into the arms of a carpenter, she invited him to amorous combats, assuring him that he would never again find such a beautiful woman. She was tied down by main force, and she was kept in sight by four very vigorous servants. The priest again attempted to drive the demons away by his prayers and

canticles but during nearly seven hours she did not cease uttering the most indecent talk. Beside the symptoms of the previous attack, it was noticed that the œsophagus was closed by a spasmodic contraction. Before the pastor, her parents, and the doctors she recited the two first strophes of the ode to Priapus. This paroxysm lasted nine hours, an absolute prostration soon succeeded to it, the pulse became very low, hiccoughs and a spasmodic laugh occurred. In the middle of a cold sweat, this unfortunate woman expired (1)

Nymphomania displays itself again after the cessation of the particular existence of the uterus. widows in the greater number of cases, grandmothers, those Messalinas of 70 or 80 years of age, with decrepit attractions are the affliction of their families whose ruin they sometimes cause by their insensate extravagances.

— A lady, aged 70 was possessed by the most disgusting uterine fury. Staid and modest till the age of 66, she acquired all at once the most terrible lewdness. The offer of her fortune was one of the least ridiculous means of seduction which she employed. The most obscene practices were familiar to her to appease the ferocity of her desires (2)

L. was admitted into the Salpêtrière, under the care of D. Moreau (of Tours) in 1875. She is a woman aged 79, gay, lively and possessing a good fortune. Since the first days of her arrival, we have observed that she ran after the men to such a degree that it was necessary to keep her shut up when the workmen were called into the inner part of the house to do anything there. The conversations which she carried on in our presence were impressed with

(1) Louyer Villermay *loc cit*

(2) Belmer *De la Nymphomanie* Thèse de Paris 1818

the most profound erotic delirium . protestations of love, propositions of every kind, obscene words, illicit touches which we had the greatest difficulty to repress, such were the characteristic features of this delirium

We had been informed by her children that it was necessary to watch her very closely, for she attacked all the men she met, and uttered language to them which breathed the most shameless libertinism The refusals, the jests which she had to undergo, the insults , nothing rebuffed her. One day she eluded the watchfulness of her children, and escaped. She was found wandering in the streets and brought to the Asylum.

There was no heredity known of

She died of cerebral hemorrhage, a year after her admission to the hospital.

Louyer-Villermay was acquainted with a very respectable lady, more than eighty years of age, who frequently eluded the watchfulness of the persons who surrounded her, in order to indulge in reprehensible manœuvres

Hysteria may come to complicate nymphomania and mingle its own symptoms with those of this neurosis, in the same way as hysteria blends with epilepsy to give it that well-known form which has been so well studied for some years past by modern authors, and upon which M. Moreau (of Tours) has been one of the first to throw a light and describe the symptoms.

The observation which we have quoted above is a striking instance of this Helwich (1) has preserved for us the history of a woman who, separated from her husband for eight years, was subject to attacks of hysteria and uterine fury

But the most remarkable instance of hystero-nympho-

(1) *Ephémérides des curieux de la nature.*

mania which we know of was observed by Chambon and may be cited as a type of this affection

A woman, aged 40, was for a long time subject to attacks of very pronounced hysteria, when the symptoms were prolonged for several hours, an erotic delirium supervened during which she retained sufficient mastery over herself to prevent anything which might betray her state of mind from escaping her in the presence of strangers when she was left to herself, she spoke boldly of her loves and desires and fell into violent convulsions *When the uterine fury declared itself, the hysterical symptoms such as suffocation, oppression of the chest strangulation and violent movements of the abdomen ceased immediately, to appear again as soon as the genital fury came to an end*

Another rather frequent complication which may be easily foreseen, knowing the reaction of the uterine affections in general upon the intellectual faculties, is melancholia with an inclination for suicide

‘ A lady, says Manget, “being barren, became subject to a nymphomania complicated by an inclination for suicide ’

“ A young lady born in easy circumstances and brought up in religious principles of the most rigid kind, became a nymphomaniac at the age of 16, and prostituted herself *gratis* Two years after, she put an end to her existence from despair ’

**Exclusive Nymphomaniac Love** All the preceding observations are extracted from the work of Moreau (of Tours) who is content with giving them by their order of age (children adults and old women) without attempting any classification such as that for which he justly finds fault with Thoinot The latter gives a new type of nymphomania less known, but very interesting This

is *exclusive nymphomaniac love*. This love applies only to a single individual. We consider it unnecessary to give any observations, so as not to prolong this chapter too much. We are satisfied with giving a case of imbecile nymphomania.

Let us end with a final observation on an imbecile nymphomaniac

**Observation regarding an imbecile Nymphomaniac.** "The girl C., aged fifteen and a half, and the man H... aged 52, are accused of outrages upon public decency.

The girl C... is a country-girl, belonging to a family of honest people in easy circumstances, and well thought of in their village. The girl is short, appears to be of a good constitution; her looks in repose have no expression; she answers usually in monosyllables. When she was visited in gaol by her counsel, he could not obtain any connected talk from her, only, when he spoke of the facts of the numerous outrages against public decency, and of the men with whom she had had intercourse, her eyes became brilliant, she looked him in the face, her looks were bright, and she seemed to take a pleasure in the condemnable acts with which he reproached her. The girl C. . bears on her left cheek and on her forehead several pustules which reveal a venereal disease.

The girl C. . offers a striking instance of *nymphomania* or *uteromania*. The facts, as revealed in the indictment and during the trial, are as follows

According to the investigations made by the gendarmes, the girl C. . is *excessively stupid*, almost an idiot, she hunts after young boys in the fields and on the roads; when she meets them, she strips herself naked in their presence, shews them her parts and invites them to come with her

and do *dirty tricks and beastlinesses*. Then she lays herself down in a ditch makes the youth mount on her, and satisfies her passion. The gendarmes mention twenty young boys who have been the *victims* of this young girl, others have resisted her and she has pursued them and flung stones at them. She complained much of H — her fellow-prisoner, because he had her too much and hurt her, and so she declares that she greatly prefers the young boys. At the trial, all these facts which were sworn to by the gendarmes were confirmed.

The witnesses have seen her *lifting up her clothes* so high that all her body, even her breasts could be seen — she could not see a man without showing him her c — H — pursued her across the fields having his parts naked himself, and showing them to her.

One day, the girl C — came across a road mender at work at his heap of stones, one yard away from the road there she proceeded to lift up her petticoats — the road-mender blamed her severely, but, as her sole reply, she parted her thighs and began to satisfy a natural want, and as the road-mender continued to scold her, the girl laid herself down with her belly on the ground — rubbed herself violently against it, saying ‘ *Ah! how I should like to* »

The girl C — has a venereal disease, and H — is likewise diseased. When the *juge d'instruction* asked her if H — had communicated this disease to her, she replied ‘ No — it was a young man whom I did not know who made the pimples come on my thighs »

Though he questioned her closely the magistrate could not obtain any information, and did not further prolong the examination, as being of no good. When questioned in court, she weeps and only partly confesses what she has done, and soon makes no further reply.



## CHAPTER IV

### GENITAL ABUSES (CONTINUED)

#### OF ONANISM GENERAL

Definition of Onanism of the Man by Pouillet — Forms and processes of Genital Pollution in Man

Classification by Garnier — Solitary Pollution — Pollution in Common — Observations on Pollution, Personal and in Common — Manual Pollution. — Rubbings and Compression of the Penis on or in any body — Instances of Pollution through Compression of the Penis — Thorough Rubbing of the Penis — Shape of the Penis revealing the mode employed for Masturbation — Pollution by the tickling of the gland with the ends of the fingers

Pollution by the introduction of the Penis into some Body, or by a Constrictory Band round the Penis

Observations on Pollution relating to these different ways.

Pollution by special movements of the Body, or by general Shock. — Observations on Pollution by Hanging

Pollution by the Introduction of Foreign Bodies into the Canal of the Urethra — Incomplete Pollution — Various Instances. — Pollution with manœuvres on the neighbouring Organs, principally the Scrotum and Rectum (The Postilion of Marseilles and the Commissary's Hat)

Posterior Pollution — This lies in the Domain of Pederasty. — Curious case of Posterior Pollution. — The Height of Ingratitude.

**Of Onanism in General.** The word Onanism comes from the name of Onan, a Biblical personage, who was the first masturbator.

The proper title should be genital pollution. Now this is as old as the world, and has always existed among the human race, and there are strong presumptions for believing that primitive men masturbated themselves, for want of women.

On the other hand it is averred that animals of the

male sex, when deprived of females and tortured by rut endeavour to procure the spermatie emission and that some of them succeed in it Lallemand quotes an elephant and a D Montique an entire horse Who has not seen, says Pouillet, dogs which are usually kept confined pollute themselves against the leg of a table, of a chair, or of a bed or even against the carpet

It has been noticed besides that the animals which mostly indulge in this abuse of themselves, are those whose conformation most nearly resembles that of the human form such as the bear and particularly the monkey and both of them make use of their paws

Why then should man, whose organization allows him every kind of movement and whose genital parts are so to speak, beneath his hand not act like the animals and supply by an abuse the place of coition when that is impossible?

Man is therefore fatally invited to masturbate himself But the causes which produce masturbation in him are complex, as we shall see further on We have just employed the word *masturbation*, although the hand is not the only means employed to obtain a genital pollution

**Definitions of Onanism by Pouillet** D Pouillet who has written two remarkable works on Onanism in man and Onanism in woman, criticizes judiciously the various terms by which *onanism* is designated, the generic term employed in the first case by Pissot being in the first place radically erroneous

He proposes the two following definitions

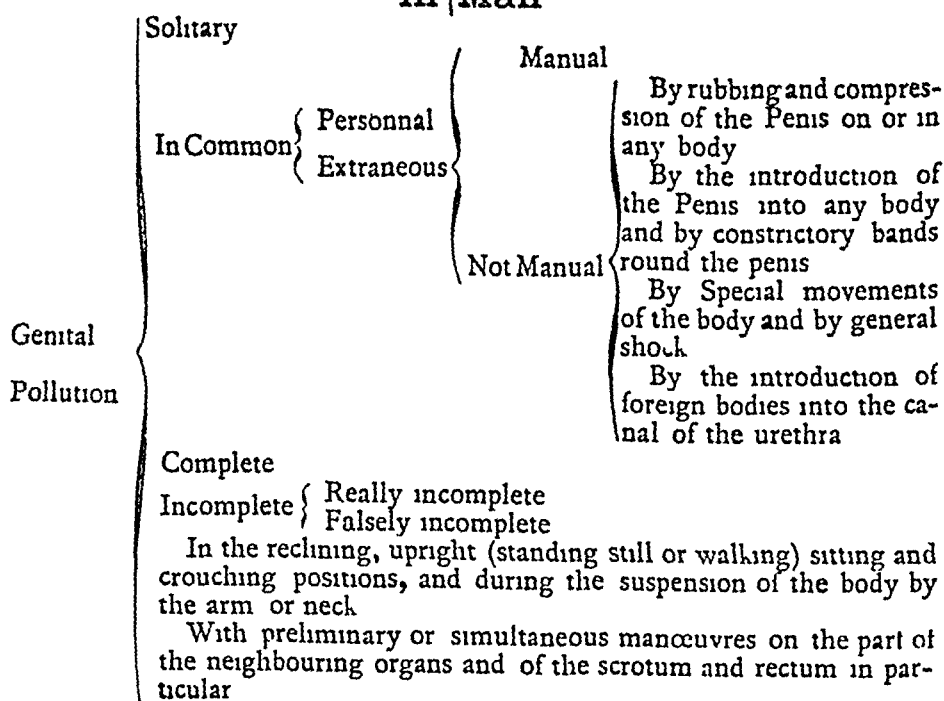
‘ In man, that which is improperly called masturbation or onanism is ‘ *a personal or extraneous manœuvre which requires a whole series of ticklings, pullings about titillations rubbings, shakings, and concessions practised, apart from*

normal or abnormal coition, on the sexual parts by the aid of a living organ, of certain instruments or of special movements of the body, with the proximate aim of procuring the genital ere thismus and, 1<sup>st</sup>, in those who have not yet reached puberty, of occasioning a kind of voluptuous condition followed by a nervous stop, 2<sup>nd</sup>, in those who have reached puberty, of causing the production of the erotic spasm accompanied generally, but not always, by the coming out of the seminal liquid.

In the woman, onanism is an unnatural act performed with the aid of a living organ (hand, tongue, etc.), or by special, partial or general movements of the body, with the object of procuring the venereal spasm, be this act either solitary or performed conjointly with another.

These definitions are very wide and give the author the right of proposing the following classification.

### Forms and Processes of Genital pollution in Man



In the case of the woman, Pouillet establishes a classification based on the anatomical configuration of the genital organ

A *Vaginal Masturbation* B *Masturbation of the Clitoris* C *Urethral Masturbation* These classifications of Pouillet are too wide They include in fact buccal coition between the two sexes, which is one of the forms of Saphism and of Pederasty, as will be seen further on

**Garnier's Classification** In his *Onanisme seul et à deux sous toutes ses formes* D Garnier goes still further He includes under the general title of *Onanism*, *mammary coition* *anal coition* or *Sodomy*, and even *Bestiality*

We shall not adopt this classification or this way of looking at it We do not however hesitate to acknowledge the fact that of all the modern authors who have written upon Onanism, Pouillet and Garnier are they who have discussed this genital abuse most deeply Therefore we borrow from them some interesting extracts, and, above all numerous observations

**Solitary Pollution** This is the most common and the most frequently employed Generally it is manual nevertheless among adolescents and adults among those who possess some notions of intersexual intercourse among satiated but ingenious creatures it is performed in a different manner, as will be seen below

**Pollution in Common** Though less frequent than the preceding it is still common enough among lovers among husbands and wives and groups of companions

**Personal Pollution** This is sometimes practised

by lovers and husbands and wives in the conjugal bed to finish the sexual act commenced by an incomplete coition.

Sometimes it is practised by passive sodomites during the act to which they lend themselves, and especially by children, comrades at play, school, or apprenticeship, who go forth from the paternal roof, the class or the workshop, and proceed in bands under the bridge, on the ramparts, to retired places, etc.

Let us dwell upon the examples borrowed from Pouillet, and let us begin with that observation of Dr Bergeret (*Fraudes Génitales*)

**Observations on Pollutions personal and in common** “ A woman aged 30, thin, extremely gastralgic and neuropathic, married at eighteen

A child arrived at the commencement, although her husband defrauded, not wishing to have a child before a certain age

Attributing this unexpected pregnancy to the fact that fraud with bringing of the genital organs together is not sure, he made use of that means no longer, but being very lustful by nature, he practised manœuvres with his fingers upon his wife so frequently and in such various ways that he ended by producing in her a nervous crethismus extending to most painful general neuropathy

As for himself, when he had grown over-excited by the sight of the venereal orgasm extending to the utmost limits in his wife, he satisfied himself alone, or compelled her to render him this ignoble service

Zimmerman relates that a whole college sometimes beguiled its tedium by manualization, and tried in this way to avoid the slumber inspired by the lessons of scholastic metaphysics given by a sleepy professor.

The author of the *Traité de l'Expérience* relates again that

one day there was discovered in a town a whole society of scapegraces of 13 to 15 years of age, who met together to practise manualism

In 1874, when we were living in the rue des Ecoles from our window, which was situated at the corner of the rue Saint-Jacques on two occasions we were permitted to see 5 to 8 young rascals of 9 to 15 years of age, who had gained admittance into a plot of ground for sale which was enclosed with boards and was close by the Sorbonne after repeated imitations of sodomical manœuvres finish their lascivious gambols by personal masturbation practised in common

When several shepherds are habitually together — writes Lallemand — the disorders are no less the younger ones are soon perverted by the example of the others, and idleness gives imprudence My friend Dunal, senior member of the *Faculté des Sciences*, in a botanizing excursion in the Cevennes, surprised one day five or six young shepherds in the middle of a wood sitting in a circle and indulging in their infamies facing one another His unexpected presence was scarcely able to prevent their continuing and they displayed more annoyance at being interrupted than shame at being caught The eldest of these wretches had hardly reached puberty

In 1876 a *Juge d'instruction* of the Tribunal of the Seine was ordered to proceed against an association of young thieves the eldest of whom was not 20 As the whole band had not been arrested, it was necessary by skilfulness and even by threats to get from those who had been detained the names of those on whom the police wished to lay their hands In the course of an interrogatory one of the accused said to the judge with a chuckle "Well! yes there is forty seven still, but I dont know where he hangs out »

The magistrate wished to have an explanation of this singular nick-name. The chief of the bandits who had been apprehended explained that his title had been given to their comrade because 47 movements of the hand were required to bring about the spermatic ejaculation

The ten or twelve young men, of whom the band was composed, met together, in fact, in a room, and polluted themselves in common, but personally, counting aloud the number of movements necessary for the termination of the act. An agreement, previously entered upon, condemned the one who ejaculated the last, to treat the rest to a pint of wine, a glass of absinthe, or any other drink!

**Extraneous pollution.** As its name indicates, this kind of abuse, as common as the preceding, is performed upon one individual by another. Generally the act is reciprocal. Here we find fellow pupils shortening thus the long hours of study, there are the prisoners who have escaped the watchfulness of their guardians; sometimes they are lovers or husbands and wives who dread the consequences of normal intercourse, or they who are afraid of syphilis, and satiated creatures who ask the courtesans they visit to perform for them this service. Sometimes it is impotent old men, soaked in lechery, who pay children trained to this repugnant work, and sometimes it is "darlings" who, previous to or during the act of sodomy, abandon their penis to the hands of the pederasts, who are excited to the highest degree by the sight of the erethismus which they develop in their *pathici*.

Everybody knows the terms *chasseur* and *lapin*, which designate, in the public-schools, the masturbated and the masturbators, a flagrant proof that masturbation by another is daily practised in these homes of learning.

A friend of mine, writing to me the history of two

young fellows, *à propos* of the death of one of them from phthisis, lately informed me that during their childhood he had caught them more than once behind the hedges, when they came from their bath in the Pernoise. After romping about in the water for some minutes, these companions in pleasure came up again on to the bank, frisked about there for an instant in order to deceive the superintendent then adroitly made their way to a thicket, a clump of trees or a hollow in the ground and there polluted themselves reciprocally. When they had done this they went into the water again, only to begin their little manoeuvres again a few minutes after.

Bergeret's most instructive observation, which we have just related above, also proves that the nuptial bed is not exempt from this form of pollution. To tell the truth, reciprocal masturbation whether preceded or not by an incomplete coition, is one of the most common frauds both in lawful wedlock and in concubinage, in whichever order the parties may be classed.

We gather from a large number of prostitutes who have been questioned on this point, that masturbation is required from them as frequently as fellation. And those who ask for it are either adults dominated by the fear of venereal diseases or old creatures whom coition leaves absolutely apathetic. Certain women just as others with *ab ore* intercourse, have made a most lucrative speciality of this mode of proceeding.

Pederasts while having rectal coition as their ordinary object do not limit themselves to this kind of abuse alone, and several among them indulge in strange practices of manualization. This fact has not escaped A. Par-dieu who defines in the following way the terms of

*Gasse poitrine* and "*Ronsfleurs*" assigned to certain classes of these persons."



**Manual Pollution** Although manual pollution may be and often is practised in common, it is more ordinarily performed in solitude . which permits us to lay down, with Pouillet, this principle , namely that solitary masturbation is the most common of all the various forms of self-pollution, and that which is the most frequently practised

**Non-Manual Pollution** We have seen that Pouillet has subdivided this into four different modes of operation let us consider them one after the other

**Rubbing and Compression of the Penis on any body** Generally this rubbing takes place on the mattress of the bed in the abdominal decubitus position, or against any other hard body, such as the edge of a piece of furniture, the leg of a table or the corner of a bench. The compression of the penis on one of these bodies or merely between the thighs often has produced the genital erethismus and a sensation of pleasure in unconscious children who, agreeably surprised by this discovery, have tried, in a conscious manner then, to obtain the same pleasure again, by placing themselves afresh under the action of the producing cause.

**Examples of Pollution by Compression of the Penis** Observation. “ Endowed with a very precocious temperament,” writes a sufferer from spermatorrhoea in a memorandum to Lallemand, “ I abused it ever since the age of 8 or 9, to indulge in masturbation or rather in still more harmful manoeuvres It was by the compression of my penis between my thighs, or against the seat upon which I was sitting that I procured these deplorable pleasures, followed ordinarily by some drops of a

viscous and transparent liquid This manœuvre I practised several times a day until I was 16 years old, at which period I completely left it off, alarmed by the almost pure blood which I saw several times coming forth

The Professor of Montpellier also relates the case " of a superior officer who became tabescent as a result of practices analogous to the preceeding This officer in doing his duty had, at the age of 10, felt the genital pleasure for the first time by the compression of his penis against the leg of a table for several years he had continued to make use of the same proceeding

" Here is the revelation of a peculiar mode, no doubt but little known, of performing solitary onanism ' Ever since the age of 9 — I am now 20 — I have been addicted to a kind of onanism which I discovered when I was quite a child as I was practising gymnastics, writes the culprit, on Oct 1<sup>st</sup> 1886 "It is performed by the aid of the thighs without any movement I have always as far as I remember, indulged in this means three or four times a week Since my infancy, up to the age of 19 I have been of a rather weak and nervous constitution slightly anæmic but without any disease but with an incontinence of urine which I have had since I was 15

An explanation becomes indispensable to understand the mechanism of this special onanism during eleven consecutive years It is the result of the wretched slack rope having initiated him into it through his finding out the tickling it caused him between his thighs, while he was sliding down it one day from a height At first he sought greatly after this pleasant sensation, but as the redness of his face might occasion his manœuvre to be discovered he soon substituted for it the crossing of his legs together under the table when he was in class, without anybody being ever able to perceive it as no movement was neces-

sary to produce the spasm. The memory of his last act, a lewd idea, a good meal, or the thought of a warm bath, was enough to produce it. He indulged in this manœuvre every day and sometimes two or three times a day, renewing it in his bed, without his hand ever taking part in it. Two or three minutes of this moral rather than physical onanism sufficed to obtain the spermatic emission without involuntary losses ” (Garnier )

**Observations on Pollution through Friction of the Penis.** Compression is rather rare. The method more frequently adopted is rubbing the penis, especially when the subject is lying in bed on his stomach, and the penis in erection is closely pressed between the mattress and the hypogastrium.

“ One of our old fellow pupils confessed to us that he had never polluted himself in any other way, and more than once he had us called up in the night to free him from the violent cramps in his limbs, following after pollutions of this kind, which in spite of our advice and his own wishes, he still continued to practice until he was 28 years of age

In relating the case of the young Eugène C . . who was accustomed to lie in the abdominal decubitus position and who, in consequence of this position, although no signs of puberty existed in him, felt his penis become erect and its pressure against the bed give rise to titillations and rubbings, from which resulted abuses as fatal as those of masturbation, Lallemand authoritatively avers that this position alone caused this child to discover the genital pleasure, since the unhappy creature was still in the most complete ignorance of all that concerns sexual intercourse, and he had never been subject to bad example “ Moreover,” adds the author, “ he was naturally so modest and so

reserved that he has never allowed, and has never been able to endure at any period the slightest touch of the hand. The first impression therefore has been purely instinctive and accidental, but has no less become the cause of a habit which has been transformed into an irresistible passion without ever changing its nature (Lallemand.)

The 16<sup>th</sup> Observation in the *Traité des pertes séminales* very closely resembles the preceding. It regards M. A. who when he was about eight years old, was allowed to sleep with his nurse for some time, and against whom he liked to squeeze himself without knowing why. The sight of this young girl's shape stirred his young imagination and threw him into a kind of melancholy, the origin of which he concealed from everybody.

"When he was thirteen, a young girl aged eighteen made use of him several times to cheat her desires without allowing him any intromission, but only to rub himself on the outside. A short time after, he was sent to College where these baneful remembrances followed him. He continually feasted his imagination upon them, and at night he placed himself again as far as he was able in the same positions to reproduce the same rubbings. Thus he contracted that pernicious habit of masturbation, although he had always abstained from making use of his hands. His health felt the effects of it even before he had noticed any spermatic emission. His growth was arrested, and his sight grew weak as well as his memory and intelligence.

**The mode employed for Masturbation revealed by the shape of the Penis.** Certain authors, and Tardieu in particular, have supposed that in individuals addicted to masturbation the penis displays a *club shaped* conformation, consisting in a globular swell

ing of the extremity of the penis, the gland of which is enlarged, and, as it were, flattened.

This deformation has been denied by Brouardel. In all cases it only exists in individuals who, being able to uncover it completely, seize the penis in its entirety, and rub it in a rough manner. In each movement the ring of the prepuce strikes against the crown of the gland, which tends to increase the projecture length-wise, and produces besides a notable enlargement of the gland at its base. Frequently too a notable dilatation of the cavernous vessel may be observed, which may be recognized if the penis is touched when in a state of relaxation, giving a soft and cartilaginous sensation, different to the ordinary condition. Another sign which is a proof of it, is the varicose, and very apparent, dilatation of the dorsal vein of the penis. Also a lax and pendent scrotum with an easily lifting prepuce is joined to this.

In the case of the masturbator who is unable to uncover his penis, the prepuce becomes elongated, and when it is not in a state at erection forms a long pad in front of the gland.

An analogous result is produced in the case of the young boy who masturbates himself by rubbing his thighs together, or by compression. The gradual elongation of the prepuce results from the repeated rubbing of this mobile membrane on the gland, which is harder and more unyielding, especially when in a state of erection.

According to Béard, this appearance on examination of an exuberant prepuce, together with a red and swollen condition of the lips of the urinary meatus, is often observed in the United States, together with lesions of the bottom of the canal, the urethra is prostatic. This therefore would be an indication of masturbation either, manual or by rubbing.

Garnier shows that the elongation of the prepuce and its coincident irritation, produced mechanically in this way, may at length occasion a kind of contraction of its aperture which presents the uncovering of the gland by simulating phimosis itself in the child. Produced in the first place by the rubbing of the thighs, and later on by masturbation these false phimoses are so frequent that they far surpass in number the true phimoses according to the following statistics. 'Of a total of 14 cases observed 4 only were true of which 1 had been operated upon by me and 10 were false in youths from 18 to 25 years of age. Two confessed to the rubbing of the gland one of them who was over 18, said that he had amused himself for a long period by the movement of his thighs on his penis, passing whole hours in this way several times a day the others were addicted to masturbation without uncovering the gland. An elongated prepuce extending beyond the gland, together with a contracted red swollen and painful aperture, with irritation of the urinary meatus and often of the gland itself forming a more or less intense balanitis is the characteristic deformity of this case.

When the gland is completely uncovered during erection pollution by rubbing on the sheets of the bed diminishes at length the sensibility of the penis, and dulls more particularly the impressionability of the gland when it is violently and persistently rubbed, when bare, on the coarse, rough unbleached linen. Without elongating the prepuce as the rubbing of the thighs does or masturbation with the hand having the gland covered this process by forcibly uncovering the gland, pushes and draws the prepuce mechanically upwards at the cost of its inferior attachment, through the frenum or fillet, which rises considerably

“ In this way a special sign of this prolonged rubbing was discovered in a Licentiate of Laws, aged 24 Exclusively addicted to this habit of rubbing, which he had contracted at 13, he indulged in it several times each day and night ever since his puberty, without the sight of women having ever made any impression on him He came merely to ask if his genital organs displayed any defect of conformation which would explain his habit, and all the nervous symptoms which he experienced

An examination showed the gland uncovered on a surface of about a sixpence, without any trace of the aperture The urinary meatus was hidden and covered by the posterior part of the prepuce, a result no doubt of its being rubbed forwards. It was lowered too very easily with the hand, the frenum being stretched and relaxed The testicles were of moderate size, rather soft, without any other deformity being apparent except the exaggerated size of the dorsal vein of the penis, produced no doubt by this rubbing, as performed by the hand by masturbators This striking deformation, although it is not invariably present, deserves to be pointed out as a sign of this rubbing. ” (Garnier.)

**Pollution by the tickling of the gland with the end of the fingers** We only find this mode of pollution in Garnier, who quotes a single observation of it.

“ A still more simple process has been revealed to me quite recently by a tall youth, aged 24, very strong and impressionable, who had remained a virgin as regards all sexual intercourse. His religious convictions had made him victoriously avoid masturbation and prostitution When he was 21 he had even resisted the temptations of a private nurse He was therefore continually a prey to incessant erections, which tormented him to a painful degree

He had only one means of relieving himself This was the tickling of the gland with the end of his fingers immediately producing ejaculation He had never employed any other Therefore at the end of his powers of resistance he came to me to give him advice about marriage, not in Church

**Pollution by introduction of the penis into any body and by constrictory bands round penis** The solitary masturbator is not satisfied with the hand Through satiety, the friction which it affords is not sufficient to procure ejaculation He is thus led to try every mechanical means which can bring about erection Rings and tubes of all kinds made of metal, glass or wood, necks of bottles pots and vases are employed for this purpose by introducing or pushing the penis into them Many hurt themselves, and some are caught in a trap, being unable to remove the foreign body owing to the swelling of the organ and have been compelled to have recourse to medical assistance

All the instances given in the First Volume, of foreign bodies or constrictory bands, relate to this kind of Pollution We refer the reader to it

**Pollution by special movement of the body, and by general Shock** In this mode of pollution pointed out by Pouillet we must mention first of all pollution by hanging — incomplete be it understood Our readers are aware that hanging engenders erection and produces ejaculation

### **Observations on Pollution by Hanging**

In that queer and eccentric city London, there exists we are assured, a secret society of singular gentlemen who



meet together for the purpose of stirring up, by incomplete hanging, their apathetic nervous system, and thus producing the erotic spasm

This would appear incredible if we were ignorant of the fact that libertinism is capable of anything. Besides, here is a reason which may assist our belief in the possibility of such a club

On Sept 27<sup>th</sup>, 1863, in the rue de l'Université, there was found in a closet an apprentice, aged 16, hung to the bars of a partition by means of a strap. Nothing impelled the youth to such a determination, an investigation was then made into his past life, and it was discovered that he was a prototypical manualizator. He had heard the spermatic ejaculation spoken of in those who are hung, and he tried to perform in his own person the act of hanging, so as to have the same act of emission. He involuntarily sacrificed his life to the refinement of pleasure which he thought he had discovered

A similar case occurred again, a short time after, with an old masturbator at Bercy for him also the semblance of hanging was reality "

Pollution by movements of the body would be, according to Garnier, a practice of religious persons of continent habits who are tormented with erections. They throw themselves, *fully dressed*, on the floor of their cell when they are tormented by the retention of sperm, and are unable either to sleep or pray. A few movements are sufficient to relieve them of their burden, and then everything becomes orderly again.

Let us point out a somewhat uncommon form of pollution

" A child, aged five, had his hand caught in a cog-wheel, and it was obliged to be amputated. He was not prevented by this from practising masturbation, from which grave

nervous symptoms resulted. He then substituted for it a peculiar rubbing in imitation of coition. Lying on his belly, he half closed his left hand over his penis, and a to and fro motion of the pelvis was sufficient to produce erection and ejaculation. 'It is a representation of coition', he wrote 'and I obtain from it more pleasure and less harm. Happily he soon put a stop to this and becoming more bold and resolute, he quickly succeeded with the other sex and declared that he was cured' (Garnier).

A young Englishman referred to by Garnier, was affected at the sight of an obese man with a desire to rub his penis on his belly without any other excitant. The exclusive taste of this special rubbing of the penis on the belly of their young acolytes is peculiar to certain pederasts who assert that the reciprocal action of the hairs is a very efficacious and pleasureable aphrodisiac.

'A hairdresser of Paris, indifferent to the loveliest heads which he skilfully arranged, was fond of a man only in view of this aberration. Deplorable adventures resulted with certain black mailers and this caused him to urgently demand a means of cure. In the same way a footman had discovered the pleasure of rubbing, through climbing up a tree in his childhood. Becoming then addicted to masturbation, and being led on by that to pederasty he had preserved, as his supreme happiness in his love for men the rubbing of his penis on his belly while he surrendered himself in exchange to passive sodomy' (Garnier).

Let us finish this heading by pointing out pollution by rubbing on the vulva which is analogous to the preceding.

'The rubbing on the vulva, although better known and adopted as a preservation against generation is most harmful. A tall youth strong and vigorous who had had relation with prostitutes from an early age, having con-

tracted syphilis when he was 22, resolved, after two years of continence and treatment, not to expose himself to it any longer, but only to rub his penis on the vulva, without intromission. He continued this proceeding for five years, making a weekly visit, without a single infraction or it. The habit therefore was thoroughly established

Marrying when he was 24, in 1891, a girl tall and strong like himself, he failed miserably in taking possession, being unable to penetrate for want of erection. He unloaded himself according to his custom by rubbing himself on her vulva, and the same on the two days following. Ashamed and surprised at his successive failures, he came and asked for an aphrodisiac so that he might succeed better, and related the story of his foolish habit which had rendered him impotent "

### **Pollution through the introduction of a foreign body into the canal of the Urethra**

The solitary masturbator goes still further. He comes to titillating the canal of the urethra, and finishes by introducing foreign bodies into it, in order to produce a more voluptuous tickling. The bend and the sinuosities of this canal in man, and its length, render this kind of onanism very dangerous. The individuals introduce their instrument of pleasure to an increasing depth, in proportion as the mucous membrane becomes habituated to the contact and the tickling of the object, to such a degree that it becomes insensible. Unaware of the danger, they stir the canal of the urethra throughout its whole extent, in order to obtain keener sensations and more acute ticklings. Every kind of disease of the canal results from this (false routes, urethritis, hemorrhages, etc.) One fine day the object they have introduced slips out of their hands and, according to its nature, either falls into the bladder, or remaining hook-

ed in the canal, cannot be drawn out again. And so there is a really curious diversity of objects, which the resources of art have been sometimes unable to extract. We refer the reader to the First Volume, in which we have given quite a series of observations of the most diverse character. Nearly all of them proceed from masturbation.

I am content with pointing to the case of the shepherd Galien Chopart who cut his penis in halves with his knife like a common savage and finally had two penes, or rather two semi penes, split from the urinary meatus to the pubis (See 1<sup>st</sup> volume)

**Really incomplete Pollution** This is nothing else but masturbation arrested at the moment when ejaculation is about to be produced. After a moment's respite the onanist begins again, and so on till the moment when with one movement more ejaculation will take place. A fresh stop, and at length a final departure when the stop has not occurred in time.

**Falsely incomplete Pollution** Falsely incomplete pollution is that which, produced in one way or another, causes the voluptuous spasm and the terminal contraction of the perineal muscles without, however, any trace of sperm showing itself externally, because a somewhat strong compression has been applied at the moment of ejaculation, upon a point of the urethra, usually at the base of that organ. It is clear that this pollution is only incomplete in appearance. The sperm flows back into the bladder, instead of coming out by the canal of the urethra. Those who practice it are under the impression that they avoid the dangers of a too great loss of sperm. This is an error on their part.

### Instances of incomplete pollutions

"MM. Fournier and Begin give the instance of a young man who, at the moment of ejaculation, compressed the most distant part of the urethra, in such a way that he did not lose a drop of sperm; nevertheless the fatigue which succeeded his efforts of this kind was, in spite of his precautions, quite as great. At length his strength diminished, and his emission made as rapid progress as if the spermatoc evacuation had been complete.

One of my patients — viz. the Professor of Montpellier — writes to me "When I was fourteen, I indulged in masturbation three or four times a week, and sometime on several occasions in a day. To prevent the emission of the sperm, I squeezed the root of my penis hard. In fact, I did not see it escape at the moment, and that reassured me; but I remarked later that the sperm came out with the urine the first time I evacuated it. I took these precautions for about two years." (Lallemand.)

**Pollution with manœuvres on the neighbouring organs, especially the scrotum and rectum. The Commissary's Hat and the Postilion of Marseilles.** Here we fully enter on the domain of debauchery. These manœuvres are demanded by onanists who are tired of operating personally, and have recourse to the aid of another person, male or female. It is a common practice among the prostitutes who pollute a man, either with the hand or with the tongue, for them to work up his testicles with one hand. They call this doing "the Commissary's Hat." If the patient has the finger, greased or moistened, introduced into his anus, they are doing "the Postilion of Marseilles."

If he ask them to apply their tongue to his scrotum,

perineum, anus etc , this is doing " the Rose Leaf " This is a constant practice with debauchees

Pouillet therefore is incorrect in counting these manœuvres under the head of onanism They are depraved debauchery and that is all He is more correct in saying that instances are known of men and of young fellows who, with needles and pins have picked or pierced through and through their penis or their purses

**Posterior Pollution** Finally there is a preliminary or simultaneous manœuvre which remains for us to point out we allude to *posterior pollution* This revived mode of the ancient Greeks and Romans comprises two kinds artificial sodomy and true sodomy We have already had occasion to say that active sodomites have a habit during the rectal act of polluting their ' darlings ' we will not return to the subject again As for artificial sodomy it consists in the introduction of the fingers, like the Siphniacs in the introduction of priapi, in the Roman manner, or of any other object into the depths of the rectum

How many foreign bodies have been found in the large intestine of persons who have been taken for sodomites, and were but refined masturbators These accessory manœuvres by their own hands, or by the hands of others are frequent enough among adults and old men We have been assured that these latter masturbators for the purposes of rectal pollution make use of a small ivory ball with a steel holder the extremity of which, when in use, remains outside the anus A sudden movement given to the metallic holder, engenders a series of vibrations which are communicated to the ivory ball, buried up to the prostate, and produce in this way a shock in the pelvic organs which is favourable to the genital erethismus We speak

of this curious instrument only from memory, as we have not been able to obtain *de visu* a proof of its existence; but it does exist, as well as various other instruments. » (Pouillet )

**Posterior Pollution belongs to the department of Pederasty** We are clearly of the opinion, contrary to that of Pouillet, that posterior pollution, as he call it, is a pederastic manœuvre, and nothing else. Bashful pederasts who do not know of a “ friend, » or do not dare to seek for one, *to put it into them*, as these gentlemen’s expression runs, have what they can thrust into their anus. If we can’t get a pheasant, we eat a fowl. Not having at hand a natural penis in a state of erection, they make use of *gaudemichets* of indiarubber, imitating the form and colour of the natural member. This apparatus is provided with a kind of girdle which the operator passes round his belly.

There is no prostitute, but has in her bed-room an apparatus of this kind, and often several of different sizes, in order that the patient may be able to select his instrument.

But we lay stress upon this point, that here we are in the province of Pederasty, and no longer in that of Onanism.

**The Height of Ingratitude.** As to the custom, pointed out by Pouillet, which active pederasts have of masturbating their partner during anal coition, it is a fact. I have never met with a pederast who refused to render this service to his friend, and in the course of a medical practice, I have had to do with a great number, especially in the Colonies. The final word upon it was given to me by an active pederast, who maintained that when polluting his patient, he used every effort to make him ejaculate

before he ejaculated himself, giving as his reason, that during the emission of the sperm the anus of the passive partner contracted with extreme violence and caused the active one to ejaculate almost immediately

‘ We go off almost together or at least I follow him very closely, he said and then it would be the height of ingratitude to refuse to masturbate a man when one is making use of him !



## CHAPTER V

### GENITAL ABUSES (CONTINUED)

#### CAUSES, SIGNS AND CONSEQUENCES OF ONANISM IN MAN

Causes of Onanism in Man — Table of Classification of the causes of Onanism — Different Opinions upon the causes of Onanism — Selected Observations on Pollution relating to the causes of Onanism — Syndromes and Signs of Onanism in Man — Comparison of the Effects of Coition with those of Onanism — Diseases produced or maintained by Pollution — Local and adjacent Affections — Consequences to the other organic apparatus — Observations upon Pouillet's Classification — The Consequences of Onanism and Poetry — Selected Observations on Pollutions, relating to the Consequences of Onanism

**Causes of Onanism in Man** These Causes are legion, for the very simple reason that Onanism is a genital abuse so widespread that it may almost be said that the number of men who have polluted themselves to a greater or less degree (if not in their infancy, at all events in their youth) is greater than the number of those chaste individuals who have abstained from it. Pouillet has given a classification which has the merit of embracing the whole of the causes giving rise to Onanism.

We produce it in the form of a table for the reader's convenience.

# TABLE OF CLASSIFICATION

## OF THE CAUSES OF ONANISM

### First Group

Causes which produce a particular sensation on the part of the genital organs, the erethismus of which they occasion, and arouse the idea of genital pleasure, and Causes which lead to the discovery of a mode of operation suitable for the engendering of the pleasure

Internal Causes	A Anatomo physiological Causes	Individual
		<i>Erotic Constitution</i> <i>Genital Idiosyncrasy</i> <i>Sexual Precocity</i> <i>Cryptorchidism</i>
Internal Causes	B Pathological Causes	Common
		<i>Infantile Nervous Excitability</i> <i>Disposition of the man's hands and Sexual Organs</i> <i>Presence of the Prepuce</i> <i>Awakening of Puberty</i> <i>Accumulation of Sperm in the Testicle</i>
Internal Causes	B Pathological Causes	Local Causes
		<i>Congenital Phimosis</i> <i>Balano Posthitis</i> <i>Glenorrhagia Glenorrhoea</i> <i>Stricture Urethral Polyp Vegetations of the Penis Genital Derpathia</i>
Internal Causes	B Pathological Causes	Adjacent Causes
		<i>Vesical Calculus Repletion of the Bladder,</i> <i>Cutaneous Affections Fistulas fissures</i> <i>Vegetations Constipation</i>

		General Causes.
Internal Causes (continued)	Pathological Causes (continued)	<i>Dermopathia, Itch, Gout, Pulmonary Phthisis Catarrhal Inflammations Affections of the cerebellum Hypertrophy Abscesses, Tumours, and Congestions of the Cerebellum. Affections of the Spinal Medulla Diseases of the brain Hydrocephalia Epilepsy. Mental Derangement Priapism. Satyriasis</i>
	A Physical Causes	<i>Temperature Dress (trouser-pockets) Movements Blows on the Back-side Introduction of Foreign Bodies into the rectum Foods Aphrodisiac Medication (cantharides, strychnine, etc ) General excitants External Medicaments Baths Drastic Injections Blisters Smells. Foreign Pollution</i>
External Causes	B Social Causes	<i>Professions Wealth Poverty</i>
	C Moral and Intellectual Causes	<i>Want of restraint in the presence of children. — Risky Gestures — Light Conversation — Erotic images, statues, pictures — Love Stories — Unwholesome Books — Theatrical Performances — Tableaux vivants Fetes — Evening parties — Balls — Confession. — Precocious Initiation into Coition — Direct Teaching — Example</i>

## Second Group

Causes which, by placing an obstacle in the way of Sexual Intercourse, incite the young man who has arrived at puberty, and is tempted by his genital requirement, to replace coition by processes of pollution.

Personal Causes	General	{	Local and adjacent diseases Local and adjacent weaknesses Non local weakness Material impossibility of Coition Temporary impossibility of Coition through Surgical affection Syphilophobia Fear of being impotent Fear of sinning by copulating Voluntary Sexual Abstinence Morbid Disgust of it even
	Timidity		
Extrinsic Causes	Reciprocal	{	Abstinence caused through the maladies or weaknesses of the woman — Continence through want of women Prisons Ships Poverty Madhouse
	Abstinence		

### Third Group

Causes which by keeping up the idea of the pleasure which has been already felt and the idea of feeling it again induce the individual to repeat the practices which have produced the agreeable sensation

Maintenance of Primitive Causes

Idleness Solitude

Weakness of the man before the possibility of pleasure  
Habit

We shall not follow Pouillet into the detailed study of these numerous causes Some are so evident that they stare one in the face Take for instance the influence of poverty It is certain that a poor devil of a workman, who is vigorous and continent for want of money, is obliged to masturbate himself unless he can find a comrade willing to render him this service on condition that he does it in return We find this to be equally the case under the headings (Extraneous causes reciprocal abstinence, Continence through want of women Prisons Ships Poverty Mad house) It is evident that prisoners sailors poor men masturbate themselves through want of women But do madmen masturbate themselves because they have no

women or because they are mad? And the same with regard to *crétins*, idiots, ataxic and paralytic persons? Is masturbation among a numerous category of patients a cause, or is it rather an effect? Hippocrates says *yes*, and Galen *no*

**Different Opinions on the Causes of Onanism** The ancient physicians, Tissot, Lallemand, Deslandes and with them Pouillet, assert that these different maladies are the effect of masturbation. Modern physicians, mad-doctors in particular, are of opinion that when onanism is inveterate, and it exists under a form which occurs without the patient being able to relinquish it, it is always the effect of a special and persistent condition of the brain. We have seen the opinion of G. Pichon. Professor Lassegue in a magnificent lecture on Onanism enunciates the following proposition: "Onanism is the symptom of a morbid condition, of a cerebral neurosis. Madness does not exist as a consequence of onanism, but there does exist a cerebral condition which has engendered that vice." Drs Charcot, Magnan, Christian, followed by a considerable number of foreign mad-doctors, range themselves beneath Lassegue's banner.

Garnier is less exclusive in his opinion on the Essence of Onanism.

"It requires to be studied on its commencements, its various forms, and the manner in which they are engendered. It would be illogical and erroneous to seek for a single and unique cause for effects so incongruous, so numerous and so proteiform. It could not account for their varieties or their progress. Far from manifesting themselves, developing and persisting in a uniform manner, these effects are arrested, changed or modified, are even transformed and metamorphosed under the influence of conditions opposite to those which produced them. The issue often

depends upon the surroundings in which the individual finds himself placed at the decisive moment. The majority of children of both sexes who have indulged in masturbation are cured spontaneously, provided that morally and physically they are normally constituted, as soon as they are brought in under the influence of the assemblies, the games and the pleasures of youth. Nor is it even uncommon for a certain number to proceed to all kinds of venereal excesses to such a degree as to become ill thereby. From this confusion often arises between the results of excess and venereal abuses. (Garnier)

We adopt Garnier's opinion, and it appears to us that onanists may be classed under three very distinct heads, namely — A Onanists innate through dementia or degeneracy — B Onanists, acquired through a pathological cause or through the force of habit — C Occasional Onanists who employ pollution as a last resource having nothing better in their power to satisfy their sexual instinct.

**Observations of Pollution relating to the Causes of Onanism** Under the reservation of the opinions mentioned above we give a selection of observations of pollution relating to the more important causes of Onanism.

' A youth, aged 19, had indulged ever since the age of 11 in solitary masturbation either standing or sitting, and almost every day between the ages of 15 and 19, since he had read *Onanisme sous toutes ses formes*. However the pleasure, which was very keen and violent until the age of puberty, had gradually been growing less so that it was now almost nil. He only had recourse to it now when in bed and obtained ejaculation in one minute by rolling and pressing his penis with his hand against the left thigh. This

was an old mechanical habit, performed without desire or any enjoyment.

Absolutely without beard, he was born the last of a family of twelve children all alive and in perfect health like himself, his timidity in regard to women is the sole cause which has prevented his having intercourse with them, as he is very fond of them. The sight of them does not excite him, and he has never had a friend to encourage him, he only has one to whom to confide his vice and to converse with about it occasionally. Being abroad when he was 18 and completely free, he made an attempt with a woman who did not excite him at all, in spite of his wishes he remained as cold as marble and disgusted, and could not enter on erection. What alarms him is that he has never been able to obtain it spontaneously. It has always been produced by his hand and only lasts a few seconds."

"A litho-grapher, aged 19, thin and slender, was educated at a seminary and wanted to leave when he was 16, "owing to what he saw going on there." He came in order to find out a way of freeing himself from the habit of onanism, which he had contracted in this establishment with a fellow-pupil, they had indulged in it while standing up several times a day. When he left, he tried to cure himself of it by resorting to houses of ill-fame, but finding no attraction there, he soon gave them up. He also has an aversion to public balls, and does not go to the theatres because he has no money. His spare time he therefore passes with a fellow-workman who serves him as an acolyte, as at the seminary, and they masturbate themselves together. Happily they are members of a Gymnastic Society, which occupies their Sundays with healthy exercise."

"An unmarried man, aged 33, formerly a soldier, tall and well made, was of irreproachable conduct apart from his onanistic habits, which dated from his early youth when

he watched his flocks all alone in the south of France Timid and fearful, he had never addressed himself to women in spite of his would be desires, and had but rarely yielded, when he was a soldier, to those who had solicited him A few slight venereal accidents having resulted he conceived directly a profound repulsion for women He desired a pure affection, a love which came from the heart, and in his apathy he took no trouble or proceedings to find it and inspire it All the girls who displayed any amiability towards him in his office of rural postman, and then of *sergent de ville*, were in his opinion only of doubtful virtue, and did not inspire him with any desire So he continued his solitary pleasures while he rejected with energy and determination the touches which were attempted by his companions who slept in the same room He indulged in it himself intermittently, with frenzy, although he was perfectly conscious of the harm he was doing He confessed it candidly, and repented of it in his letters, which were very correct and indicated a certain degree of elementary instruction, delicacy and reasoning but without any will or decision His writing was fine and quite feminine as well as his phrases, and the details of his correspondence showed that he possessed somewhat simple religious ideas tastes, and habits

**Hypertrophy of the Cerebellum** — Deslandes reports, after the observation which we give below that he had also noticed a very remarkable development of the posterior part of the skull in a boy aged 8, who for several years had given himself up to masturbation and whose penis was in an almost continual state of erection This protraction so lengthened the anteroposterior diameter of the head that his mother said that she found it difficult to find a hat which would fit this child's head '



M. Chauffard of Avignon, in the *Journal des Sciences Médicales* of December 1828, published the following fact "In the depth of winter, he was taking part, in an unheated hall, on a board for the examination of recruits. A shepherd came forward and asked to be dispensed from military service on account of a disease which, he said, he was ashamed to mention. As soon as he was naked his penis became turgid, and continued in that state in spite of a spermatic evacuation which it was impossible for the shepherd to avoid. This man was subject, he found out, to continual erections and frequent evacuations, which he was in the habit also of inducing by touching it. Dr. Chauffard remarked that this individual had red hair, and although robust had a very short neck, a wide and thick nape, a notable widening of the posterior portion of the occipital, and, finally, a marked development and prominence of the region of the cerebellum."

Other affections of the cerebellum may act in the same way as the hypertrophy of that organ. It is thus that Gall relates the case of a child aged 13, a fierce masturbator, two-thirds of whose brain were over-run with suppuration, it is thus that the *Nouvelle Bibliothèque médicale* of September, 1827, publishes the story of a young man, aged 19, who could not by any treatment overcome the habit of pollution to which he was addicted. As he died at the Hôtel-Dieu of a complete marasmus, it was possible to perform a complete autopsy upon him, and an encephaloid tumour of the size of a nut was found in his brain, which had already begun to soften. And it is thus, finally, that the *Médecin*, in the number of March 1877, relates a case of pseudo-satyriasis, in which the treatment places in evidence the etiological influence of the cerebellum, which perhaps was hypertrophied, and certainly irritated by a congestion of blood.

The unhappy creature who forms the subject of this observation is a young man aged 22, tall of an agreeable countenance, with brown hair but his forehead is depressed and the posterior portion of his head is wider and more rounded than the anterior portion. He is gloomy in his habits and avoids the society of his kind.

On January 5<sup>th</sup>, he went up into his bedroom after a good dinner bolted himself in and gave himself up to onanism with an extreme tenacity, then he went to bed fully dressed slept for three quarters of an hour, and then came down to his family again. On the 14<sup>th</sup> after a copious repast he disappeared in the same sudden way, and indulged in the same manœuvres. The young man, when reprimanded by his father confessed that for a year past he had been subject to attacks of erotic fury which masturbation alone could calm.

One day when taken with one of these fits, he had his hands bound but he was seized with a convulsion which lasted ten minutes, he fell to the ground uttering hoarse cries his face was pale he was released, and immediately, in the presence of his family he gave himself up to masturbation without intermission.

M. Prevost, of Cambremer was consulted, he advised immediate marriage and prescribed a camphorated potion of 0.30 centigr. and an infusion of white nenuphar of 30 gr. to a litre of water, with abstinence from alcohol and coffee. There was no result. The patient when questioned said that marriage did not in any way tempt him, that he did not think at all of the pleasures of the senses but that he was seized all at once with a pain behind the head that his penis then entered on erection and that nothing then could prevent him from masturbating himself to satiety in spite of his desire to abstain from it. In these attacks the patient's face was pale, saliva came out of his

mouth, he entered on erection and carried his hands to his genital parts. Fifteen leeches were applied to the back of his neck, and the attack did not come on. This was begun again three weeks afterwards when the pain returned, and this time again the attack did not take place. To-day the patient is completely cured. ”

“ Dr Desportes, in the *Revue Médicale* of August, 1828, gives eight observations of pultaceous angina in which, before any other symptom, and during a somewhat long period, erotic desires, at times irresistible, and an imminent and undeniable predisposition to masturbation, had premonitorily appeared. This practitioner saw in this a very special precursory sign of the aphthous affection of the pharynx, and believed that it was explained by the connections of the nerves of the neck with certain parts of the encephalon and the commencement of the spinal medulla. Deslandes rightly, as it seems to us, rejects this explanation, he admits, on the contrary, a transfer of the irritation from one mucous membrane to the other. “ The irritation of the interior tegument of the genital parts, he says, is not only, as this doctor believes, a precursory sign of that of the pharynx. It may be shown during an inflammation of any other portion of the mucous membranes, or even succeed that inflammation. Dr Mirambeau has communicated two observations to me which confirm this fact. The first is that of a boy aged 11, who was seized, after a chill, with a very obstinate gastro-enteritis. This disease was drawing to an end when the mucous surface of the penis became the seat of a very severe inflammation, which shortly was attended by a veritable satyriasis. Things came to such a point that they were obliged to tie this child down to keep him from manipulations which he performed upon himself without relaxation, although he had not previously indulged in anything of

the kind, of which M Mirambeau was absolutely certain. The subject of the second observation is a girl aged 9, and displays the same circumstances as in the preceding case. They were also obliged to make use of binds to restrain her. The duration of this erotic attack in both cases, was from ten to twelve days '.

### **The furious Masturbation of Maniacs**

A young idiot, aged 16 was confined in the Mirville Hospital after being guilty of numerous outrages against decency. He masturbated himself with frenzy and had an enormous penis, as the sign and consequence of this passion.

Many maniacs masturbate themselves furiously.

A youth, aged 17, who stammered and had but little intelligence, never ceased masturbating himself day and night during his attacks while he had no inclination for it during his periods of calm. A young maniac, under the care of Dr Ritti, was in similar case, so that when she was held in the bath by a strait waistcoat, she still rubbed her vulva with her feet which remained free.

Pichon gives a very curious letter written by a young man of considerable learning in whom excessive study had brought about an attack of mental degenerescence. The unfortunate man believed himself to be affected with sexual inversion and gave himself up to continual masturbation.

"And you are astonished that owing to the extraordinary abnormal and little understood inversion which I am made to suffer to the male sex it follows that I am forced to undergo those monstrous assemblages such as are only seen at Naples in the East, or among the Freemasons in spite of the despair of the poor victim. Am I not there compelled to be the latrines of those unhealthy lucubrations. They wish to render me anaemic by making me the sport of these human beasts, com-

bined with a mind like that of Molière's Pourceaugnac.

I come to this point a prey during the whole of my youth to the immodesty of a feather-headed nation, *I become the prostitute of a hundred madmen nearly*, all of them plebeians, in a word the *refuse* of the refuse of society, they corrupt me as they did the king of Rome, they brutalize me like Louis XVII, they imprison me like Mary Stuart, they sacrifice me like Jeanne d'Arc, they torment me as they tormented Jesus Christ, and if they dared tell me to my face all that they thought, it would be in the name of Jesus Christ himself that they would make me suffer, it would be the sufferings and the death of Christ and eighteen centuries of Christianity that they would cast in my face

Oh Heavens! it seemed for all that that the passage of the Son must assure the passage, the life and above all the honour, oh yes! the honour of the mother and of the Holy Spirit And this is my part! Ah! let these men take care lest I repeat one day upon their head the curse of Marius upon the seven hills of Rome, when he went into exile.

*You accuse me of masturbating myself day and night, well, perform upon them the operation of circumcision, and to speak a language which the immodest speak and understand, castrate them as they castrate a dog* I ask it of you again, I, in my full age and enjoying all my powers of reason, to prove my virtue, and to shelter myself against the prostitution of swine.

I have said it, let them be circumcised all those who would surround me, all those who have outraged me, young and old, men and women

Now, Gentlemen, try to understand perfectly the meaning of this letter

If you knew how many people there are here whose life I will have, they would be a little less inclined to play the hog and the brute "

Everybody knows the story of the prompter who too often forgot to prompt when the women were on the stage. Surprised at observing this the manager watched him and caught him one evening in the very act of pollution with his eyes fixed on the thighs of a young actress, his half open mouth could only utter inarticulate sounds and not the sentence expected by the actress who, surprised at length by the prompter's silence, glanced down at her feet and, to the great scandal of the audience could not help bursting into laughter when she saw the unhappy man's face distracted with pleasure and shame (Pouillet)

' A young prince was duly losing his health, without anybody being able to discover the reason. His surgeon, who suspected him watched him and surprised him in the very act. He confessed that one of his *valets de chambre* had taught him and that he had frequently relapsed into the same fault again, etc (Lallemand)

**Criminal advice of Tutors** Several patients of Lallemand were beholden for their seminal losses to the vicious advice of their tutors and servants

We have had under our care a tabescent patient who became so after several years of manualism the knowledge of which he gained from a private tutor appointed to inculcate him in the principles of morality and the elements of Letters

Sometimes manualism is adopted at the instigation of elder brothers or cousins. Brachet in his treatise on the convulsions of children, relates the story of a young boy, about 8 or 9 years of age who was affected with spasmodic contractions and attacks of an epileptic nature due to practices dating back to the time when he was three years of age, which were taught him by a cousin who was a masturbator

If cases of this kind are far from rare, and all writers attest their frequency, it must be confessed that in general the greater number of adepts are made through initiation by example. The companions with whom they live, the school companions, are the instigators *par excellence* of voluntary pollution they corrupt those who have a predisposition to this vice. One rotten fruit is enough to spoil a thousand ripe fruits, and in the same way one manualist will defile a thousand pure children. All the young people in a village, Salzmann tells us, were corrupted by two students who returned from the University.

The cause which we are studying has not escaped the notice of Deslandes, Fournier, and Begin, who point it out as being one of the most common. "Most frequently" - writes the first "initiation into the mysteries of onanism comes from the companions amongst whom we live. They boast of the pleasures which they obtain for themselves, and brag and laugh at those who do not dare to share them. The elder ones do not always confine themselves to instructing the younger, they make use of them and exact of them, either by promises or by threats, the most shameful services. Thus, in these assemblages of young people, acts of debauchery are committed which are concealed through fear or through complicity, and knowledge of which is hidden from the master."

"We have seen," Fournier and Begin say, alluding to schools, "the, so-to-say public act of masturbation, acknowledged without shame, and perpetrated without modesty. We have seen, under the very eyes of the masters, infamous provocations, exciting among the pupils excesses, the consequences of which the doctor was too frequently called in to contend with. And lastly, we have seen with the keenest indignation, the elder of these unhappy creatures, already corrupted, having re-

course to the hand of the younger ones and compelling them either by threats or by cruelty to afford them an abominable service

" We have known a manualist 26 years of age, who about the age of 22 after a blennorrhagic epididymitis, had a relapse every time that he left off the use of the suspensor. The fear of a phlegmasic recrudescence made him resolve not to give up his bandage, but, on the other hand, the ridicule which in his opinion he would have to undergo if he showed himself wrapped up in this way to a woman — were she a prostitute — determined him to have recourse to solitary practices which soon brought on spermatorrhœa (Pouillet)

' It is undeniable that old bachelors, who all their life long have been content to indulge in masturbation, like M. Prudhomme after the death of his wife continue this practice until a very advanced age. An old man of 74 confessed to his surgeon, *a propos* of an operation, that he had masturbated himself all his life with moderation and that he still sacrificed in this way twice a week and found himself much better for it

These cases must be very rare few old masturbators having enough moderation calmness and self-restraint not to fall during such a long career into some excesses or into aggravating promiscuous intercourse. The habit of such a vice does not agree with such reserve, except in the case of the religious celibate. The greater number of them do not remain alone they form small parties of two, in order to indulge more easily in their abominable turpitudes. Impotent old men need young men of corrupt morals or their servants or *employés*, to commit sodomy upon them

" Malfilâtre — reports Gaurry Duvivier in his *Guide des malades atteints d'affections des voies urinaires*, — Malfilâtre died exhausted by and the victim of the saddest caprices



of the solitary passion. He related to a friend, in the latter period of his life, that he never failed to go on a Sunday, Monday, and Thursday, to the pretty Ranelagh fêtes at Passy, and that there he picked out with avidity the most graceful feminine types that he could notice, that he analysed their perfections like a poet, with an imagination of olden time, and that then putting them all together he composed out of them an ideal being with which all his powers were exhausted. It was an hallucination which had no limit but in utter syncope Malfilâtre recognized that the mania which caused his death was stronger than his will ”

Let us complete all those observations by saying that when masturbation has become habitual, it makes use of, in order to struggle advantageously against a very determined will, some subterfuges, thank to which it succeeds in perpetuating itself. More than one onanist, accustomed to pollute himself at night in bed, is unable to sleep, if he refrain from doing so. Then overcome by a troublesome insomnia, he abandon himself in spite of his resolve, after some useless struggles, to the manipulation which will be followed by sleep. Others, who have declared that they are impregnable, wake up suddenly in the middle of the night, at the instant when the spasm is produced, ashamed to catch themselves in the act of manualizing themselves while asleep. ”

“ Since - a sufferer from spermatorrhoea aged 24 wrote to me “I could not resist these touches, do what I would, and that, in indulging in it without knowing it, I only incurred the dangers without obtaining the pleasure, after vain attempts I continued my manoeuvres while I was awake, in order at least to experience the pleasure which I felt but vaguely while asleep ” (Pouillet )

**Syndromes and Signs of Onanism** Pouillet has given a perfect description of the syndromes by which the experienced practitioner will infallibly recognize a masturbator, thereby demonstrating their importance. They are of two kinds *psychical* and *physical*.

**Psychical Syndromes** 1) *Intellectual* — The level of the understanding remains stationary in the child and in the young man, in the adult it descends. The intellectual faculties appear to be torpid. The memory is hesitating, untrustworthy, weak, and more or less lost, the power of association is diminished or wanting, the mind is wandering, and indolent in conception, attention is difficult and sometimes impossible. The result of it is a sensible inaptitude and disgust for the work and recreation of the intelligence, a laziness which nothing can overcome, and a profound dullness which one would be tempted to consider as meditation, if care be not taken.

2) *Moral* The character is always unequal, very often gloomy, sometimes sullen. The subject is irritable, morose and taciturn. He avoids the look, and believing that a scrutinizing eye is bent upon him, he is embarrassed and troubled before everybody, his bearing is awkward and his eyes lowered. Of an excessive timidity, akin to unsociableness, he is reserved and sly, untruthful and skilled in deception, sulky and obstinate, while his restlessness and melancholy are equalled only by his uncommunicative air. Full of distrust, he displays an exaggerated and overcharged modesty regarding genital matters, of which he professes complete ignorance. Without any passion for the pleasures and amusements of his age, he loves and seeks for solitude beyond measure, or is only happy in the company of an intimate friend, that is to say of an accomplice. His feeling of attachment is weak, in course of time it

grows weaker and finally disappears. The masturbator then becomes a creature void of affection, disgusted with the world, full of aversion for others, of contempt for women, and of indifference towards his family, in one word becomes a perfect egotist.

**Physical Syndromes** 1) *Local* In the child, the sexual organs have a precocious development, their proportions are larger than is suitable to their age, the penis is projecting and covered with hair in subjects of 13 and even of 11 years of age, it is also longer and thicker, and, together with the scrotum and testicles, is more voluminous than it ought to be, the prepuce ceases to cover the gland, which is generally pale and withered

Masturbation hastens the commencement of puberty, just as nitrogenized ground and the heat of conservatories causes plants to bloom at an early period

In the adolescent and in the young man, as well as in the adult, the spermatic glands are heavy, and contained in soft, flaccid, relaxed and pendent testicles. The penis is often elongated and of a surprising size, but wrinkled and decrepit when in a state of repose, and above all displays that grossly pyriform appearance, which has caused specialists to term it the club-shaped penis, because the rounded and apparently hypertrophied gland, has almost the head of a mace, the handle of which would be represented by the rest of the virile member. The genital parts and those which are adjacent to them, the pubes, the upper part of the thighs and the perineum are the seat of a sudoral moisture which, if not constant, is at least very frequent

2) *General* The whole organism of the masturbator displays, in a variable degree, a weakness, an exhaustion, and a kind of consumption, we might justly make use, to describe this special appearance, of a happy phrase of Pro-

fessor Bouchardt and say that it is plunged in physiological poverty More or less developed than the laws of growth require, and possessing a thinness which is the more remarkable as it often coincides with a great voracity of appetite the subject displays a dorsal bend and, as though he could scarcely hold up his head lets it hang forwards and a little to the right or left His legs are weak and trembling as he walks, and give to the masturbator a want of assurance in his gait riding fencing, dancing and running are difficult for him, and besides, all bodily labour occasions him a profound weariness He is extremely sensitive to cold, and disagreeably affected by the variations of temperature which only exasperate the condition of his nerves which are morbidly excitable and more affected at nightfall All his physical being, like his intelligence, is in a state of languor weakness and indolence extending sometimes to torpor His flesh is flaccid his skin soft his voice gruff and hoarse and his breath is usually short and bad

His facial appearance has something special about it, which in truth it is difficult to express but easy enough to recognize, and which results from a combination of the following characteristics the features are dull and have but little expression the forehead is frequently the seat of cicatricial spots or pustules of acne in evolution, the eye lids which are red at the edges, are thick, congested and fastened together at night and when waking up, and surrounded with a lilac, bluish, purple circle or edge the eyes, the look of which is languid, dull and turned away are cast down, cloudy, dull buried in their orbits and full of tears the pupils are greatly dilated and turned a little outwards or inwards the lips are discoloured and the complexion is pale, livid, unhealthy and sometimes cadaverous looking and lead-coloured »

Pouillet's syndromes and signs are exactly true I remember that at a school, Dr Bouisson, one of the celebrities of the Faculté de Médecine de Montpellier, diagnosed exactly, in the school infirmary, the pupils who had masturbated themselves during the night

**Comparison of the effects of coition and Onanism.** To thoroughly compare the effects and consequences of Onanism, it is enough to show the enormous differences which exist between pollution and coition Under whatever form, and in whatever manner it is brought about, pollution never produces such voluptuous effects as normal coition The erection is not spontaneous at the sight of a woman who excites the genital sense The genital organ is drawn out of its torpor by movements and frictions more or less brutal, which are necessary to bring the blood into the cavernous bodies

When erection is once obtained, the masturbator, in order to bring about ejaculation, is obliged to concentrate his mind, and to strain his memory, " recalling to his brain, by the force of his will, remembrances which may assist the birth and development of an orgasm necessary for his intended act, he brings together and groups the elements of the powerful excitation which he must conceive within himself by his own resources And he then presents these materials to his imagination, which he incites, urges and stretches to a prodigious extent, which he forces, in one word, to create for him the most extraordinarily obscene pictures, the most curiously lascivious groups, the most strangely lewd scenes » (Pouillet )

It can be conceived that the intelligence thus overdriven finally becomes jaded and at length deteriorates, as is shown by remarkable disorders

As regards the voluptuous sensation of ejaculation, it is

far less in the onanist, whatever may be the means of pollution employed than in normal coition. What a difference between the pleasure given by the natural ejaculation of a coition performed with the beautiful body of a woman whom we hold in our arms and cover with caresses, while the gland of the penis that powerful erogenous focus feels the titillations and the soft and gentle friction of the woman's vagina which compresses it and follows it in all its movements compared with the artificial ejaculation obtained by the use of the fist, or a ring, or whatever engine is employed by the masturbator. The latter, in order to attain the venereal orgasm, is obliged to graduate the scale of his masturbatory operations and to invent something new and stronger. When the rubbing and friction with the hand becomes insufficient he is at length obliged to employ roughened rings gloves made of hair etc. I knew a masturbator who only obtained ejaculation by placing his penis when in erection on a table and by rubbing the gland with a brush which soldiers use for polishing the buttons of their uniform.

In the case of subjects whose gland is clipped by the prepuce and whose frenum or fillet is short the brutality of the manœuvre frequently causes surgical affections of the penis.

When these manœuvres no longer produce the desired effect the masturbator then thinks of making use of the canal of the urethra, and masturbates himself with a penholder, a pencil with a rounded end a hair-pin etc. Now the mere passage of an india rubber *sonde* produces in a healthy man a sensation of pain followed by erection. It is this sensation of pain, which the urethral onanist transforms into a keen pleasure which as may be easily conceived gives a terrible shock to the nervous system.

D Hammond quotes several characteristic cases of this

“ I have been able to observe several cases in which there has been masturbation through the urethra, masturbation through the gland no longer being sufficient to produce the orgasm. In *all these* the habit had been adopted very early, and the act had very often been performed several times a day before the gland lost its sensibility. In one of these cases, the patient, a young man aged 23, had been excessively addicted to onanism ever since he had reached his ninth year. When he was about 15, the sensibility of the gland was almost extinct, and although emissions could be produced, the voluptuous sensations were almost nil, and the erection was very imperfect. He then began to make use of a pen-holder of hardened indiarubber, which he thrust 5 or 7 centimètres into his urethra. At the end of 3 or 4 years, this expedient had to be abandoned: the mucous membrane had in its turn lost its sensibility and become thick. He then provided himself with an india-rubber *sonde*, N° 3, which having a diameter inferior to that of the pen-holder, could be introduced with greater ease. This instrument sufficed for him for some years, but the process at length lost its efficacy ”

“ Another case did not have such a happy termination. The subject was a patient who had masturbated himself for a longer period than he could remember, and who, while yet a child, had been made use of by his nurse (a mulatto woman) to satisfy her sexual desires. It frequently occurred that he experienced the orgasm 12 or even more times a day, but after the age of puberty, when the ejaculations commenced to appear, he became a little less addicted to his vice. Nevertheless, as far back as he could remember, a day had never elapsed without 2 or 3 masturbations.

At the age of 21, he was still addicted to this practice, although he found in it only a very moderate amount of

satisfaction for his erections were very feeble, and the ejaculations were accompanied with scarcely any pleasure

He then began to make experiments upon himself and soon obtained an increase of pleasure by the use of hair gloves which he wore, and which through their roughness, served to produce a sufficient degree of sensibility in the gland but this proceeding finally became worn out and he did not know how to procure for himself, the pleasure for which he yearned day and night

In the end he thought he might be able to obtain good results by greasing his hand with a strong ammoniacal ointment He carried out his idea immediately and, finding it to be a good one, he adopted it being however generally obliged to increase the strength of the liniment by adding to it a certain quantity of ammonia The sensation produced by this agent upon the gland far from being painful to him, was the principal source of his pleasure but the local effects were of a nature to occasion him some disquietude From the beginning there was an inflammation, together with a considerable amount of swelling and redness and each time that he made use of this means the symptoms of serious disorder increased

These were not confined to the penis in the slightest degree, for there was a high fever, and certain cerebral troubles consisting of hallucinations of the sight and hearing Finally, a large abscess was produced which covered the whole anterior surface of the gland and which in the end caused gangrene of the prepuce and of a great part of the gland, but the production of the orgasm by one means or another, had become an absolute necessity for the patient, and in spite of the fact that a gangrenous ulcer extended over more than a third of the penis, he continued to apply the ammonia in a concentrated solution to the inflamed surface and obtained pleasure from it (D Hammond *De*



*l'impuissance sexuelle chez l'homme et chez la femme.* Paris, L. Bataille et Cie, 1890 )

Finally the patient being unable to relinquish his vicious practices committed suicide.

Besides the nervous shock, which in the end renders the patient neurasthenic, account must also be taken of the continual loss of the sperm in masturbation. When the act is not repeated too frequently, this loss does not afford any great danger to the adult, but it is not the same with the child, for in his case the sperm is a humour rich in materials, the formation of which only takes place *at the expense* of the nutrition of the other tissues of the body, and the *withdrawal* of which stops the development of the body.

From these different points of view, isolated or solitary onanism is more dangerous than pollution performed by another person. The nervous loss is less considerable in the second case than in the first.

The great danger arising from masturbation proceeds from the force of habit, which will cause the onanist to repeat his pollution 3, 4, 5, even 10 times (of which instances are to be found). It ceases only when the genital organ is jaded and breaks down like a foundered horse.

Cotition, on the other hand, requires the presence and the consent of a woman. Now, unless he comes across a Messalina, the debauchee runs the risk of meeting with a rebuff. If, in order to obtain greater accommodation and compliance, the debauchee repairs to a brothel, the question of money then comes into play. A man has not the time or the means to go to a brothel every evening, and after several orgies there, the body is wearied out, and the purses below are emptied (as well as the one above) unless it is an exceptional case of an erotic subject who has at his disposal a robust constitution, and a large balance at his bank.

We must conclude therefore that if the man who copulates in a normal manner, grows wearied and finally becomes *blasé* and impotent, the onanist destroys his intelligence and wears out his body and that one day or another he will become the prey of a serious affection which will carry the patient off

**Maladies produced or maintained by Pollution** The maladies produced or maintained by habitual pollution under whatever form it is displayed are as numerous as the causes of onanism. As we are not giving here a course of lectures on pathology we shall content ourselves with enumerating them according to Pouillet. According to him onanism is sometimes the direct and sometimes the indirect causes of the following affections

### I Local and neighbouring Affections

*Paraphimosis Balano posthitis Simple urethritis Affections of the Prostate Ejaculations tinged with Blood Funicular and Testicular Pains Orchitis Atrophy of the Testicle*

*Cystitis Vesical Catarrh Incontinence of urine Strangury Dysury Strictures of the urethra Traumatism of the prostate and bladder Wounds of the Penis Gangrene (through the application of rings or of constrictory bands) Varicocele Relaxation of the Scrotum*

*Spermatorrhœa Hypersecretion of Cowper's glands Temporary Impotence Temporary Infecundity*

Here is an already well filled list. It includes almost the whole of the maladies of the genito urinary organs, and among this nomenclature must be specially mentioned spermatorrhœa and *genuine impotence* which is generally the determination of it. This must be distinguished

from *temporary impotence* resulting from the jaded condition of the genital organ, which becomes temporarily incapable of erection, and which finally recovers its vigour after a more or less prolonged period of repose “ This incapacity of erection is not impotence, any more than the incapacity of movement is paralysis. ”

“ Masturbation reacts upon the entire man upon his natural constitution, upon his intelligence and upon his spirit. We must therefore expect to find in the following examination numerous and varied disorders, affections and troubles relating to almost all the organs and all the functions of the economy ” (Pouillet )

Pouillet sums them up as follows.

## II General Affections

### *A Consequences on the Innervation*

1 *Maladies of the central and peripheral nervous masses*

*Nervosism of a physical order* Sensorial troubles (amaurosis and various serious affections of the eyes) Infantile eclampsia Essential contraction of the lower limbs Chorea Epilepsy

*Nervosism of a psychical order* Hypochondria Idiocy. Mental Alienation Satyriasis Aversion for Women

*Maladies of Nervous masses with anatomical lesions* Cerebral Maladies Congestion and Neuralgia Chronic Meningitis. Spinal Diseases Congestive Irritation Neuralgia. Spinal Congestion Chronic meningomyelitis Locomotor ataxy

## III Consequences on the other Apparatus

*Anaemia Cardio-pulmonary spasm Organic diseases of the heart*

*Nervous cough Aphony, Granular Laryngitis Chronic Bronchitis Pulmonary Phthisis Gastralgia Dyspepsia Consumption Rachitis Vertebral Caries*

To these general causes let us add that pollution has the most harmful influence on the course of all diseases, without exception that it often causes a mortal termination through relapses which it induces, and that in all cases it renders convalescence long and painful. Cases are quoted of death occurring after amputation owing to a gangrene resulting in the wound after untimely masturbations.

**Observations upon Pouillet's classification of the consequences of Onanism.** We shall find the same fault with Pouillet's classification of consequences of onanism as we did with the table of causes. With reference to the latter, we asked ourselves if certain mental diseases were an effect or a cause of onanism. We shall put the same question again when we see Idiocy, Satyriasis, Locomotor Ataxy, etc. figuring in the nomenclature of consequences. In many diseases onanism is a cause and not an effect, as the doctors of former times Tissot, Deslandes, etc., believed it to be. A too exclusive opinion towards which Pouillet naturally leans. Certain observations above upon pollution must have occasioned the remark that the effect has often been diagnosed for the cause.

Under reserve of what I have just said, I have brought together a certain number of observations which have appeared to me to be the most characteristic. But, before doing so I ask the reader's permission to narrate to him in alexandrines the consequences of onanism.

### **The Consequences of Onanism and Poetry**

All Masturbators have a lengthened face  
The keen remorse in which their soul is plunged  
Depicted is within their haggard eyes

A smile is never seen to lighten up their looks,  
 A deadly pallor with a feverish flush  
 Alone betray the fires which rage within ,  
 Their heart always the prey of new desires,  
 Deaf to the voice of sport and joy  
 At them doth Love discharge his darts in vain,  
 In vain does Venus's self reveal her charms ,  
 Unmoved they see her heavenly form revealed  
 On foul delights their mind doth ever feed,  
 Which serve to fire the never dying flame  
 Of Onan's impure crime within their soul  
 And thus the torch of youth too soon is spent  
 And sinks into the darkness of the tomb.

**Selected observations of Pollutions relating to the Consequences of Onanism** “ J I Closs, ” according to Deslandes, “ speaks of a young man addicted to masturbation and afflicted with a urethral running, which he had neglected for the space of six months, because he did not suffer at all from it. However, the excreted matter becoming acrid, green and yellow, the patient was compelled to apply to Closs, to whom he swore that he had never seen a woman in his life. This led the practitioner to consider this urethritis as a consequence of the masturbation in which the patient had indulged before he attained puberty ”

‘ I knew, says Peraube a young man, who having had the misfortune to contract the habit of masturbating himself when he was 16 years old, was unable, a year afterwards, to indulge in this vice without contracting a running which caused him great suffering. After experiencing two of them, which he was able to stop by a suitable diet, and above all by refraining from any touching on his genital parts, he cured himself entirely of this deplorable vice, being terrified at the consequences which might result from it ”

“ Lallemand speaks of manualists affected by retention

of the urine owing to a swelling of the urethra through which it was necessary to pass a *sonde*, and points out among others, a case of prostatitis terminating in suppuration across the perineum and the effects of which its possessor felt all his life

Leroy d Etiolles points out as the result of masturbatory manœuvres a mucoso-purulent urethritis, accompanied by a prostatic hypertrophy and by vesical catarrh, in a subject aged 15

He mentions, besides the story of a young man who was affected with retention of urine attributed at first to a vesical calculus and which was afterwards recognized as symptomatic of a considerable hypertrophy of the prostate engendered by the excessive practice of masturbation

Tissot notes the fact of a young man, barely 16 who had given himself up to genital abuse with such eagerness that he only excreted blood instead of sperm, the emission of it resulted in great suffering, and in the phlegmasy of all the genito urinary organs

D Deladauterie has reported the observation of a young manualist, with short and painful erections, who in his pollutions evacuated only half clotted blood, of a blackish or yellowish colour, the quantity of which was sometimes a spoonful

‘ I have had occasion ’ — says Naula — ‘ to attend a young man of 17, who, having repeated his manœuvres so frequently as to obtain twelve ejaculations in the course of a day, had latterly evacuated a quantity of bright red blood through his penis in spite of general and local baths, of emollient drinks, of leeches, and of emollient cataplasms etc an orchitis supervened, accompanied by sharp pains in the loins and a violent dysury ’

I have mentioned myself — writes Naula again —

“ the fact of a soldier, aged 27 having never, according to his reiterated statements, known a woman, who, in consequence of unbridled masturbation, was affected with a running This blenorrhagia had persisted for more than three years, at the commencement the patient even evacuated blood, later on, at the slightest fatigue, the running ceased and the testicle became inflamed Since that period, alternate urethrites and orchites had always existed. This soldier succumbed ”

Lallemand says - “ Several of my patients had experienced veritable acute inflammations of the testicles in consequence of manœuvres repeated with a kind of frenzy , and one of them had not yet reached puberty when this symptom occurred ”

Besides orchitis we must also reckon the pains through the length of the cord and in the testicles, of which Lallemand, Naula, Deslandes, Doussin-Dubreuil and many other specialists speak And finally, in rare cases, atrophy of the seminal gland has proceeded from self-produced pollution

A Schwartz reports in his thesis “ The testicles sometimes become atrophied. I have seen a young soldier in whom these parts, in consequence of this vice, had been reduced to the size of a haricot-bean ”

Brodie relates the story of a young man aged 20, who entered St. George's Hospital in 1805 for pains in the left testicle This organ, the size of which was one third less than that of the other, was flaccid and soft, and before it became atrophied had been the seat of a very a painful swelling The patient, who presented that gloomy and melancholy character which is so frequent among manualists, had never received any blow on the testicle, had never had any blennorrhagia and confessed, moreover, that having been addicted to voluntary pollution for the past

five years, he rarely remained a day without masturbating himself at least once

‘ Bordeaux Jan 30<sup>th</sup> 1859 I am 29 years of age and wish to get married, feeling an inclination towards that superior social and moral condition Unfortunately, I have contracted the habit of solitary onanism, I practised it very frequently when I was between 17 and 23 years of age diminishing it until I was 25 and very rarely since I ceased from it entirely about six months ago owing to the small amount of pleasure I have had from it during the last four or five years, and to its leaving me on the contrary a certain feeling of disgust I have never had any sexual intercourse When in a state of intoxication, I entered a brothel on two different occasions but I was unable to do anything although the presence of women under other circumstances has caused me to enter on erection spontaneously

“Your book *Du Celibat* having inspired me with fears of impotence, I do not wish to enter the bonds of matrimony without having your opinion on this point

A supplementary information gave me to understand that he has had somewhat frequently involuntary seminal losses during the night, of which three or four were in the course of December Spontaneous erections have taken place during the day more frequently than when he used to masturbate himself This habit has originated from the isolation in which he was kept until he was 21, and from compulsory continence Residing then in warm countries, he had been but little attracted by women of colour From this had arisen his indifference which had been maintained by onanism and his disgust at prostitution

‘ A young man had indulged excessively in masturbation between the ages of 15 and 18 repeating it as many as fifteen times a day As serious troubles then resulted



from it to his intelligence and memory, he stopped. Having recovered after two years of absolute continence, he entered a merchant's house where he soon imagined, owing to certain attentions, that his master's wife was in love with him. It was sufficient for him to receive a look or a glance from her for him to enter on erection, and to have an immediate spontaneous ejaculation. Besides this he was tormented with frequent nocturnal pollution which obliged him to resign his appointment. Another young man, after similar excesses which he had given up for eighteen months, became desperately in love with a young lady. As soon as he found himself in her presence or her image presented itself to his mind, he entered on erection, and the mere rubbing of his trousers or his shirt produced immediate ejaculation. He even had this seminal loss through merely touching the beloved one's hand."

Impotence, on the other hand, resulted from it in the case of a young lawyer of the same age. He had been unhealthy during his childhood and since then had been exclusively addicted to this manner of onanism, repeating it two or three times a night after he reached the age of puberty. He became an orphan when he was 23, and married a cousin-german who had been almost a sister to him. Although he had gone through his period of military service in the cavalry, this young man, pale, delicate and effeminate, confessed that he had only succeeded three times in a complete intromission, during the first year, without being able to obtain ejaculation. He said that as he did not feel such a keen sensation through the rubbing of the penis in the vagina as on the sheets, his erection subsided two or three minutes after intromission.

Since these a similarly unsuccessful connection took place every twenty or thirty days, exclusively in the morning, provoked by the spontaneous swelling of the penis,

although he did not feel any desire when he went to bed, and he fell asleep although he was not fatigued. He obtained relief only by rubbing his penis against his wife if a passive pollution did not take place the next day.

On the other hand, a platonic erotism is produced in others. Such was the case with a youth aged 20 addicted since the age of 8 or 9 to solitary masturbation when sitting or lying down and without pollution until he was 13. Since then he had indulged in it until he was exhausted. Later on he did so at intervals of one or three months in length during which he indulged in it from two to five times a day after which he remained quiet under the influence of remorse and of his religious principles, only to relapse into it again. Most frequently he prolonged it by immersing himself in lascivious dreams, and moderating the movements of his hand, so as to retard the moment of the spasm.

These forms of manual onanism being the most pernicious, it is not surprising that serious symptoms were developed after the age of 16. When he was sent to college he ceased from it for seven months, only to begin again with renewed fury, repeating it as many as eight times a day during the holidays. A serious attack of dyspepsia compelled him to leave college, and under the influence of the anti spasmodic treatment of four doctors he abstained from his vice from October 1885, until the following August. But there was already a weakening of all his faculties: loss of memory, dementia, restlessness, loss of strength, melancholy, and above all an erotic mania for a girl named Louise aged 16 his neighbour, in whose presence he remained dumb and impotent.

A young and handsome officer aged 32, fair and slightly effeminate the bearer of a noble name, came and accused himself on Feb 5<sup>th</sup> 1885, of not having been able to deflower his young wife after 18 months of marriage,

owing to his want of erection, in spite of their reciprocal affection. Erection, however, was produced by the loving embrace and touches of his wife whom he had habituated to these manœuvres in order to produce it, but it subsided as soon as he attempted intromission, in spite of the stratagems he employed. Neither the size of his penis, which was somewhat small, nor the narrowness of her vagina was the cause, it was to be attributed only to his habits of solitary masturbation until he was 22 years of age, for he was impotent even before his marriage, in some rare attempts which he had with prostitutes. His intercourse consisted of a kind of onanism performed with one another, for intromission, which was impossible at the beginning, has always been incomplete since."

Other analogous cases may be quoted, and in spite of the sad results of the preceding cases, how is it possible to put aside those who are making enquiries regarding marriage, when the latter is projected or upon the point of being concluded? A young man, aged 27, who was on the point of being married and felt doubts about himself, asked me what precautions were required so that he might not fail of success. Brought up in a remote provincial château, until he was 20, up to that period he had known nothing else but masturbation. Placed in a preparatory school in the neighbouring town, he was soon initiated by his fellow-pupils how to spend his leave-out days. Desirous of doing the same as they and not knowing how to set to work, he provided himself with one of them. But his entrance was so brutal that his victim swore that he would have no more to do with him. It was then the turn of another whom he kept for six months, all going on for the best. A blennorrhagia separated them, and after that he resumed his old habits, except on rare occasions when he entered a brothel.

He was a strong, tall youth, rather stiff and affected His parents had arranged for a marriage for him with the heiress of a neighbouring castle who was 26 years of age After refusing various offers she declared when she saw him that she would have no other husband The marriage was to take place in a fortnight

— Does your future wife please you and has she made any impression on your feelings in your private interviews?

— She is rather thin and I prefer plump women Her presence leaves me absolutely cold, and I have not yet been alone with her

— Does the thought of her produce any erections at night?

— None at all I have nocturnal losses, and at times I have recourse to masturbation

— Do you think of that? At the time of your marriage that is to invite failure, you must abstain from it absolutely

This youth, libidinous and salacious to an excess, wished to know above all how he should proceed with a virgin, in order to surmount the hymeneal barrier which he expected to meet with, and feared that his erection was insufficient for that object after the numerous failures he had met with among chance prostitutes He had never made a conquest When I examined him, his penis which was very retracted, did not project more than four or five centimètres, with a voluminous and club shaped gland In answer to my questions, he replied to my astonishment, that it measured on the other hand 16 centimètres when in erection His scrotum was flaccid and pendent The best aphrodisiac for him is to go to bed naked *bareback* as well as his companion this immediate contact and above all the passing of the woman's hand over his *mammæ*,

which are almost imperceptible, brings him to a state of erection more certainly than any other caress. His effeminate nature is thus shown, and he even confesses to have received formerly proposals of a pederastic nature. I repeated my advice to him to abstain from onanism, to employ local douches, and told him what precautions to take to facilitate his entry ”

“ A youth, aged 17, wrote to me that he had indulged in masturbation during the past ten years, so far as to repeat it when alone from two to four times a day for four years. His stature also had displayed a sudden growth; there were circles round his sunken eyes, and his appetite was voracious. His intelligence diminished each day more and more in spite of his sleeping well and being relatively in a state of good health ”

“ Paris Feb. 1<sup>th</sup> 1886 Ever since the age of 11 (I am now 18), I have indulged in solitary manual onanism, on an average twice a day. It must be attributed to a very great physical and moral precocity, and especially to the rather solitary life which I have led since my infancy. It has had the following results: an invincible disinclination to work both in mind and body, gloomy ideas, disgust and general pessimism, a gradual weakening of the memory, and, I fear, a profound and irremediable decadence of the intellectual faculties

“ Like Malfilatre, I succumb while dreaming of women. I have made repeated attempts to give up this vice in vain, but if I do not succeed in this final effort, *I know what remains for me to do*

“ Normal intercourse is the remedy, you will tell me.

“ Does it not occur to you that, being of a timid, gloomy and very emotional character, I am reduced to impotence when I try them, and that ridicule and shame are the result? ”

Rognetta also says that he has observed a young Italian, aged 19 who had but very feeble sight as a result of daily repeated masturbation, and who was also desperately fond of pederasty. The exact observations of Hutchinson show that all genital excesses, just like sexual abuses in man result in the appearance of floating spots and even of lesions of the choroid and retina. Amblyopia was developed in a boy aged 5 in consequence of masturbation. This was shown by the cure of the phimosis which resulted from it. The sight soon afterwards returned to its normal state.

Ferster has observed very obstinate cases of chronic catarrh of the eye, in youths between 12 and 20 years of age, and established the fact that manual onanism was the sole cause of it. These inflammations are not rare, according to Dr Landesberg, and he gives several personal observations coinciding in the two sexes, with acne or pimples on the face.

*Here is rather a convincing observation of it.* "A young man who was addicted to masturbation at the age of 15 and who practised it frequently until he was 23, says Hoffmann was subject to such a weakness of the head and eyes that the latter were often seized with violent spasms at the moment of emission. When he wished to read, a giddiness, like that of intoxication appeared and the pupils were very dilated with excessive pains at the back of the eye. Although he ate with pleasure, he was reduced to a state of extreme thinness, and fell into a kind of intoxication after his meals.

' A man, aged 30, complained of pains along his spine especially when he bent down. His legs were so feeble that he could not remain upright. The weakening of his memory rendered him stupid, his sight was obscured and his thinness extreme. After concealing for a long time the

cause of his illness, he blushinglly confessed to Weizpremi that it was masturbation, and through a suitable treatment he recovered a few months afterwards. ”

“ Addicted from the most tender age to solitary masturbation, the son of an African cavalry officer continued to indulge in it at college, where he entered as a foundation scholar, and also during his time of probation in the Civil Service, up to about 23 years of age. There resulted from it various nervous symptoms, pains and weakness in the loins, so that he was unable to walk and perform the duties of his profession. When he was 24, he tried to give it up, and, in order to assure himself of his virility, he had recourse to prostitution. He persisted in this more and more, up to two visits a week, in spite of incomplete erections and numerous failures, and of frequent involuntary seminal losses which supervened as soon as he abstained from it. It was therefore the continuation of the intersexual manual onanism, as in the preceding case, bringing about such a moral and physical depression, that after having consulted on this account different physicians in the course of his professional journeys, he came from the Nord, in August 1889, to ask if it was allowable for him to marry.

He is a young fellow, 27 years of age, short, thin, delicate and very impressionable. Melancholy, fastidious and lacking in courage, although he lives with his mother, he is evidently but little suited for the marriage he desires. ”

Von Swieten has in vain employed all the ressources of medicine upon a young man who had been attracted by masturbation, to cure uncertain pains with a feeling sometimes of heat, sometimes of cold throughout his body, especially in the lower part of the loins. A masturbator wrote to Tissot: “ I have extraordinarily weak nerves, my hands have no power, they are always trembling and in a continual sweat, with violent stomach-aches, pains in

the arms and legs, sometimes in the loins and chest'

"A patient of Olivier (of Angers) commenced masturbation at from 17 to 20, a weakness then caused him to renounce it. Two blennorrhagias having supervened after sexual excesses, he voluntarily resumed onanism when he was 25, and the result of it was the appearance of paralytic symptoms, which reduced him to the use of crutches at the age of 29. He lived in this melancholy state of complete impotence to the age of 50, with his intellectual faculties perfectly intact as his easy and agreeable conversation showed.

A student aged 26 at the *Faculté des Lettres* at Bordeaux, relates that in December 1886 as the results of a cold two years before he was attacked with violent erratic pains in the loins and arms, which then became located in the right side of the thorax so that he was unable to lie down. A year after, they became more severe in the head and legs, with involuntary tremblings and contractions which were not diminished by sulphurous baths taken at the doctor's orders. They continued so severely for a time, especially in the legs and along the spinal marrow, that he could not lie down upon his back.

The cause of this state is assuredly masturbation' he says, "practised very frequently at college, when I was between 15 and 19 years of age, and sometimes with fury. Intercourse with women from that time until I was 22, has stopped this fatal habit not completely however, for I sometimes indulge in it still and I need unheard of efforts to extirpate this vice which I look upon as a mental disease. The reading of your book by showing me the terrible consequences of it, has cured me. Please accept, together with my thanks, my humble congratulations on your eminently moral work, which has rendered me personally the greatest service, and which ought to be in everybody's hands.



Rare as the tetanic form is, Dupuytren has met with one case of it in September, 1883, at the Hôtel-Dieu in a youth aged 20, addicted to unbridled masturbation. He was suddenly seized with paralysis, like a lightning flash, being deprived of all power of movement. Thence came an atrophy of the limbs more advanced on the right side than on the left. His rage for masturbation was regarded as the sole cause of the evil by the great surgeon.

“A child from Lyons, aged from 6 to 7 years .. polluted himself so often that the slow fever which resulted from it soon carried him off. His mania for this act was so great that he could not be prevented from it to the last day of his life. When it was represented to him that he was hastening his death, he consoled himself by saying that he would go the sooner to meet his father who had died some months previously” (Tissot.)

“I have seen” says Professor Pinel “a young man attacked with an ataxic fever, entirely exhausted, and whose mania for onanism had carried him so far that on the sixth day of his illness he still tried to provoke his withered organs, while death was announced by the most sinister warnings.”

“A boy of 12 or 13 years of age, strong and robust, became of an extreme susceptibility through indulging in masturbation. When he was 15, fits of epilepsy suddenly occurred, coinciding with the first quarter of the moon. They supervened all at once, the patient fell backwards uttering a cry, and was seized with general convulsions with open, fixed, injected eyes, dilated pupils, etc. When the attack passed away, he remained overcome with fatigue for the rest of the day.

This young man was, like the majority of masturbators, very impressionable, being vexed and flying into a passion at the slightest pretext. An appropriate treatment to-

gether with the cessation of the habit no doubt — was sufficient to diminish the attacks in the course of six months and, 1 year after, they had disappeared. The cure appeared to be complete when the emotion of pleasure at seeing his mother again, from whom he had been separated for two years, produced a relapse. The preceding means were followed with the same success, and entering a commercial life, and travelling a great deal the young man has had no further attack up to his 27, year he then married and continued to enjoy perfect health.

The illustrious Zimmermann has seen a young man, aged 23 become epileptic after weakening his body with frequent masturbation. Every time that he had a nocturnal pollution, voluntary or involuntary he fell into a complete fit. He gave up this practice for a time and had no more fits but falling back into his old habits, the epileptic fits returned with more violence and he died of them.

The result was more happy in the case of a man aged 31 who had been affected for several years with epileptic fits of the most violent kind, together with a complication of furious mania necessitating the employment of the strait waistcoat. He threw himself with a kind of rage upon the keepers and would have dashed his head against the walls if he had not been restrained during his attacks.

‘The confession made by the patient of the coincidence of his epileptic attacks with his onanistic habits, says D Morel, caused me immediately to direct all my efforts towards his moralization. In the painful practice of mental maladies I have rarely obtained a more consolatory result. The attacks diminished in frequency and intensity with the gradual disappearance of his fatal habits. His intellectual faculties recovered a new energy, and a trial of eighteen months enabled me to establish a cure which has not been

belied six years afterwards, and has enabled him, when set at liberty, to fill an honourable position. ”

“ One of my fellow pupils, whom I had lost sight of for thirty years, came to see me one morning terribly alarmed at the state of his son, aged 16, whose life was despaired of owing to Pulmonary granulations

“ The eldest had died when he was 17 of mesenteric tuberculosis Having learnt that the only daughter of one of our mutual friends, who had been attacked with a similar affection after giving birth to her first child, had been happily restored through my care, he requested me with tears to go with him and visit this sole offspring of a most honourable name As I had reached like him that period of life when one sadly measures the road travelled through losses and dissappointments, I could not refuse him this affectionate proof of confidence. I found the existence of a Pulmonary granulations of the two lungs through those small disseminated rattlings, it was of a special character and left no ground for hope. It had shown itself three months previously at college, where the child had contracted the habit of masturbation like his elder brother He shortly succumbed, a victim of tuberculosis, without any apparent heredity, through manual onanism ”

“ A handsome youth, 22 years, of age, a strapping young fellow and of distinguished appearance, had indulged in masturbation from his fifteenth to his eighteenth year. After that he repaired to the brothels, and came out of them triumphantly His period of voluntary service, which he went through under the eyes of a tutor, obliged him to remain continent, and it was only owing to necessity that he had recourse again to relieving himself by merely rubbing himself on his bed. A conquest soon offered itself, and in spite of complete liberty of action, he remained bashful after four or five successive attempts He grew tired of it

and left her after a running which entailed continence upon him for about six months. Six weeks ago, he fell in love for the first time with a young girl who offered him all her favours in a meeting which he had with her in a carriage. He remained however paralysed at her side in spite of all the caresses and kisses which he lavished upon her to prove his love. He had no erection then although it is spontaneous, durable and persistent when he is alone. The central exaltation, joined with timidity and the abuse of onanism is the cause of this anomaly.

“ On Nov. 22<sup>nd</sup> 1888 a young pastry cook declared that he was impotent owing to excess of masturbation and women. he was 28 years of age very tall and thin and of a tabetic appearance. In support of this he showed several prescriptions from some of the best-known physicians in Lyons, and from so-called specialists in Paris, who had treated him with ergotine. As cold douches made him cough and gave him pains in his loins he took them warm etc etc.

An interrogatory revealed that there had been simple failures resulting from bad conditions. Thus he had met with a failure with a woman whom he had met upon the Boulevards the previous night. His disquietude and alarm were owing to this. He considered himself to be very foolish when I made him reveal it, owing to the swelling of an enormous penis which developed itself on inspection as far as ejaculation. A grave tuberculous heredity weighed upon this unhappy man.

It was the same with a poor crazed creature aged 30 tall and strong the issue of a neuropathic stock, living with his mother and an aunt who were still more nervous than himself, as he said. Enjoying a considerable fortune, he had never done anything except when he had served for a year as a volunteer in the cavalry. Absolutely given up to masturbation, and affected in consequence with

a chronic coryza with continuous running and nervous palpitations diagnosed as organic by a specialist, for want of knowing its cause he had never attempted coition for fear of failure. A waitress at Duval's having made eyes at him while she was serving his meals, he had fallen in love with her and asked if he could follow up the conquest. I encouraged him greatly in this idea as a means of curing him. His penis, which was turgescent and in semi-erection, bore all the characteristics of the masturbator by its exaggerated development, the gland in particular. He returned again six weeks later, saying that he had not dared and requesting other means of cure.

An identical example was communicated to me in 1885 by a Belgian aged about 23, having also gone through his period of military service as a non-commissioned officer. Absolutely given up to solitary masturbation, through fear of venereal diseases, of which he had heard his comrades complain, he was soon attacked with seminal losses almost every night, together with diarrhæa and coryza, accompanied with an abundant running from the nostrils. After having diminished and suspended the course of these seminal losses by cold baths and suppositories, I spoke to him about a mistress in order to stop them definitively.

He replied "*I have no more taste for women than a eunuch.* Lovely women, who ought to be my delight, inspire me only with profound disdain. If it were not for my affection, I should take pleasure in them, for at my age I ought to be eager enough. When I was in the regiment, a good meal at the non-commissioned officer's mess was enough to make me wild for onanism. It is quite the contrary at the present time."

## CHAPTER VI

### GENITAL ABUSES (CONTINUED) — ONANISM IN WOMAN

Frequency of Onanism in Women — Classification of the forms of Feminine Onanism — Vaginal Masturbation — Observations relating to various Instruments extracted from the Vaginas of Onanists

*A* Vagino uterine Masturbation

*B* Clitoridian Masturbation — Observations on Clitoridian Masturbation

*C* Urethral Masturbation — Observations on Urethral Masturbation Causes of Onanism in Women

*A* Physical Causes — *B* Social Causes — *C* Moral and Intellectual Causes

Observations relating to the causes of Feminine Onanism — The *Godemichets* of the Great Ladies of the French Court

Syndromes and Signs of Masturbation

Consequences of Onanism in Women — Affections resulting from Masturbatory Manœuvres in Women — *A* Local and adjacent — *B* General — Observations relating to the Consequences of Onanism

Treatment of Onanism in Women

**Frequency of Onanism in Women** The older authors Tissot Deslandes, and Lallemand, have scarcely studied Onanism except in the case of man and it is only by chance that we meet with a few observations in their works upon it as applying to women Pouillet is the first author to fill up this gap and from his researches he has

arrived at the following conclusion, " that the woman is devoted to manualisation more than the man, to which, on the one hand, she is led almost instinctively by the exquisite sensibility of her genital apparatus, and to which, on the other and she is urged by causes foreign to the other sex, hand with the more power as her will is feeblar and has not the force necessary to resist it. " (Pouillet.)

**Classification of the forms of Feminine Onanism** The same author establishes the following great divisions, according to the anatomical configuration of the genital organs

- A *Vaginal Masturbation*
- B *Clitoridian Masturbation*
- C. *Urethral Masturbation*

A **Vaginal Masturbation.** This is practised either personally and in solitude, or in common It consists in manœuvres performed by the aid of stearine candles, round pieces of wood, *Godemichets* (especially for pollution in common), different vegetables, and among dressmakers in particular, of needle-cases

This kind of masturbation is very rare among children and is more peculiar to young girls who have been deflowered, grown-up women and widows It very often happens that in the erotic spasm, the hand thrusts the instrument of pollution too far forwards, so that the latter cannot afterwards be withdrawn except by a surgical operation

**Observations relating to the various instruments extracted from the vagina of Onanists** We have already, in the First Volume, quoted several observations relating to the various instruments

extracted from the vagina of women who employ this mode of masturbation

Let us complete them with a few other observations  
 "A dealer in aged 26, of a vigorous temperament used to pollute herself while her husband was away on guard. The instrument which she made use of broke, and the efforts which she made to withdraw it were useless. The warmth and humidity of her vagina soon caused the ingredients of which it was composed to melt. The obstruction of the vagina and the labia majora, pains in the matrix, heat of urine and tenesmus soon displayed themselves. Anxiety, fear and shame at her husband's return, could not but aggravate the patient's sufferings to such a degree that she decided to send for Madame H. a midwife. The latter, in the first instance embarrassed, wished to send for me to give my advice, but she then conceived the idea of taking a knitting-needle which she bent at one of its ends in the shape of a hook, and contrived, after much trouble to remove the foreign body piece by piece. Some emollient and resolvent injections, together with washings, and an antiphlogistic diet allayed the symptoms. The young woman promised not to repeat it. (Schwartz Thesis.)

Dupuytren, the celebrated surgeon of the Hôtel Dieu at Paris, had to extract not without trouble a pomade pot placed in the vagina. He also extracted from another girl a jam pot, slightly conical in shape and introduced by its smaller extremity. Ashamed and confused, she left the hospital the same day she had recovered without any accident.

A beer glass was extracted by D. Janssons of Ostend by the aid of the forceps acting as a lever to push it out. A large cork was extracted from another girl who had introduced in when making use of the neck of a bottle to satisfy the disorders of her imagination or rather of her depravity.



Erichsen, the celebrated English surgeon, withdrew a cedar wood pencil, five inches and a half in length, which was projecting on the right side of the belly. The woman, aged 28, said that she had introduced it in order to overcome a difficulty in urinating. The sudden arrival of somebody had caused her to leave hold of it. Symptoms of peritonitis supervened and caused her death four days after. The autopsy showed that this object, introduced into the vagina, had penetrated directly into the abdomen, perforating the coating near the insertion of the neck of the uterus.

There was a no less fatal issue in the case of a village girl who had introduced the stopper of a decanter. She displayed a tumour of the abdomen without explaining its cause, and they neglected to touch it or to examine her. An abscess formed and caused her death, the autopsy revealing the reason.

Peritonitis is the accident most to be feared from these vaginal manoeuvres, and death is the consequence of it. We give an observation as an example. "Being house-surgeon at the Hôtel-Dieu in 1869, I saw a woman, aged about 40, who requested to be admitted into that establishment. She was hardly able to express herself, and the expression of her face as well as her suffering, denoted almost complete imbecility. I had her placed in one of the wards under my care, where she died 3 or 4 days afterwards. She confessed to me that she had been for a long time addicted to vaginal masturbation. At the autopsy, I found a perforation of the vagina, the direct cause of the acute peritonitis which had carried off the patient, a perforation caused no doubt by the instrument which the woman made use of" (Pouillet.)

"A country woman, in the neighbourhood of Vichy, told me that she had often heard of, and seen herself, that the peasant women, to allay their desires, made use of

radishes carrots and leeks Oh pure morals of the country! ’

**Vagino-uterine Masturbation** This is the name given by Pouillet to a kind of special masturbation which is only to be found in India, Japan or China

“ They give rise to the venereal spasm by producing a slow and continuous shock of their genital nervous system by means of a special instrument It is composed of two metallic spheres — usually of gilded brass — excessively thin, the size of which is exactly similar and the volume perhaps less, but rarely more, considerable than that of a large pigeon’s egg

One of these spheres called the male contains a ball of solid that is to say massive, metal, which being a few millimetres smaller, can easily roll within its cavity, the other sphere is completely empty

If the two spheres are placed in juxtaposition within the hand a kind of shock is immediately felt a quivering sensation is experienced of considerable duration and which the slightest muscular contraction and the very least movement is enough to produce

The empty sphere is introduced into the vagina as far as the uterine neck, the other — the male — is put in after the first so as to touch it

The slightest movement of the thighs or pelvis displaces and brings into motion the solid body contained in the sphere the shock resulting from it amplified by the hollow sphere which vibrates in unison with it, is communicated to the nervous system of the vagina and uterus the venereal erethismus commences Any bringing of the apparatus into play then becomes useless the fibrillary contractions of the vulvo uterine conduit are sufficient to maintain the slow continuous, uniform vibration which soon brings

the woman to the *summum* of excitation and procures for her a spasm of delirious intensity

Some of these female masturbators, do not stop there, carried away by their morbid desires, they exceed even this extreme limit, and extend their frenzy so far as to wait for the rapid outbreak of hysteric, epileptic, or tetanic fits, during which they urgently demand the withdrawal from their organs of the instrument which has caused suffering to succeed to pleasure.

**Uterine Masturbation** The preceding mode of onanism is, as I have said, unknown among us, it must be confessed, however, that in our countries there are women whose depravity may be compared with that of the Japanese, Chinese and Hindoos « Some inveterate onanists, no longer experiencing any pleasure from vaginal manœuvres, or touches on the clitoris, have had, at the inspiration of lubricity, the idea of titillating the mucous membrane of the uterine cavity itself with the aid of foreign bodies ”(Pouillet )

If the vagina is sometimes curiously tolerant, since pessaries have been able to remain there and become incrustated without producing any notable symptoms, if even a bobbin of thread has remained for 22 years in the vagina of a woman who was able to marry twice and conceal the existence of this unusual engine from her two husbands, unfortunately it is not the same with the neck of the matrice. The latter is very sensitive, and the manœuvres of titillation and friction may occasion contusions echymoses, hemorrhages and losses Lisfranc met with a stalk of reed-grass in the matrice of a woman who had her menses

**B Clitoridian Masturbation.** This is performed either by the woman herself or by another The former is

the more frequent It is met with among women of all ages It consist in the tickling, titillation or rubbing, more or less frequent, of the back of the clitoris by the aid of the finger or of some instrument until the erotic spasm arrives

The hand is often replaced by particular movements  
 “ Thus it happens that the starting of a sewing machine, while sitting in a certain position, the rubbing of the thighs one against the other, or the rubbing of the genital parts against the corner of a piece of furniture, the arm of a chair, the edge of a mattress or pillow and lastly various contortions of the body, are sufficient for some women (Pouillet )

Here are some observations

**Observations on Clitoridian masturbation** “ The first, hardly one year old brought to me in July 1874 was already in the habit of practising onanism with a kind of fury through a peculiar manœuvre She urgently desired to be seated on the ground or on a chair and immediately indulged in movement of her pelvis and legs the result of which was to bring about the venereal spasm The direct experiment was made of placing her upon a foot stool She immediately began to make continuous backward and forward movements, according to her usual habit, for about two minutes, then throwing herself backward she twisted herself convulsively uttering reiterated little cries When she came to herself, she resumed her favourite position and was about to begin again when she was prevented from doing so which made her angry and caused her to weep A vulvury running existed as the cause and effect of this fatal habit

The second aged 19 months in November 1873, came from Epernay (Marne) She indulged in vicious manœuvres

not only with her hands but also with her thighs and legs to execute the rubbing necessary for the venereal spasm ”

“ A little girl, aged 4, indulged instinctively in masturbation. When this vice was discovered a year later, every means which prudence could suggest was employed in vain. If her hands were tied, she brought her thighs together and gave a movement to them or sat herself upon a piece of furniture suitable for the purpose. She was the slave of her organs without knowing the use of them, although they were as much developed as if she were 12 years of age, as were also her breasts. She succumbed to a marasmus at that age with all the characteristics of puberty, impressed with the decay of old age. Her hand was constantly upon her sexual parts and she died while masturbating herself ”

**Clitoridian masturbation performed by another.** It is performed either by men, or more rarely by women, or even by animals.

Of masturbation by men we shall only say this, that it is often employed by husbands or by lovers to *finish off* the woman after their ejaculation, or to hide their impotence if the ejaculation has taken place at the vestibule of the vulva, before the woman has experienced the erotic spasm.

“ A woman, aged 30, thin, profoundly gastralgic and neuropathic. She was married when she was 19, she had a child at the commencement although her husband defrauded, not wishing to have children before a certain age. Attributing this unexpected pregnancy to the fact that the fraud with the bringing together of the genital organs was not safe, he resolved not to use this method any more, but, being very lustful by nature, he practised such frequent and varied manœuvres upon his wife with his fingers, that he ended by causing her a nervous erethismus extending

to the most painful general neuropathy As for himself when he became over excited by the venereal orgasm in his wife extended to the utmost limits he satisfied himself alone or exacted from her the performance of this ignoble service, etc (Bergeret *Des fraudes dans l'accomplissement des fonctions genitales*)

**Bestial masturbation** This method of masturbation is much more frequent than is supposed among prostitutes and women of light character who carefully train their pet dogs to tickle their vulva But this is no longer onanism but a mixture of saphism and bestiality, the more so that owing to the position which they adopt it may happen (and in fact it does happen sometimes) that the lap dog when violently excited, cannot contain himself and puts something else instead of his tongue into the vulva which is presented to him

**Urethral masturbation** Through the practice of clitoridian masturbation it sometimes happens that the urinary meatus, which is a near neighbour of the clitoris is excited and is frequently in its turn the seat of manoeuvres performed with the end of the finger From this it is an easy step to the introduction of foreign bodies with which the meatus can be more easily tickled than with the finger

Sometimes the child not daring to go beyond the obstacle of the hymen, makes use of the meatus and introduces into it either a hair-pin, or a needle or an ivory pen holder and all kinds of objects

### **Observations on Urethral masturbation**

We have given in the 'Ethnology' some observations relating to the introduction of different objects into the femi

nine urethra, an organ the great dilatability of which we have pointed out Let us quote a few fresh ones from Garnier.

“ An Italian girl, at Padua, while masturbating herself with a bone needle, let it fall into her bladder It could not be extracted till eight months after, by the operation of incision, which was necessary for its extraction. Death resulted from it on the third day

It was a bone needle also, fusiform in shape and 11 centimètres long, which a washer-woman of Lyons, aged 21, made use of for her solitary pleasures Overcome by sleep during her manœuvres she left the instrument in its place, but the pain which she felt the next day informed her of the mistake which she had made She only confessed it on the eighth day when she was unable to work D<sup>r</sup> Bron succeeded in ridding her of it very skilfully with the forceps, withdrawing the long needle by the same way as it had entered.”

The same accident frequently happens with the double metallic pins which are used at the present time Their extreme flexibility is even a difficulty in the way of their extraction, as they bend under the instrument which is introduced to lay hold of them. It was thus very difficult to withdraw one from a young hysterical subject at the Stephansfeld Asylum Carré, of Avignon, also extracted a vesical calculus which had formed round a needle, from an elderly lunatic It was a large pin which Lamotte withdrew in 1692, from an old nun. In 1751, Lachèse extracted an ear-pick, two months after its introduction, from a girl aged 20 Bodkins also are not infrequently inserted.

The objects most frequently in use including those of their trade, are even employed At Paris, a girl aged 18 who worked at home, introduced the crochet needle which she was in the habit of using. It fell into her bladder where it

caught like a hook and then entered into the vagina from which Dr Denucé fortunately extracted it in June 1855. The imprudent girl was cured without a fistula resulting. Pencils are used in preference by school girls and those who learn drawing.

Cases of wood or metal, empty or containing needles, are also used, although owing to their size it seems impossible to introduce them into so small an aperture.

It was by means of rubbing it with this object owing to the acute tickling sensation which she felt at that place as she said, that a girl aged 18 enlarged it so as to allow the object to enter completely. As she was pushing it further and further in, it slipped into her bladder where it remained for three months. D. Retif was fortunately able to avail himself of this artificial dilatation to introduce his finger but the case was already so surrounded with calculous matter that it was impossible to draw it out. An incision was necessary for this purpose and the patient succumbed on the twenty first day.

Rigal was more fortunate in the case of a young lady aged 20, in extracting by a similar operation a rosewood case full of needles and pins, measuring three inches and a half in length by one inch and a half in circumference. The same success was obtained by Cartier, at the Hôtel Dieu of Lyons with an unmarried woman aged 40, in extracting a case full of needles.

Pamard of Avignon came across an ivory whistle three inches and a half long by five lines in circumference in a woman aged 31, who masturbated herself with that instrument. The laborious extraction was performed without an operation. He extracted a pencil 14 centimètres in length, introduced six months before from a woman aged 34. Incrusted with a calculus like a pigeon's egg, it had perforated the bladder and emerged into the vagina. On the



other hand, a vaginal incision was necessary in the case of a girl aged 17 or 18, who was in the habit of introducing a large piece of wood. Moreau even says that he extracted a small apple, incrustated with calcareous matter from a woman's bladder at the Hôtel-Dieu of Paris.

With the habit of the mechanical onanism, the form and the calibre of objects become accessory, through the progressive enlargement of the canal. Graduated and artificially prolonged efforts will permit the physician to introduce his finger and large-sized instruments so as to operate in the interior of the bladder.

Paquet (of Lille) thus extracted hair-pins from four girls, and M. Marchand also extracted them from three women in a single year, at the Saint-Louis Hospital.

Professor Pourdes has observed that the slow and gradual dilatation of the urinary meatus had even permitted the introduction of the virile member. This was the case with a simple husband who lived near Orleans. Speaking to his confessor of the sterility of his wife, the former replied that perhaps he was not following the proper way. He changed it in such a clumsy manner that an incontinence of urine soon ensued. The error was then revealed on the intervention of the doctor "(Garnier. *L'onanisme seul et à deux* )

**Accessory practices of Masturbation.** Just as in the case of men, these different methods of feminine pollution are often accompanied by accessory manoeuvres on the part of the nymphs, such as rubbing, licking, torsion, etc., from which there results elongation, withering, hypertrophy of the nymphæ, which, with many women who practice masturbation, project beyond the labia majora, become cutaneous and destroy the harmony of the

shape of the genital parts, and are also the origin of many inconveniences

**Causes of Onanism in the Woman** The classification which Pouillet gives of the causes of Onanism in the woman slightly differs from that given of causes of Onanism in the man. It is enough for us to sum it up rapidly in a few lines. This author distinguishes five different causes. A Physical Causes. B Social Causes. C Intellectual and Moral Causes. D Mixed Causes, E Religious Causes.

**A Physical Causes** These comprise the temperament, the genital idiosyncrasy, warm and dry climates which are more conducive to onanism than cold and damp climates, certain morbid physical causes — such as want of vaginal care and cleanliness, vegetations, vaginitis, vulvitis, vulvular pruritus, certain affections of the skin and mucous membranes, inflammations of the uterus and ovaries, the absorption of food occasioning a sanguine congestion on the part of the genital apparatus, idiocy, phthisis, certain phlegmasies of the mucous membranes. Pouillet adds to this, prolonged dancing and riding, sitting or remaining in bed for a long time, certain occupations entailing the expenditure of bodily strength, particularly working with a sewing machine, and lastly the famous bicycle recommended by certain physicians who are by way of preparing for themselves in their old age a practice among men with affections of the prostate and women with complaints of the uterus.

**B Social Causes** These are riches and poverty through the idleness occasioned by the one and through

the promiscuity of the sexes and the too intimate family life brought about by the other.

**C. Intellectual and Moral Causes** These are the too assiduous study of the Fine Arts, the study of tender and melodious music, the habitual meeting together of young people, the sight of lascivious pictures and of voluptuous and immodest statues, obscene conversation and gestures, the sight of domestic animals having connection, the reading of unwholesome tales and books of the same class as *Père la Mouquette*, certain plays at the theatre, the bad example given by school-companions, or the depravity of tutors, valets, servants, and nurses, hatred and contempt of the husband, etc.

**D Mixed Causes** These are very frequent. Everything which causes the woman, either through want of sexual intercourse or through incomplete intercourse, to be deprived of the pleasures which she ought to have, is a powerful inducement to onanism, and these causes are numerous. The principal are the impotence or indifference of the husband, want of harmony between the copulatory organs of the two sexes, slow termination of the venereal act in certain women, desire of the man to see his companion share in the pleasure which she procures for him, widowhood or the prolonged absence of the husband or lover, plainness or physical infirmities on the part of the woman, and lastly we may also point to atavism, and the Latin proverb is very true, *Lascivæ nunquam filia casta fuit*

**E Religious Causes** Without attacking religion, we may say, with Pouillet, that confession is a very arduous matter which demands unheard-of tact and delicacy on the part of the Confessor

The Trappist Father and Doctor Debreyne, the author of *Mæchologie* says himself "that the too great curiosity of the Confessor is capable of ruining young persons of either sex. They have been known, after having been questioned imprudently upon the Sixth Commandment (1) to attempt to put in practice what they have learnt through the imprudence of their Confessor

**Observations relating to the Causes of Feminine Onanism** A young girl whose case is reported by Serres, was addicted at an early age to sensual pleasures and prostituted herself without however ceasing from manualization, as she did not find sufficient pleasure in daily coition. The autopsy, which it was requisite to make, showed a chronic inflammation having a focus with callous and indurated edges, of the middle lobe of the cerebellum. This was the primary cause of the salacity and nymphomania in consequence of which the unhappy girl succumbed.

I cannot however omit idiocy for according to all mad doctors, the solitary passion exists, in its highest degree, in idiots and also among certain persons suffering from dementia, whose genital organs are in a constant state of crethism, and who hasten by their manœuvres the fatal termination of their malady. There are creatures "abandoning themselves to this deplorable practice — writes Esquirol — with excess without modesty without shame and in the presence of everybody and appearing to live for onanism alone.

Who is not acquainted with the observation made by Silvestre of Palermo of an idiot girl who manualized herself from a very early age, and was able at last to introduce her hand and a portion of her fore-arm into her vagina,

(1) The seventh in the English Decalogue

from which she drew out a humour stained with blood, which she carried to her mouth

Dr Desportes thinks that the exaltation of the venereal sense which often precedes the outbreak of pultaceous angina, may become the cause of masturbation in young subjects and also in adults. This practitioner supports his statement by eight observations, among which we find one of a lady, aged 70, who during a prodromic period of about a month, before the aphtous inflammation of the pharynx, felt such irresistible erotic ideas that, in spite of her age and her religious feelings, she could not prevent herself from seeking in manualism a relief from the heat which devoured her.

During a visit which I paid one day to a manufactory of military uniforms, I was a witness of the following scene.

Amid the uniform sound of thirty sewing-machines, I heard all at once one of them working with greater rapidity than the rest, I looked at the young person who was keeping it in motion, a brunette of 15 or 20. While she was pushing automatically the trowsers which she was sewing together on the ledge of her machine, her face grew animated, she half-opened her mouth, her nostrils became dilated, and the up and down motion of her feet brought the pedals into an ever-increasing action. Soon I saw her eyes grow convulsed, she lowered her eye-lids, threw her head back, while her hands and legs grew still and relaxed, a little stifled cry, followed by a long sigh, was lost in the noise of the work-room.

The young girl remained in a swooning condition for some seconds, then drew out her handkerchief and wiped away the drops of perspiration from her temples, cast a timid, shame-faced look, still slightly disordered, upon her companions, and began her work again.

Together with my guide who had noticed my attention, I approached the work girl who blushed hung down her head and stammered out a few words before even her master had uttered a syllable to bid her sit in the middle and not on the edge of her chair

At the moment when I was going out I again heard, but at another corner of the hall a machine accelerating its motion My companion began to smile and informed me that it was so frequent that scarcely any attention was paid to it The phenomenon, he told me, is met with among the young mechanics, among the apprentices and those who sit only on the edge of their seat as this singularly facilitates the movement of rubbing the labia genitalia against each other (Pouillet )

How many young persons of both sexes — cries A Schwartz — have not been rendered the slaves of onanism by the reading of novels! And he adds ‘ I knew at Lille in Flanders, a young person of a bilioso-sanguine temperament and of an exalted imagination, in whom novels had given birth to this unfortunate passion with such impetuosity that she was affected in a very short time with a trembling of the upper extremities, and with a weakness of the sight

At Strasbourg the history is known of a certain tutor who abused in a shameful manner the confidence which was reposed in him for the instruction of two little girls The facts are as follows the elder of these children, having one day evinced a certain repugnance to attend a lesson her mother was surprised at it and asked her to explain, the child hesitated at first, but at length she informed her mother of all the liberties which the tutor took with her The mother indignant at what she heard induced her child to attend the lesson again for the last time She watched the villain and surprised him in the act He was a man of

a certain age and the father of a family. He was delivered over to justice and punished with the rigour of the law. ” (Schwartz )

“ In a family, a little child aged 12 or 15 months, of the male sex, was suckled by a nurse whose milk was totally insufficient for the purpose; to calm the unsatisfied appetite and the tears of the little creature during the night, and doubtless also for the sake of her own interests, this horrible mercenary found no better means than practising the suction of the genital parts of her foster-child. An elder child, the brother of the former, who slept in the same room was the unconscious witness of the affair, and related it in a simple manner to his mother.” (*Journal des Sages-Femmes*).

Monstrous though it be, this fact is less heinous than the one which we are about to relate and which is also authentic.

“ A little girl, aged 5, having contracted habits of masturbation, indulged in it with absolute frenzy day and night. Her mother and what a mother could think of no better means of preventing her little daughter from practising so frequently these vicious manœuvres, than promising her, that if she would abstain from them during the day, she herself would take part in them when the time came to go to bed, and she kept her promise, for she did not hesitate to carry it out once before one of her friends, who was helping to put the child to bed, and to whose stupefaction she explained to her the reason of her culpable weakness, which she seemed to consider quite natural.” (Pouillet.)

“ A lyric artiste, greatly alarmed at observing her voice losing its power and clearness, came to consult us on this matter. On questioning her, we learnt that she was married to a man considerably older than herself, and that he had become impotent owing to a hemiplegia. Her hus-

band, in spite of his infirmity often attempted to perform his conjugal duties, but with no other result than that of irritating his young and passionate partner's genital senses. He frequently, after his vain attempts at connection indulged in lingual caresses upon his wife, with the intention of not defrauding her of a pleasure for which she did not conceal her violent desire. These attempts which came to nothing threw the artiste every evening into an erotic innervation which she allayed by digital manœuvres while her husband was asleep. It was after these manœuvres that she noticed the vocal troubles which only grew worse. (Pouillet)

"A woman had such ardent passions that, being unable to satisfy them with her husband—she was obese—she paid another man to masturbate her, in spite of the religious and honourable principles which she had imbibed in her family. (Roubaud *Traité de l'Impuissance et de la Stérilité*)

"There is a circumstance curious enough to relate, which frequently occurs in the villages of the Pas de Calais, and no doubt in other parts also. On the occasion of a matrimonial alliance between country folk of inferior position the wedding guests, the youths and young girls, retire two by two, after the nuptial repast and before the dance, four five and six groups together into a room, and there, after some jokes of equivocal taste, they are skilfully plunged into darkness. The young fellows then take their partners on their knees, and the young girls who would hardly yield themselves to their lovers for a kingdom, allow themselves, so elastic is their modesty to be manualized with pleasure. (Pouillet)

'I had occasion in 1871 to attend, at Lille a woman aged 22 who was in this case. She was affected with obstinate leucorrhœa. Being unable to assign any sure cause



for this affection in a person of her constitution, I suspected onanism. After several denials, the lady confessed that her lover made journeys lasting several months, and that, during that time, she was tortured with almost irresistible desires. She allayed them by means of clitoridian titillations. "In the first place," she said, "I am greatly attached to my lover, and in the next place, I should not dare to give myself to another man during his absence, for fear of becoming pregnant, this therefore is the only means I have of satisfying myself."

**The Godemichets of the Ladies of the French Court** We give from Brantôme, three instances of vaginal masturbation which are not wanting in flavour

"Here is another point, which is that women's love-affairs are treated in two fashions, one by rubbing and, as the poet says, *geminos committere cunnos*. This fashion entails no harm, some say, such as happens when they make use of instruments fashioned like . . ., but which they call *godemichets*.

I have heard tell of a great prince who, nothing doubting but what two ladies of his Court made use of them, kept so good a watch on them that he surprised them, in such wise that one of them was caught with a large one fitted between her legs, fairly tied with little strings round her body, so that it seemed like a natural member. She was so surprised that she had no leisure to take it off, so that the prince obliged her to show him how they two performed it

They say that many women have died through this, through engendering in their matrices apostemas caused

(1) *Lives of fair and pleasant Ladies*, 2 vols Paris, Carrington

by unnatural movements and rubbings I know several of that number, which is great pity, for they were very fair and honest dames and damsels, and it were better for them to have had company with some honest gentlemen who would not have killed them through that but have brought them to life and revived them as I hope to tell elsewhere, and even that for the curing of that ill, as I have heard divers surgeons say, there is nothing more proper than to have them cleaned inside by those natural members of men which are better than the pessaries which physicians and surgeons use, together with the waters composed therefor and yet there are many women, notwithstanding the inconveniences which they see arising from them, who must have these engines copied for them

I have heard a story told when I was away from Court, that the Queen mother having given orders to visit the chambers and coffers of all those who were lodged with in the Louvre, without sparing ladies or maids to see if they had any arms or even pistols concealed, in our troublous times, there was one who was found possessed in her coffer by the Captain of the Guard, not of pistols but of four large godemichets, fairly fashioned, which caused great amusement to all and much surprise to herself I knew the damsel, I believe that she is yet alive, but she never had a fair face In sooth such instruments are very dangerous ' (Brantome )

### **Syndromes and Signs of Masturbation**

The syndromes and signs of feminine masturbation are classed by Pouillet under three heads A General physical signs B Intellectual signs C Local physical signs Other authors, and notably Garnier, consider that the signs of masturbation in woman are very difficult to recognize

However this may be, let us give them according to Pouillet

A A pale, sallow, dull and leaden complexion, sad and troubled-looking eyes, the pupils dilated and inclined upwards and inwards, sometimes outwards, the eyelids red, congested and heavy, especially the upper ones, joined together at waking, and surrounded underneath with a blue brownish semi-circle, a fixed and dull look, turned towards the ground, livid lips, lengthening and languishing appearance of the face, sometimes a slight swelling on the cheek-bones, a rapid emaciation without any illness to account for it, and in spite of the voracity of the appetite a wasted appearance, an unsteady walk wanting in assurance, a want of co-ordination in the movements, a more or less pronounced muscular weakness, especially about the lumbar region, a trembling of the upper and lower limbs, nocturnal sweats, a disordered urine full of sediment, an almost continual shivering; the way of sitting down, the position of the hands while sleeping or waking, an incomplete development and in disproportion to the age, squat and thick-set stature or a too slim and slender figure, finally an extreme nervous susceptibility, suffocation, palpitation of the heart, intermittences of the pulse, headaches, gastralgia; lipothymy, frequent faintings, a slumber troubled by voluptuous dreams or by terrifying nightmares such are the general physical signs

B. A kind of inexplicable instinctive sadness, carried to taciturnity, a timorous unequal and morose character, inclined to be choleric, a timidity exaggerated in the presence of relatives and unsociable at the appearance of strangers, a great inaptitude for work, an unreliable memory; a dull mind, an indifference for amusement and intellectual labours, an extravagant fondness for solitude, a profound idleness; untruthful habits, exaggerated em-

braces and caresses of young girls and finally a certain look, & something or other more easy to perceive than to explain by words, such are the intellectual and moral signs

C The premature growth of the external genital apparatus, sometimes the tearing of the hymen the abnormal humidity of the vagina and vulva, the gaping appearance the dilatation and paleness or extraordinary redness of these organs, leucorrhæic runnings, the elongation and morbid sensibility of the clitoris, which is often the seat of excoriations, and finally foreign bodies of all shapes and all materials found in the genito urinary organs or more frequently met with in the bed and hidden under the mattress, constitute the local physical semeiology

This combination of signs & knowledge of which will prevent the occurrence of error, will not permit the existence of the vice of masturbation to be called in question as the original cause in those women who display it Therefore I ought to add here that — so rife is this melancholy passion — each time the practitioner happens to meet with one of these complaints with which we have just been occupied and is unable to assign a cause for it with any certainty, it will be permissible for him to suspect his patient of illicit manœuvres and he ought to direct his investigations in this direction

Another sign discovered by D Baraduc (1) consists in the vesiculate ulcerations succeeding the little pimples, having the size shape and colour of a grain of millet which appear on the recently formed cicatrices or on those in process of formation of women who have been wounded or undergone an amputation or have sustained a fracture or a burn in a word of all those who are affected

(1) *De l'Ulceration des cicatrices récentes symptomatiques de la Nymphomanie et de l'Onanisme* J B Baillière et fils Paris 1872

with a solution of continuity of the teguments. In support of his assertion Dr Baraduc quotes eight observations, all of them conclusive. We deem it unnecessary to give them here on account of their length.

**Consequences of Onanism in Women** Are the consequences of Onanism, when carried to a high degree, as terrible in women as they are in men? Loude, in his *Nouveaux Eléments d'Hygiène*, says that they are not. Pouillet affirms that they are. It is true that the woman does not lose the sperm, as the man does. Therefore in a passive coition, in which she has experienced no enjoyment, all her fatigue is confined to a mere heating of the mucous membranes. This explains how it is that public prostitutes are able to have connection 12, or 15 times a day and even more. But when a woman pollutes herself it is in order to experience pleasure. Now, as often as she obtains this result, her encephalus will be over-fatigued to make it dominate in unnatural conditions. "Therefore, it must be granted, that in the woman just as in the man, the effects of masturbation will sooner or later cause the outbreak of morbid symptoms, and these symptoms, in my opinion, will be more marked in the woman by reason of her essentially predominant nervous nature" (Pouillet.)

**Affections resulting from masturbatory manœuvres in women.** The same as in the case of men, we may divide them into. A Local and adjacent B General,

**Local and Adjacent Affections** Some are benign. These are the flaccidity and the discolouration of the genital mucous membrane, excoriations of the vulva,

the clitoris and of the entrance of the vagina, and the erythema of these organs

Then come the more or less complete tearing of the hymen, the supero internal eczema of the thighs idiopathic leucorrhœa, vulvitis and the abscesses of the labia majora which it may entail vaginitis hypersiccation inflammation and abscess of Bartholin's glands Let us not forget chronic vulvitis and chronic vaginitis with their principal symptom leucorrhœic running Let us also mention the white genital running of little girls

Other affections are more serious Let us particularly instance acute metritis Foreign bodies introduced into the vagina or the urethra through masturbation have results which are generally serious and sometimes mortal Their extraction, on the other hand necessitate surgical operations of a certain difficulty and even of great importance the more so as these bodies, when they remain for a long time in the genital organs often grow incrustated with calcareous matter are enclosed by and even perforate the vaginal vesical and the recto vaginal coatings It is enough to refer to the instruments employed by female onanists to understand the disorders which they may occasion

Let us point out again, incontinence of urine withering of the breasts vulvular deformities troubles of menstruation deviations of the matrix proceeding from metritis and finally sterility and frigidity

**B General Affections** Onanism brings with it in women, general affections analogous to those in the case of men We shall not exceed the reserve which we have imposed upon ourselves in the preceding chapter, and we shall simply enumerate here the nomenclature of the general affections which according to certain authors

would be a consequence or effect of onanism They are Nymphomania, Epilepsy, Hysteria, Eclampeia, Infantile Catalepsy, Ecstasy, Neurosis, Neuralgia, Chorea, Encephalitis, Cerebral and Spinal softening, Meningitis, Paralysis, Disorders of the organs and senses, Disorders of the Intellectual faculties, Hypochondria, Monomania, Disorders of the digestive apparatus, of the respiratory apparatus, of the circulatory apparatus, of the motor apparatus, and of the osseous system

This lengthy enumeration, borrowed from Pouillet, which comprehends the greater portion of the maladies which may attack a woman, is still incomplete It is necessary to add to it, apoplexy (Curtis), induration of abscesses, cancer of the brain (Descuret), aneurisms, ruptures of the heart (Rostan), gastritis, hepatitis, sugary diabetes (Curtis) I leave to these different authors the responsibility of their assertions

**Observations relating to the consequences of Onanism** “ Frequently vulvay pruritus is the commencement of it, but later on the mind participates in this act, which, at first, is unconscious

There are women who indulge in it with frenzy, who suffer from it and become very unhappy.

A young woman of 28 or 29, came one day to consult me and confessed to me that she was affected with a disease of the mind which was destroying her health, she was affected with a veritable uterine fury We tried all the anaphrodisiacs, lupuline, bromide of potassium, digitalis, all were useless Such were the torments of this unhappy woman, that she asked me then to destroy in her the organ of sexual excitation, I consented to this, I cauterized it with red-hot iron, and for a fortnight she thought that she was cured, but, when the cicatrisation had taken

place, it became evident that this means had failed like the preceding. When we know the vascularity of the pelvic organs and the bonds which unite together the vessels of the different parts of the genital apparatus in the woman, we can easily understand how an often repeated excitation upon one point of this apparatus reacts upon all the organs which compose it upon the uterus in particular, and may become the origin of metritis.

“Deslandes reports the case of a lady who, having begun to masturbate herself at the age of eleven, was at first attacked with abundant white flowers. Married when she was 18 and although she did not want for legitimate satisfactions she still continued her solitary practices in spite of several pregnancies so that her onanastic passion had sovereign power over her. Her uterine affection therefore was only aggravated and was soon complicated with a *prolapsus uteri*, thanks to which the neck of her matrix descended to the entrance of the vagina.

‘Fabre in his *Traité des maladies vénériennes* expresses himself as follows with the proofs in support of it. I have observed one cause of running in women, which imposed upon me sometimes and caused me to take it for a veritable gonorrhœa. I was one day sent for to attend a lady, aged 18 who, after six months of marriage felt pains in her vagina, together with a running of a very abundant greenish matter.

Here is a second observation by the same author, in which chronic metritis was accompanied not only with an abundant running, but also with cephalic, thoracic and gastric neuralgia.

“A young woman, married for five years had had no children, she had a very abundant running of greenish matter she was much emaciated, she continually complained of insupportable headache with pains in the sto-



mach and chest; her hair, which had been the most lovely that could be seen, owing to its quantity and length, had nearly all fallen out " Fabre still believed that he had to do with a virulent affection, but the treatment which he ordered did not produce any salutary effect At length he resumes, " the patient seeing the inefficacy of the remedies, thought herself obliged to confess to me that, ever since the age of 14 or 15, a chamber-maid had given her the habit of satisfying herself that she had indulged in it to such an excess that, since her marriage, her husband's approach had always been indifferent to her, and that she was sometimes obliged to leave her company to go and satisfy her passion. I then recognized the true cause of the malady and I so well made her understand the consequences of her unhappy inclination, that she promised me to give it up. "

**An unfounded Charge of Rape.** I will quote some extracts from the report of an expert upon an unfounded charge of rape, in which will be found at the same time a true picture of the disorders which onanism causes in the external organs of generation in children

" Monsieur B .. reported to us that on the 9<sup>th</sup> at 7 o'clock in the morning, his daughter, aged 11, being then alone in the house, M. E , his neighbour, came there, threw her down upon her bed, and abused her in spite of her resistance.

Louise B ., when we questioned her, only answered us after considerable hesitation, but ended by confirming the account which had just been given to us

*Examination of Louise B .* Louise B . who has not yet had her menses, is short and of a bad constitution, and eminently lymphatic, she has a pale complexion, and her eyes have a dark circle round them.

I Her sexual organs, which are very developed are already withered and very discoloured, the labia majora, very thick and flaccid are parted at their lower extremity

II The vulva the entrance of which is much enlarged is widened out into the shape of a funnel, at the bottom of which is compressed the hymen membrane considerably relaxed but without any rent, and forming a kind of ring round the gaping orifice of the vagina, the dimensions of which are such that the finger can easily be introduced, the fork is depressed but not torn

III There does not exist however any excoriation on these parts but they are lubricated by the running of a whitish matter, which appeared to us to be of a leucorrhœic nature

*Conclusions* It is evident that the young Louise has not been deflowered but the withered appearance of the organs, the infundibuliform disposition of the vulva, the depression and deformation of the hymen, and the dilatation of the vaginal orifice witness to an already old habit of manœuvres, and no doubt to the introduction of a more or less voluminous body into the vagina

The running of which the sexual organs are the seat cannot proceed from an outrage committed only three days previously it has already been in existence a long time, it is the white flowers occasioned by habits of onanism (The microscopical examination of the stains on Louise B's chemise demonstrated the truth of the above report)

**Further extraordinary cases** "A young girl aged 8, fell into a disquieting condition of thinness, her lower limbs were agitated by extraordinary movements which were soon communicated to the upper limbs, it became absolutely impossible for her to make use of either the one or the other, the agitation was excessive in the

muscles of her face and eyes; the patient was unable to remain in her bed, and it was necessary to keep her in a large arm chair, which was closed in front of her. But the physician who was attending her without success, consulted Dr Moulet, who diagnosed onanism and cured the patient." (Marc-Antoine Petit, *Onan ou le tombeau du Mont Cindre* )

This is not the only case with which we are acquainted, and we were permitted to see, in 1875, a sufferer from chorea, aged 20, in whose case masturbation, so to say, made the malady reappear at will.

Endowed with a good temperament, and without rheumatic antecedents, this young girl was seized with chorea in consequence of solitary practices, which she renewed as often as four times a day

Sent home to her parents in the country, she quickly recovered, and then returned to Paris to live with a law-student, her lover. When, on her repeated entreaties, the latter decided to produce the venereal spasm by lingual or digital manœuvres, the only ones which allay the girl's erotic desires the chorea reappeared for a few days, to cease again till he practised fresh manœuvres. " (Pouillet.)

" A young girl indulged in onanism, and became subject to epilepsy, the American, Dr White performed upon her the operation of clitoridectomy. Her vicious habits immediately ceased, and the attacks of epilepsy did not appear again. Dr White's observation was not published until three years after the operation, and it was possible to consider the epilepsy as cured after such a lapse of time." (Pouillet )

" I was summoned, on May 12<sup>th</sup>, 1885, to attend Mademoiselle Joséphine L..., aged four. This child, whose intelligence was precocious, and whose body was well developed, displayed an inflammation of her genital parts, accompanied by an abundant pruriform running.

At my visit, I found the child drowsy her look uncertain, the pupils contracted the face pale and flushing red at intervals the stomach distended, and the pulse feeble, in fact the evident symptoms of cerebral fever

An examination of the genital parts revealed a dilatation of the vagina so considerable that it was impossible for me to mistake the direct cause of it, and the servant informed me that the child had for a short time past indulged in onanism as if by an automatic movement

Rational means were employed for combating the affection of the brain and, as a coercive means, metallic gloves were put upon the child's hands

The mischief increased nevertheless and the young patient succumbed a few days after Up to the last moment the intervals of liberty which were given to her hands were employed in repeating the act which was bringing her to the tomb' (D Bourgeois)

Everybody knows the story of the young shepherdess of whom Alibert speaks in his *Nouveaux éléments de thérapeutique et de matière médicale*

In consequence of her manual habits this young woman had seen her intellectual faculties diminish until she grew stupid The upper part of her body was prodigiously emaciated while the lower part, on the contrary, appeared to belong to a person in good health Her sensibility was exalted to the supreme degree and so to say was localised in her genital organs In a word she was in a state of utter neuropathy of a genital form which produced the venereal sensation in her at the slightest cause, at the sight of a man for instance, or when she felt her hand touched by a person of different sex

— A lady — Manget reports — had been married for six months to an impotent husband The latter confined himself, when beside her to exalting by reiterated touches,

the sensibility of her organs of generation, this lady was soon attacked by nymphomania accompanied by convulsive movements. Manget advised her to sleep in a separate bed, and thus prevented the further progress of the insanity which from that time was dispelled.

“ A young girl, from her early youth, had indulged in illicit touches by a kind of irresistible inclination. At 17, she was married to a vigorous husband, who was much inclined for sexual pleasures. But this union did not cure her of her deep-rooted habit. Several times following she received her husband's embraces without being satisfied, and often even when coming from his arms after three connections and fatigued by these repeated assaults, she abandoned herself again to her onanistic manœuvres ” (Murat *Dictionnaire en 50 volumes* )

I have known, says Pradel, a young person, who, since the period of her too precocious puberty, indulged in masturbation, and experienced, when she was 18, the most grievous effects from it. She was endowed with most brilliant qualities of mind, and her reasoning power had all the maturity of virile age, she knew all the danger to which the irresistible taste for the solitary pleasures of onanism was leading her. She formed the resolution not to indulge in it any more, but she returned to it incessantly. In despair, after each shameful sacrifice, at not being able to observe the salutary resolutions which she unceasingly adopted, she said “ I have two wills within me, one that resists, the other that drags me on; the latter uses the most skilful subterfuges to seduce me, and ever says . this shall be the last time ” This unhappy woman succumbed.

“ A young lady, aged 18, strong, fresh, and stout, became pale and emaciated in the course of six weeks under the influence of manualisation. A cough, with spitting of

blood supervened, her menses were suppressed. When the physician expressed his suspicions of her bad habits her mother protested that her daughter, who was then being courted by a young man who would shortly marry her, was innocent. In spite of a summer passed in the country, a tuberculous tumour on the knee declared itself with symptoms which placed her life in danger. One night she was surprised while practising her onanistic manœuvres. She then fell into an absolute uterine fury with convulsions and delirium, and thereupon succumbed in the coma of a tuberculous meningitis. (Garnier.)

“A little girl aged 7 whose health deteriorated without any apparent cause having been caught in the very act of masturbation was immediately placed under the restraint by her mother of a girdle of chastity very well made and properly applied. The child recovered rapidly and her mother congratulated herself on her success, when the symptoms reappeared without any change or alteration in the apparatus. Reveillé Parise was consulted, and discovered that the child made use of a singular stratagem to continue her manœuvres. She slipped a long pin under the girdle, with an infernal adroitness. By not leaving her night or day her mother brought about her cure. (*Revue Médicale*, 1828.)

**A Masturbatress letter** “At the age of 11, my school fellows made me notice one of them at certain moments indulging in to and fro movements, with her legs crossed and growing red in the face with her eyes fixed on vacancy. *She is forcing herself*, they used to say. Without understanding it, I clearly saw that it was a shameful act and without putting any questions, I said to myself at length that there must be something agreeable in it, and tried in vain to imitate her. But one day

as I was sitting on the mattress while they were making my bed, I crossed my legs, and was quite surprised and stupefied to discover this new sensation which I often produced afterwards. I was discovered one day by one of my brothers, who threatened to tell mamma. This was very harsh and unkind, and from this came about my leaving home to go to school at Paris

During the four years that I remained there, this happened to me hardly three or four times. Having my menses when I was 15, I only resumed my bad habit two or three years after, induced by the acute tickling which I felt at every such period. After reading your book on *Onanism*, I kept watch over myself without being able to prevent the nocturnal pollutions which wake me up with pains in the fundament and abdomen. I then find myself lying on my back.

There being a question of my marriage, I have fought against the losses which I had. But I read in your book that onanism when contracted at an early age renders a woman barren, and the fact is that she whose example I followed, having married a First President of the Court whose acquaintance she made at a watering-place where she had gone for an incontinence of urine, has remained barren. I am in despair at this, in this case, I would rather give up my marriage, although the young man pleases me greatly as being my ideal when I was fifteen, and whom I have met to-day when I am more than double that age.

I read again. "that marriage is often useless, if not deadly, for weak, delicate, enervated, anemic girls. They are indifferent with their husbands and are often affected with runnings, or vulvury deformities caused by their former habits." I have in fact been treated for a chronic metritis, and then for a pseudo-membranous or exsudative dysmenorrhea. Injections have diminished the

losses, there is no more running except glair like the white of an egg Could not the traces of former habits escape themselves? The withering of my breasts is another indication Would Oriental pills or *eau topique* or mamilla milk restore them? (Garnier)







## CHAPTER VII

### GENITAL ABERRATIONS EXHIBITIONISM

Definition of Exhibitionism

Characteristics of Exhibitionism

*A* Exhibitionists, weak in mind — *Imbeciles, Idiots* — Observations relating to this Type

*B* General Paralytics — Observations relating to this Type

*C* Senile and Alcoholic Dementia — Different kinds of Delirium — Observations relating to Senile Dementia — Observations relating to cases of Alcoholic Delirium and other various Deliria — A case of Lypomania

*D* Epilepsy — Observations relating to this Type

*E* Degenerates — Observations

Exhibitionists, — Rubbers — Observations relating to this type

**Definition of Exhibitionism.** Thoinot designates under this name, acts of indecent exhibition committed by individuals whose pathological cerebral condition is an excuse for, and in any case explains, the immoral act. We must therefore exclude from this denomination the depraved, and those who suffer from their bladder.

Lasègue, who was the author of the term exhibitionists in his treatise of 1877 which makes an epoch, has generalized too much, and created a morbid entity, where his successors (Magnan and Krafft Ebing) have found a syndrome common to a certain number of pathological psychical conditions.

**Characteristics of Exhibitionism (after Thoinot)** — The most striking characteristic of exhibitionism is its repetition — the patient relapses fatally into this immoral act in spite of the repeated sentences which are passed upon him

**Various Types of Exhibitionists** — This author gives the following classification of the types — Exhibitionists are met with among the *weak minded* (idiots and imbeciles) the *general paralytics*, those suffering from *senile and alcoholic dementia*, and those who have *delirium of various kinds*. The epileptics and the degenerate also furnish exhibitionist subjects, who are no less interesting from the medico legal point of view. Finally, some cases of pathological exhibitionism are rather difficult to class (Thoinot)

Let us now study it (always under Thoinot's direction) in its general characteristics and in each detail of its numerous varieties

**The Weak minded (Imbeciles and Idiots)** Exhibitionism is very frequently displayed with characteristics of *absurdity* and *brutality* carried to the most extreme point. The irresponsibility of the subject is complete, as to the consciousness which he may have of the act committed, it varies with the degree of intellectual light which he has retained

**Observations relating to this Type** — 'An imbecile, confined at Ville Evrard used to make exhibitionism permanent, under the apron which he wore, he always had his genital organs naked — he was also an unbridled masturbator, like the greater number of these unhappy creatures (Lalanne)

“ We have still, at this very moment, in the Clinic, a patient who may be considered as a classical type of exhibitionist

“ He is a man of 35, of medium height, but of very mediocre intelligence.

“Eversince the age of nine he used to masturbate himself, at 18, he was arrested and sentenced to three months' imprisonment for having shown his genital organs in the middle of the day to some ladies who were passing along the Rue de Richelieu.

“ Some time after he was set at liberty, during a meal at his parents', his father surprised him masturbating himself at table

“ Since that period, he has been arrested several times in the streets for outrages on public morality

“ He is always pleased at exhibiting his genital organs in the streets and in public places, without any other provocation than this stupid and insensate act ” (Ball, *la Folie Erotique* )

“ An imbecile, aged 27, indulged for the first time in genital exposure in the Champs Elysées in the presence of several nurse-maids (he did not know how it was that this idea had occurred to him, he quite understood that it was *foolish*, he said, he had at first restrained himself, but had been obliged to do it all the same). After remaining for a year in the Asylum, he was handed over to his mother, and six months after, he was arrested under a door-way in the Rue du Bac, standing motionless with his genital organs outside his trowsers ” (Magnan)

“ G ., aged 29, a waiter at a café, exhibited himself in 1888 under the door-way of a church in front of several girls who were working in a shop He confesses the fact, and moreover that he had already several times at the same place and the same time, been guilty of the same offence,

which in the previous year had cost him a month's imprisonment

G has very nervous parents. His father is ill balanced psychically, and of a very hasty character. His mother is from time to time psychically ill, and affected with a serious complaint of the nerves.

G has always had facial neuralgia, he is continually varying between a motiveless depression with *tædium vitæ* and periods of gaiety. From the age of 10 to 15, he wished to commit suicide for frivolous reasons.

When he is in emotion, he has convulsions in the extremities. He continually displays a condition of general analgesia. In prison he was at first beside himself on account of the shame and dishonour which he caused his family, he accused himself of being the worst of men and of deserving the severest punishment.

Up to the age of 19, G satisfied himself with auto-masturbation and mutual masturbation, he has also once onanised a girl. From that period, being employed in a café, he was so excited at the sight of the women who resorted there that he frequently had an ejaculation from it. He suffered almost continually from priapism and, as his wife declared he lost his sleep from it, in spite of co-pulation. For seven years he had repeatedly exhibited himself and exposed himself *nudatus* in the presence of *feminae vicinis*.

In 1883 he married for love. The conjugal duties did not suffice for his excessive wants. At times his sexual excitation became so violent that it gave him head aches, he became disordered as though intoxicated, strange, and incapable of doing his work.

Finding himself in this state on May 12<sup>th</sup> 1887, he had twice, at short intervals, displayed himself to ladies in the streets of Paris. Since then he had engaged in fierce combat

with his morbid inclinations which almost continually possessed him, at the end of this state he was always gloomy, dismayed, and wept for whole nights. However, he always began again. Medical report proof of hereditary degeneracy with besetting ideas and irresistible impulses (delirious perversion of the genital sense). Acquittal." (Magnan, *Arch. de l'anthropologie criminelle*, t. V., n° 28)

"B., aged 27, with a neuropathic mother and an alcoholic father, has a brother who is a drunkard and a sister an epileptic. Four near relatives on his father's side are drunkards. A cousin is hysterical.

Beginning when he was 11, he practised onanism, sometimes solitary, sometimes mutual. From the age of 13 he had an inclination to exhibit himself. He attempted it in a street urinal, and felt a pleasurable feeling from it, but regretted it shortly afterwards. When he attempted to combat his inclination, he felt violent anguish, and an oppression on his chest. Being a soldier, he often had an overwhelming desire to display, under various pretexts, his *mentulam* to his comrades.

From the age of 17, he had sexual intercourse with women. He found great pleasure in showing himself naked before them. He continued his exhibitions in the streets, the urinals, and afterwards in the churches. He excited himself with alcoholic drinks, which rendered his impulse irresistible. He was arrested, but was not sentenced. A short time after he was arrested again for exhibition and masturbation." (Magnan.)

**B. General paralytics** Exhibitionism is somewhat frequent in general paralysis. It is often a dormant symptom of this complaint when not yet declared, and nevertheless the irresponsibility is very real.

When the general paralysis is thoroughly confirmed the act appears with characteristics displaying cynicism and brutality, but the explanations given by the patient supply a key to the phenomenon

‘ A paralytic of this kind entered a milliner’s shop and exhibited his genital organs to the assistants *for them to admire*. Another one displayed them to the women about him because he said they were *made of gold*. The explanation is almost pathognomical (Thoinot)

**Observations relating to this type** ‘ I have recently had under my care a woman suffering from general paralysis, undergoing a condemnation for an outrage upon public decency. As she was taking a walk on the Buttes Chaumont she slipped down and slightly grazed her thigh. Sitting down on the curbstone she coolly lifted up her dress to attend to her wound. Two *sergents de ville* asked her what she was doing she answered with a laugh, ‘Put your nose into it’ and uncovered herself completely. Before the bench she confessed everything and detailed in her paralytic unconsciousness, the fine joke which she said she had played on the *sergents de ville*. (Magnan)

**C Sufferers from Senile and Alcoholic Dementia and various forms of Delirium** Exhibitionism constitutes one of the symptoms of senile dementia. Lasègue gives a typical example of it. A Manager, distinguished up till then for his intelligence was arrested for a *periodic* exhibition of his genital organs in a street of Paris. His antecedents were of such an honourable character that mental disorder was taken for granted without having recourse to the investigations of a physician. A year afterwards I was obliged to have the patient confined

h his morbid inclinations which almost continually possessed him, at the end of this state he was always gloomy, moaned, and wept for whole nights. However, he always began again. Medical report: proof of hereditary degeneracy with besetting ideas and irresistible impulses (irrepressible perversion of the genital sense). Acquittal." Magnan, *Arch. de l'anthropologie criminelle*, t. V., 28)

"B., aged 27, with a neuropathic mother and an alcoholic father, has a brother who is a drunkard and a sister an epileptic. Four near relatives on his father's side are drunkards; a cousin is hysterical.

Beginning when he was 11, he practised onanism, sometimes solitary, sometimes mutual. From the age of 13 he had an inclination to exhibit himself. He attempted it in the street urinal, and felt a pleasurable feeling from it, but repressed it shortly afterwards. When he attempted to combat his inclination, he felt violent anguish, and an oppression on his chest. Being a soldier, he often had an overwhelming desire to display, under various pretexts, his *entulam* to his comrades.

From the age of 17, he had sexual intercourse with women. He found great pleasure in showing himself naked before them. He continued his exhibitions in the streets, the urinals, and afterwards in the churches. He excused himself with alcoholic drinks, which rendered his impulse irresistible. He was arrested, but was not sentenced. A short time after he was arrested again for exhibition and disturbance." (Magnan.)

**B. General paralytics** Exhibitionism is somewhat frequent in general paralysis. It is often a dormant symptom of this complaint when not yet declared, and nevertheless irresponsibility is very real.

When the general paralysis is thoroughly confirmed, the act appears with characteristics displaying cynicism and brutality, but the explanations given by the patient supply a key to the phenomenon

“ A paralytic of this kind entered a milliner's shop and exhibited his genital organs to the assistants *for them to admire*. Another one displayed them to the women about him because he said they were *made of gold*. The explanation is almost pathognomical (Thoinot)

**Observations relating to this type** ‘ I have recently had under my care, a woman suffering from general paralysis undergoing a condemnation for an outrage upon public decency. As she was taking a walk on the Buttes Chaumont she slipped down and slightly grazed her thigh. Sitting down on the curbstone, she coolly lifted up her dress to attend to her wound. Two *sergents de ville* asked her what she was doing. she answered with a laugh, ‘ Put your nose into it ’ and uncovered herself completely. Before the bench she confessed everything and detailed, in her paralytic unconsciousness, the fine joke which she said she had played on the *sergents de ville* (Magnan)

**C Sufferers from Senile and Alcoholic Dementia and various forms of Delirium** Exhibitionism constitutes one of the symptoms of senile dementia. Lasègue gives a typical example of it. A Manager, distinguished up till then for his intelligence was arrested for a *periodic* exhibition of his genital organs in a street of Paris. His antecedents were of such an honourable character that mental disorder was taken for granted without having recourse to the investigations of a physician. A year afterwards I was obliged to have the patient confined



in a private lunatic Asylum where he succumbed to the results of rapid senile dementia. " (Lasègue )

**Observations relating to Sufferers from Senile Dementia** " Z .. a superior official, aged 60, a widower, the father of a family, caused a scandal because during the period of a fortnight, on several occasions, *genitalia sua de fenestra ostendit* to a girl who lived opposite to him Several months afterwards, he repeated his improper act under analogous circumstances When interrogated he recognized himself the abominable character of his proceeding, but he was unable to give any explanation of it A year after, he died of a cerebral affection. " (Lasègue )

" Z. agéd 66, a sailor, has several times exhibited himself in the court-yards where children play, and in the neighbourhood of girls' schools This was his only proceeding of sexual activity. Z who is married and the father of ten children, had a severe wound on his head twelve years ago, of which he still carries a very deep osseous cicatrice Pressure upon this cicatrice causes him pain, at the same time his face grows red and he has an air of being petrified The patient appears to be somnolent; he frequently has convulsions in his upper extremity to the right (evidently epileptoid conditions in connection with a disease of the cerebral surface) However, it was ascertained that there was senile dementia and a very advanced *senium* It is not known if his exhibitions coincided with his epileptoid attacks Proof of Senile Dementia. Acquittal " (D<sup>r</sup> Schuhardt )

Peland has communicated to me a series of cases which enter into this category.

1 A paralytic, aged 60 At the age of 58, he began to exhibit himself before women and children He kept for a

long time at the lunatic Asylum (Verona) his lascivious character, and has also attempted *fellatio*

2 An old *potator*, aged 66, with grave hereditary defects affected with circular madness His exhibitionism was first noticed at church during the service His brother was also an exhibitionist

3 A man aged 48, with serious hereditary defects *potator*, at all times very excitable sexually confined in an Asylum for chronic alcoholism exhibits himself every time he sees a female

4 A man aged 64 married and the father of fourteen children Charged with serious offences Rachitic with a microcephalous skull Has been an exhibitionist for years in spite of the reiterated penalties which have been inflicted on him

X a merchant, born in 1833 unmarried has exhibited himself before children on several occasions, once while he was in this situation he embraced a little girl Twenty years ago X had a serious mental complaint which lasted for two years and during which he had an attack of apoplexy Later on, having lost his fortune, he gave way to drink and during his latter years seemed to have absences of mind Examination determined the existence of alcoholism premature old age and mental weakness His penis is small and his testicles atrophied (D Schuchardt )

*Acute alcoholic delirium* and other deliria also include the exhibition of the genital organs among the number of their symptoms

**Observations relating to Alcoholic delirium and other different deliria** We find some very remarkable ones in Krafft Ebing

L aged 39, a tailor, unmarried, born of a father who

was probably addicted to drink, had two brothers who were epileptics and one who was a lunatic. He himself displays slighter epileptic crises, from time to time his mind is darkened, and in that state he wanders in an objectless manner, and does not know afterwards where he has been. He passes for a respectable man, he is now accused of having exhibited his genital parts four or five times in a strange house, and of having played with them. His remembrance of these acts is very vague.

L has already undergone a severe punishment for desertion while he was with his regiment (probably these desertions took place while he was in a state of epileptic disorder), while in prison, he was attacked with a mental disease, and he was taken to *la Charite* on account of epileptic madness, from which he was afterwards discharged as cured. As regards the acts of which he is accused, we must exclude the idea of cynicism or exuberance. It is probable that they have been committed while in a state of intellectual obnubilation, which is shewn by this fact among others, that the man appeared to be strange from a psychical point of view, even to the officers who arrested him, and who called him an idiot " (Liman )

" L . aged 37, is guilty of having from the 15<sup>th</sup> of October to the 2<sup>nd</sup> of November, 1889, made a great number of exhibitions before girls, he committed these acts in broad daylight, in the street, and even in the schools to which he gained admittance. He asked the girls to masturbate him or to have connection with him, and as this was refused, he masturbated himself before them. At G , being in a tavern, he struck his bare penis on the window-panes, so that the women servants and children who were in the kitchen could see it.

After his arrest, it was discovered that ever since 1876, L , had already a great number of times occasioned

scandal by his exhibitions but that he had always escaped being found guilty thanks to the proofs of a mental malady which were established by the physicians. On the other hand, he had undergone during his period of military service condemnations for desertion and theft and once as a civilian for a theft of cigars. He had several times been confined in a Lunatic Asylum for mental disease (attacks of frenzy). Besides this he had attracted attention through his changeable and quarrelsome character, through his periodical excitation and fickleness.

L's brother died of paralysis. He himself does not show any mark of degeneracy or of epileptic antecedents (During the period of observation he was not ill in mind, nor mentally weakened.)

He behaves himself in a very decent manner, and expresses a profound horror for his sexual offences.

He explains them in the following manner. By habit he is not a drinker, but at times however he has an inclination to drink. As soon as he begins to drink, there is an afflux of blood to his head together with vertigo, restlessness, pain and oppression. Then he falls into a kind of dreaming state. An irresistible spell compels him to uncover himself, and this procures him relief, and enables him to breathe.

When he is once uncovered, he no longer knows what he is about. As a precursory signs of these attacks he has sparks before his eyes and vertigo.

When L happened to get intoxicated, apart from the period of his malady, he never exhibited himself in a lucid state, his feelings and his sexual intercourse are in all respects normal. (D. Hotzen.)

'X aged 38 married and the father of one child. Has always been of a gloomy character, suffered frequently from head aches, seriously neurasthenic, but not physically

unwell, greatly tormented by nocturnal pollutions; has on several occasions followed shop-girls in the street, whom he had watched for in a urinal; while following them he exhibited his genital parts, and manipulated his penis. In one case he even followed a girl into the shop." (Prochon.)

In the following observation, the exhibition appears only as an accessory to an impulsive inclination to satisfy by masturbation a violent *libido* which suddenly manifests itself.

R ... a coachman, aged 49, married at Vienna in 1886, without children, was born of a neuropathic and sexually exalted father, who died of a cerebral disease. He does not display any sign of degeneracy.

At the age of 25, he had a serious *commotio*, in consequence of falling from a height. Up to that time, his *vita sexualis* had been normal. After it, he fell every three or four months into a very painful state of sexual excitation, with an impulse to masturbation. As precursory signs of these attacks, he has a feeling of great fatigue and discomfort together with a craving for alcoholic drinks. In the intervals he is cold sexually, and he but rarely wants to copulate with his wife, who, moreover, has been an invalid for five years, and is unfit for cohabitation.

He declares that he never masturbated himself while he was a young man, and he no longer thinks of this kind of sexual satisfaction in the intervals of his attacks.

During the dangerous period, the impulse to masturbation always rises at the sight of certain feminine charms, such as a short petticoat, pretty feet and well-shaped legs, and an elegant appearance. Age makes no difference. Little girls may even cause an exciting impression. The impulse is sudden and irresistible.

On Nov. 4 1889, R. . ., being in his dangerous period, happened to be in the street at the moment when a group of little girls from school passed in front of him.

His untameable impulse awoke. He had no time to go into a water-closet, he was too excited. He forthwith proceeded to exhibition, and masturbated himself under a carriage entrance, there was an immense scandal and he was arrested. R is not an idiot nor ethically defective. He bewails his lot, feels deep shame at his act, and fears fresh attacks, but considers his attacks as morbid, as a fatality in presence of which he is impotent.

He believes that he still has sexual power. The penis is of a normal size. Cremestorian reflex exists and accentuated patellar reflex. Various neurasthenic symptoms.

**A Case of Lypomania** Not to multiply the number of observations in an exaggerated manner. I shall end with quoting an interesting case of what is called lypomania in an individual borrowed from Lalanne's thesis.

« The individual in question was a male-nurse at Saint Antoine, Ivry, and Broussais in succession. Everywhere he thought that the female-nurses were in love with his physical advantages. But his pathological exhibitions only declared themselves in the latter establishment.

“ He had scarcely arrived before he perceived that all the women-nurses looked at him and directed their looks particularly in the direction of his genital organs. talked about them between themselves. provoked him by eyes and gestures, in short, were still more in love with him than those at Saint Antoine and Ivry. At the same time, the persecution of his colleagues broke out in a still more violent form than in those two Hospitals. they went so far as to intercept all the letters which the female nurses addressed to him and those which he sent to them. Nevertheless he understood by their looks, and by the words which they exchanged between themselves that it was their ardent desire to see his genital organs which, to

judge by the rest of his person, must be marvellously fine. It was the first time that any one had shown a desire which flattered him so much; the nurses at Saint-Antoine, more timid no doubt, had not ventured to manifest it. It was the act of a gentleman to satisfy them, and he satisfied them. To hear him, the sight of his genital organs produced astounding effects upon them — they fled away ravished with delight. Everywhere that he could meet them alone in the Hospital, he betook himself there to afford them this ineffable pleasure ”

The patient was transferred to Ville-Evrard, and as he appeared to be calm, he was allowed to wait upon those who were confined there. But soon it was necessary to relegate him again to the patient's quarter, for he again took to exhibiting himself before the nurses of the establishment. The latter, according to his account, just like the nurses at Broussais, had given him to understand their very keen desire to see his virile parts, and he had satisfied them also ” (Lalanne )

**Épileptics** Exhibitionism, which is frequent among epileptics, displays itself, says Thoinot, with greater and pathognomonical characteristics, unconsciousness during the act, and complete amnesia afterwards

Exhibitionism is habitually shown in the averred epileptic, and according to the published observations, appears to be more common in petty epileptic and in the vertiginous epileptic, than in the great epileptic — sometimes even it constitutes the sole manifestation of the neurosis

We borrow the following from Thoinot

“ The description of the exhibition itself, separated from all the circumstances which may accompany it, is simple enough — the subject — it is almost always a man obnubilated, suddenly exhibits his genital organs, and

sometimes adds masturbation to this immodest act or obscene words, at other times he urinates at the same time as he exhibits. When this is done he buttons up his trousers again, then comes to himself after a variable time, and then learns from those around him, to his great surprise and confusion, the act which he has committed. To sum it up he acts symptomatically, with a veritable vertiginous attack, the principal act of which is the indecent exhibition.

The principal characteristics of epileptic exhibitionism being now known to you we will proceed, in order to give animation to the picture and to show its various clinical aspects to give some selected typical observations.

**Observations regarding Epileptics** The first is a historic observation for it forms a portion of Lasègue's treatise. It is to be regretted that its clinical details are so insufficient. I consider however that we may recognize in it a vertiginous epileptic suffering from attacks of exhibitionism.

‘ A retired officer of high rank, aged 65, is accused of an outrage against public decency under the following conditions: every other day, at a curious intermission he comes and stations himself before the railings of a house in which some young girls reside in the same locality where he lives. There he displays his genital parts; then after a few minutes he buttons up his trousers again and resumes his usual walk. A no less curious detail is that he always lays his walking-stick down in the same spot before he places himself in position. The accused is to all appearance in full possession of his reasoning powers: he answers pertinently to all questions, and denies with insis-



tance, laying greater stress on the improbability than on the non-existence of the offence.

Now this man, of high intelligence and correct habits of life, lost his wife a year ago; since that time he has been subject to vertiginous attacks combined with intellectual confusion, and at times even with sub-delirium.

He himself retains but a vague idea of these circumstances, of which his servants give him an exact and detailed account. His memory has grown weak in all things, and in his solitary condition he has been obliged to give up reading, which only wearied without interesting him. An attack of this kind, only more intense, occurred at the house of one of his relatives when they were sitting down at table, and in the presence of a numerous company; it was necessary to take the patient away in a carriage. He did not and could not appeal for his defence to a memory which failed him. No consequences resulted from this affair, and the patient has died since of hemiplegia at the house of a relative who took him in in order to avoid any fresh adventure." (Lasègue)

I have only admitted Lasègue's observation here on account of its historical interest, it contains too many gaps to serve as a type.

The following observations, which I shall present in an order intended to bring into relief as far as possible the different aspects of epileptic exhibitionism, will be more instructive.

The first is a well-known case of Trousseau's: it will show that exhibitionism may be the *sole manifestation* of the comitial mischief.

It relates to the President of a provincial tribunal, who suddenly left the sitting, murmuring a few unintelligible words, went into the council-room, *exhibited and urinated*,

and returned into court without any recollection of the singular act which he had just performed

We next give the case of a *great epileptic*, who had between his great convulsive attacks attacks of exhibitionism, the *sole intercalary manifestation* of his comitial mischiefs

' I was consulted, says M Voisin, a few years ago, by a musical composer who took down his trowsers several times at table in the presence of respectable ladies This man was known to be epileptic he had *very serious attacks of epilepsy*, which were known to his friends Apart from this he was very intelligent *his lesser attacks were characterised by these exhibitions* (Thoinot)

**E Degenerates** Exhibitionism by degenerates is the variety which, according to Mignan, presents the greatest clinical and medico legal interest This author was the first to bring out its real character Exhibitionism in the case of degenerates is nothing else but an *episodical syndrome* of degeneracy

It is, in other terms, an impulsive obsession with all the pathognomical characteristics of this manifestation, which are — *hesetting anguish* which oppresses the patient, and the *power* of performing while *fully conscious of it* and after a *struggle* of variable duration an act of which he perceives the full immorality, *relief and appeasement* after the act is accomplished, and finally, a repetition of the manifestation

### Observations relating to the Degenerate

Let us begin with an observation by Lasègue which is the first in his treatise

" The subject was a young man (under 30) belonging to an honourable family, who enjoyed an enviable situation

as secretary to a political personage of that time. He was distinguished for his wit and good looks, and his education gave him admittance to the best society.

The authorities were informed by numerous complaints of a scandal which repeatedly occurred in the churches, always towards nightfall. A young man, of whom a description was given, would suddenly present himself before a woman at prayers in a church in which at that time there would be few people; he displayed his genital organs without saying a word, and disappeared into the shadow after a short display.

To keep watch for him was difficult, owing to the number of places in which he might appear. One evening, however, this eccentric individual was arrested at Saint-Roch, at the moment when he was indulging in his periodical exercise before an old nun, who uttered a loud cry and attracted the attention of the verger. The offence was such a singular one that the court ordered a medical enquiry. I had long interviews with the accused, from whom I was able to extract but little information. The impulse was invincible, it occurred periodically at the same hours, and never in the morning, it was preceded by a feeling of *anxiety*, which he attributed to a kind of *interior resistance*. The enquiry, which was pursued with all conceivable care, led only to negative information. His whole conduct was irreproachable, except the facts which brought about his arrest.

Lasègue adds in conclusion: « At that time I was less experienced, and before the absence of any delirious conception, of any intellectual or nervous perversion, I was compelled to bow and to declare that there were no grounds for supposing irresponsibility.

We now give an observation by Magnan, together with Thoinot's summing up.

"G a waiter at a café, was arrested upon the 20<sup>th</sup> of April, 1888, at the church of Saint Germain l'Auxerrois at the moment when placed within the recess of the doorway, half-opening the outer swing door, he was exhibiting his genital organs to the gaze of several work girls in a room situated opposite, in the house numbered 1, in the rue des Prêtres Saint Germain l'Auxerrois. This was not the first offence against public decency which he had committed and, in the previous year he had been accused of and sentenced to imprisonment for a similar offence. On May 12<sup>th</sup> 1887, he was seated on the roof of an omnibus with his eyes fixed on the windows to observe if there were any women there — he was then in a paroxysm of sexual excitation — when having reached the top of the rue de Bréda, he could no longer contain himself he stopped the omnibus, got down and took up his position under the doorway of a house, exhibiting his genital organs to the gaze of two young girls and a man servant who happened to be at a first story window opposite. When spoken to by the young girl's father he took himself off and, as he was passing along the rue La Bruyère he met two ladies before whom in a stupid manner he indulged in a fresh exhibition, he was immediately arrested by a police officer who had been informed of the facts.

The recurrence of this curious act after his imprisonment, attracted the attention of the court and induced them to summon an expert M. Magnan to enlighten them.

M. Magnan examined the subject and easily recognized the evident characteristic of *hereditary degeneracy* in the individual and *impulsive* character of the act.

M. Magnan's conclusions were as follow

1 G is a hereditary degenerate affected repeatedly, with obsessions and irresistible impulses

2 He was conscious, on April 20<sup>th</sup> 1888 of the unlaw

ful character of his sexual exhibition, but he was impelled by a *distempered obsession* so imperious that it *annihilated his will*.

3 He is not responsible for an act which rests on *perversion of the genital sense.* "

Two of M Magnan's pupils, MM Boissier and Lachaux have published, in the *Archives de Neurologie* of 1893, a case of exhibitionism by a degenerate in which the impulsive character of the act is well evidenced

B. entered Saint-Anne on the 3<sup>rd</sup> of May 1892 ; he had just been arrested at the Tuileries for exhibitionism. He had already been confined in an Asylum in 1891 for a fact of a similar nature, and besides he had exhibited himself on fifteen occasions without being followed. The exhibition which brought him for the second time to the Asylum took place under the following circumstances: the patient was strolling alone in the Tuileries, two women were slowly walking towards him. He observed them for a short time and remained indifferent. But *suddenly* he felt an uneasy sensation which he was *already acquainted with*. Possessed by a *tremendous desire to show his penis* to these ladies, he at first hesitated, tried to recover himself and walk another way. The desire, which became every instant more powerful, paralysed his efforts. Although he did not feel *in situ* any functional stimulus, he was under the influence of a *strangely painful general attraction*, his chest was compressed with a feeling of increasing pain. He knew that *in spite of himself he would succumb*. His temples throbbed, he trembled all over, beads of perspiration stood on his forehead, his breathing became short and jerky. However the women came up to him and passed him, without his yet having made a gesture. But the obsession *was at its height* carried away under its impulse, he passed in front of the women, threw himself upon a bench, and exposed his genital organs in broad daylight. "

B , the author of this impulsive act of exhibitionism is incontestably an hereditary degenerate, and is the bearer of slight physical stigmata. One of his uncles has been affected with insanity, his mother, typically deficient in mental equilibrium, had attacks of dipsomania, and has recently died at Ville Evrard, his aunt on his mother's side died in an Asylum at Vaucluse, an uterine brother, subject to convulsive attacks, drowned himself.

In the following fact, borrowed from M P Garnier, you will again find, condensed into a few lines, the typical traits of the episodic syndrome in the exhibitionist act and of hereditary degeneracy in the guilty party. It forms a pendant to MM Boissier and Lachaux's observation.

The subject was a young man, aged 26, belonging to an honourable family and having received an excellent education. The son of a most distinguished engineer, *suddenly carried off by a cerebral malady* and of a *weak minded mother* M M shows evidence of great mental instability, and of extreme inconstancy in his tastes and inclinations, we observe in him a tendency to curious pranks, various phases of ambulatory automatism *strange impulses*, characteristic of a state of mental degeneracy, and witnessing to singular aberration of the genital sense.

Giving way to an irresistible morbid desire, he used to open the door of glove-shops, linen drapers' and milliners' shops in which he perceived a number of young girls. He did not go very far in but taking up his position on the threshold, without saying a word he would rapidly unbutton his trousers, exhibit his genital organs, and when he had done it hurriedly depart. Nevertheless there was not any genital orgasm, nor any lustful appetite seeking more ample satisfaction. In this short display of his genital organs was summed up the impulse which was immedia-

tely extinguished " They must see me, " he said, " that was the only requirement which I had to satisfy, but it was stronger than I "

We have stated that one of the characteristics of the exhibitionism of degenerates is its repetition. But what renders this repetition significant is when each of them is followed by a sentence of imprisonment, which does not prevent the subject from repeating it, until the court ends where it ought to have begun by ordering the patient to undergo a medical examination

B. ,aged 36, educated, had ideas of suicide after misfortunes in business At this period, as he was one day crossing the Bois de Boulogne, he was suddenly seized with *an explicable feeling of uneasiness with a sensation of agony* and pains in his testicles Wishing to try and allay these pains, he buried himself in the wood and exhibited his genital organs He remained there for a long time, without the slightest erection, but without attempting to hide himself He was caught and taken to the nearest police-station, and *condemned* in consequence to six days imprisonment The *second time*, in April 1890, he was taken with a similar attack while crossing the Luxembourg . he had the same feeling of uneasiness and the same irresistible impulse to exhibit his genital organs He was considered to be responsible for his actions, and condemned to two months' imprisonment The third time, in 1892 the scene occurred in the Bois de Vincennes, he was seen by some children, information was given, and he was caught and condemned to two months' imprisonment Lastly, in May 1894, the scene was repeated in the Bois de Boulogne , he was again captured and sentenced He declares that he was impelled by an irresistible power, in the interval of his attacks he is perfectly aware of the absurdity of his exhibiting " (Lalanne )

Magnan brings a curious point into prominence. There are some exhibitionists who have the power to resist their impulse when they are in their normal condition and overcome it, but under the influence of alcoholic excitement their impulse becomes irresistible.

It is sufficient to refer back to observation 51, regarding B. The deleterious influence of alcohol is well displayed there.

**Rubbing Exhibitionists** Under this title, according to Magnan's treatise, is designated a series of exhibitionists who are not content with showing their *genitalia* in public or with masturbating themselves, but who place them in contact with an object which plays with them the part of genital excitant. They cannot help rubbing their penis against this object. They therefore are fetishists rather than exhibitionists, the exhibition serving only to place their penis in contact with the beloved object.

**Observations relating to this Type** The three following observations borrowed from Magnan are typical.

'D', aged 44, with hereditary defects, an alcoholic and affected with Saturnism, has masturbated himself considerably until about a year ago. He has also drawn a number of pornographical pictures and shown them to his friends. On several occasions, when he was alone in his house, he has dressed himself up as a woman.

For the past two years, having become impotent, he felt that he wanted to go into the crowd when it was dusk, at the places where the omnibuses stop. He would draw near a woman and place himself behind her, selecting the *stoutest* in preference, then drawing out his penis which remain



ed flaccid, he would rub it against the fat woman's buttocks

While indulging in this exercise at the omnibus station in the Place Clichy, he was arrested by a police-officer, and sentenced to four months' imprisonment.

His wife kept a creamery. *Iterum iterumque sibi temperare non potuit quin genitalia in ollam lacte complectam mergeret* He then experienced a sensation of pleasure, "as if in contact with velvet."

He was cynical enough to make use of this cream for himself and for his clients.

In prison he developed an alcoholic monomania of persecution.

M., aged 31, married for six years, the father of four children, with grave hereditary defects, suffering episodically from melancholia, was surprised by his wife masturbating himself with one of her silk dresses on. One day, he was caught in a shop at the moment when he was rubbing himself against a lady. He was deeply confused, and asked that he might be severely punished for his inclination, which however was irresistible.

G..., aged 33, heavily burthened with hereditary defects, was surprised at an omnibus station at the moment when he was rubbing his member against a lady. Deeply repentant, he declared that at the sight of the lady's pronounced *posteriora* he felt irresistibly inclined to rub himself against them, and that he was then in such a state of disorder that he no longer knew what he was about.

Confinement in a Lunatic Asylum.

G., born in 1850, with an irreproachable past, of good family, clerk in a private business, in a good situation from a material point of view, without defects, a widower since 1873, after a married life of short duration, had for some time attracted attention in the churches

through his mania for pressing himself against the hinder parts of young or old women, and manipulating their figures. He was one day watched and arrested in the very act. He was in the highest degree amazed and, despairing about his situation, he made a complete confession imploring them to spare him as otherwise it was only left for him to commit suicide.

For the past two years he had been possessed by the fatal inclination whenever he found himself in the middle of a crowd at a church or a theatre, to rub himself against the women's hinder parts and to manipulate their flowing robes, a proceeding which caused him the orgasm and ejaculation.

Z declares that he has never been addicted to masturbation and that he has never in any sense had any perverse sexual tendency.

## CHAPTER VIII

### GENITAL ABERRATIONS (*CONTINUED*)

#### FETISHISM

Definition of Fetishism — Origin of Fetishism — Fetish Love, after E. Laurent — General Characteristics of Fetishism — Varieties of the Fetish Sexual Act — Diversity of Fetishes

Fetishism of the Eyes — Observations

Fetishism of the Hand — Observations.

Fetishism of the Ear and Mouth

Fetishism of Opulent Figures

Fetishism of Physical Defects — Aberrations

Fetishism of the Hair — Observations

Handlers, rubbers, and those who cut off plaits of hair (after Macé)

Fetishism of the Foot — Observations

Fetishism of the *Odor Foemina* — Observations

Fetishism of the Voice — Observations

**Definitions of Fetishism** Fetishism is an anomaly of the sexual instinct relating to an article of woman's dress or to masculine garments, sometimes to a certain fixed costume, and lastly sometimes to a part of the body of one sex or the other, which has the exclusive power of arousing amorous sensations and of producing the voluptuous orgasm.

This definition, which is taken from Garnier and reproduced by Thoinot, appears to us to be far too wide. We prefer, with E. Laurent and Chevalier, to divide this definition into two, and to retain the name of fetishism only for the love which is directed exclusively to some part or other of the woman, or to one of her physical or intellec-

tual attributes, and setting apart under the name of *azoo-philia* those cases in which the obsession applies to an inanimate object

**Origin of Fetishism** The origin of Fetishism is given by Binet to whom the idea first occurred of applying this name to certain genital aberrations ' Normal love appears to us to be the result of a complicated fetishism it may be said that in normal love the fetishism is polytheistic, it does not result from a single excitation, but from a myriad of excitations, it is a symphony Where then does the pathology begin? At the moment when the love of one detail becomes preponderant so as to obliterate the rest

Normal love is harmonious the lover loves in the same degree all the elements and every part of the body of the woman for whom he feels an affection In sexual perversion the harmony is broken, love instead of being excited by the whole person, is only excited by a fraction of it Here the part is substituted for the whole the accessory becomes the principal Monotheism corresponds to polytheism Fetish love is a play in which the mere *figurante* advances to the footlights and takes the place of the principal character '(A Binet, *le Fétichisme dans l'Amour* )

### **Fetish Love according to E Laurent**

Fetish love is but the exaggeration, the hypertrophy of a natural sentiment for we are all of us more or less fetishists in love In the woman whom we love, everything in her does not charm our eyes with the same intensity Although we love the whole woman there are certain things in her which attract us more particularly, and, in this general worship our adoration turns more particularly to certain qualities or even certain defects of her

physical or immaterial being. One pleases us by the delicacy of her rosy ear, in another, we admire the smallness of her foot, the grace of her slight and supple waist. If one attracts us by her wealth of black hair and the marble splendours of her breasts, another pleases us by the infantile charm of her slight figure, by the smile on her ruddy lips, by the limpid look of her dark-blue eyes. A mere beauty-spot in some women is the point which attracts our love, and more than one of us has felt himself caught by a tip-tilted nose, as the poet says

Sur ta petite face rose,  
 Agitant ses ailes de chair,  
 Ton nez, comme un oiseau se pose,  
 Impertinent, la queue en l'air

But this fraction which first attracted us and undoubtedly has been, without our being aware of it, the origin of our love, does not make us forget the rest. A pleasing mouth, long velvety lips, a small and slender hand would not so obscure our eyes as to conceal from us the imperfections of her whom we love, and then we do not exceed the bounds of normal love.

But supposing that we attach ourselves exclusively to that attribute which charms us, that it possesses us to such a degree as to render us blind to all the other defects or even to the qualities of the beloved object, then it is no longer harmonic love, it is morbid love, or, to use M. Binet's expression, it is fetish love" (E. Laurent, *l'Amour*.)

Before we review the various forms of this genital aberration, let us first study its general characteristics.

### **General Characteristics of Fetishism**

Besides Binet, Fetishism has been studied by authors such as Charcot, Magnan, von Krafft Ebing, Motet, Garnier and

Moll their works have been analysed and commented on by Thoinot whose remarks we sum up as follows

Fetishists are degenerates just as the Exhibitionists of the preceding chapter, and the Sadists and the Masochists whom we shall come across further on. In the manifestations of this malady, we recognize the *impulse-obsession* the episodical syndrome of degenerates

The fetishist is born a fetishist. We shall see in the observations that the disease declares itself at the age of 4 or 5, 11 and 13. There is however a fetishism which develops slowly, and which Krafft Ebing calls *acquired fetishism*, more accurately entitled *retarded fetishism* by Thoinot. In certain cases the appearance of fetishism may be brought about by a *perceptible external influence*, but this is an *occasional cause* and does not create the fetishism: the latter was slumbering and latent in a person predisposed to it, it awakes one day under this occasional cause, this cause would have remained without any action in a normal individual. (See the observation regarding the son of General X.)

The awakening of the fetish obsession. M. Garnier has very well remarked, 'is not the result of chance, it is the effect of a profound alteration of the moral and affective sensibility which avails itself of every incident to manifest itself as it happens in every psychical phenomenon bordering upon the obsession, a fact insignificant in itself, but which rises to the importance of a principal fact through a connection of ideas, engrosses all the attention of the emotional degenerate, forms a date in his remembrances of a genital kind, obtrudes itself into all his sexual life reducing to nothing, or almost nothing, all the sexual impressions which are not derived from it.

The sexual life of the fetishist is condensed into his fetish alone, it alone gives him erection without it he is

absolutely impotent, and he is unable to have intercourse with a woman except through the sight or touch, as the case may be, of the fetish. (See further on Krafft Ebing's observation upon the Polish gentleman and also Hammonds)

Cases nevertheless exist (according to Krafft Ebing, only two at present are known) in which the decisive association has not been brought about by a connection between the nature of the object and the things which may normally produce a sexual excitation. Of this kind is the very curious observation of the clerk, given by Charcot and Magnan, relating to a night-cap on the head of an ugly old woman.

The reader will conceive how coition practised with the woman by favour of the fetish, is at the same time painful, fatiguing and unsatisfying in its results. Therefore the majority of fetishists quickly grow weary of it, and resign themselves to absolute impotence in the presence of women. They entrench themselves in pure fetish love, and the perverted act is sufficient for them.

**Variations of the Fetish Sexual Act** The act varies also in an extended degree according to individuals.

Some are purely platonic. They see, either really or in imagination, their fetish, or they even touch it, this gives them an erection and they confine themselves to that, the more so as the erection is often followed by ejaculation without any manœuvre.

There is one category among fetishists who are satisfied with the mere contact of the fetish, these are the *rubbers* of the preceding chapter.

Other fetishists satisfy themselves in a different way, they complete the excitation caused them by the sight,

the contact, or the ideal representation of their fetish, by masturbating themselves. This is a practice more common than platonic love, and the majority of fetishists are inveterate onanists.

Thomson again points out the erotic dreams of the fetishist—they always relate to his fetish. The normal man dreams of women, the man suffering from inversion dreams of homosexual amours, the fetishist dreams of his fetish.

**Diversity of Fetishes.** The multiplicity, the diversity and often the strangeness of the objects of fetish love are truly surprising. Garnier differentiates them into two classes, one of feminine species, part of the woman's body (heterosexual fetishism), the second of masculine species, part of the man's body (homosexual fetishism). It is not only the different parts of the body which become fetishes, but also the whole together, a particular fashion of the woman, and even feminine deformities.

Let us now proceed to review these fetishes.

### **Fetishism of the Eyes — Observations**

This fetishism is much more frequent than could be believed. There are those in the first place who attach themselves exclusively to the eyes in the woman without concerning themselves at all about the rest of the face. It is of little consequence to them whether they belong to a woman who is beautiful or plain, young or old. It is enough if the eyes answer to the ideal which they have formed for themselves.

“X, aged 37, professor at a public school, suffered in his infancy from convulsions. At the age of ten, he began to masturbate himself with voluptuous sensations connected with very strange ideas. He was enthusiastic about



woman's eyes, but as he wanted at any price to form some idea of coition, and he was totally ignorant *in sexualibus*, the consequence was that he placed the seat of the woman's genital parts in the nostrils. His sexual desires, which were very keen, turned from that moment upon this idea. He sketched representations of very correct Grecian profiles and women's heads, but with nostrils so wide that the *immissio penis* became possible.

One day, in an omnibus, he saw a girl in whom he thought he recognized his ideal. He followed her to her lodgings, asked for her hand but was shown the door, he kept on returning until she had him arrested. X. has never had any sexual intercourse with woman." (Binet.)

**Fetishism of the Hand. Observations.** If there are men who admire the eye, there are also men who admire the hand, and the latter is the more frequent.

B. of a neuropathic family, very sensual, sound in mind, falls into ecstasy at the sight of a young woman's pretty hand, and then feels the sexual excitation going as far as erection. To kiss and squeeze the hand is for him the supreme happiness.

He feels unhappy as long as he sees the hand covered with a glove. Under the pretext of telling fortunes, he possesses himself of the hands. The foot is indifferent to him. If pretty hands are adorned with rings, it increases his pleasure. It is only the living hand, and not the picture of a hand, which produces this effect. But when he is exhausted in consequence of reiterated coition, the hand loses for him its sexual charm. At the beginning, the thought of women's hands used to trouble him even when he was at work." (Binet.)

Binet reports that these cases of enthusiasm for the woman's hand are very numerous.

‘ I knew a young man who also admired the hand in a woman, but he admired only the hand. When he made the conquest of a woman, the first thing which he asked was to kiss her hand, and he did so with absolute transports of love. But, when he was once in bed, he never used to leave that organ but squeezed it against him, then he would ask her with some embarrassment to masturbate him. It was but very rarely that he had intercourse with a woman. He only decided upon it if the woman refused to satisfy his strange caprice, in which she usually saw only contempt and humiliation. Still he has confessed to me that he sometimes sacrificed to Venus with daughters of the people or with servants who had red and dirty hands, which seemed to him to be absolutely repugnant. But masturbation by a pretty hand, procured him far more pleasure than all the rest. (Laurent )

‘ A very distinguished young man told me that he had a temporary sexual perversion of the most curious kind, which was nothing else but fetish love. He had made acquaintance with a girl of 16 who had become his mistress. She was a little creature as slender and delicate as a child, with blue eyes of a strange sweetness, and with long fair hair, as fine as silk. The painter, Guido Reni has often painted angels faces resembling that of this girl. She was an embroideress and a veritable artiste who would be caught up for the studios, her hands were so small and her fingers so slender and delicate. Now this young man often avowed to me that he had extreme pleasure in touching her little finger. When his virility languished after several amorous engagements, it was enough for him to touch for an instant that frail and delicate organ for him to see his ardour revive and to feel ready for fresh assaults. At night he loved to sleep holding it in one of his hands. (Laurent )

Krafft Ebing quotes from Moll a case of fetishism of the hand which deserves to be analysed

“ P . L. . ., a Westphalian merchant Apart from the fact that the patient's father had an exceedingly bad temper and was of a rather violent character, no hereditary blemish could be noted in his family At school, the patient had no great application He could never concentrate his attention upon a subject for any time, on the other hand, ever since his childhood, he had a great love for music His temperament was always a little nervous

From his youth he had been neurasthenic When questioned, he confessed that, at the age of 7, he had erections when he saw the penis of one of his companions urinating. He then became an onanist till the age of 18, and polluted himself in common with a friend whom he preferred At the age of 18, he made all possible efforts and used all his energy to struggle against his bad habit He succeeded little by little until, his first coition, which took place when he was 21 He then completely abandoned onanism, which now appeared to him incomprehensible, and he is seized with disgust at thinking that he could find pleasure in practising onanism with boys No human power, he said, to day could induce him to touch another man's member, the mere sight of another man's penis is odious to him All inclination for the man has disappeared, and the patient feels attracted only towards the woman

It must be mentioned, however, that in spite of his very pronounced inclination for the woman, there always exists in L . an abnormal phenomenon

What excites him above all in the woman is the sight of a beautiful hand, L . is much more moved by touching a woman's beautiful hand, *quam si eandem feminam plane nudatam adspiceret*

To what point does L . 's predilection for a woman's

beautiful hand go? We shall see by the following fact

L was acquainted with a beautiful young woman gifted with every charm, but her hand was a little too large and was not always perhaps so clean as L would have liked. Owing to this circumstance it was not only impossible for L to take any serious interest in this lady but he was not even capable of touching her. He said that there was nothing which disgusted him so much as dirty nails; the mere sight of untended nails makes it impossible for him to endure the slightest contact with a lady however pretty she might be. Besides, during the preceding year L had often substituted for coition *ut puellam usque ad ejaculationem effectum membrum suum manu tractare jussisset*

I asked him what it was that particularly attracted him in a woman's hand, whether he saw in it especially the symbol of power, and if he felt any pleasure in suffering a direct humiliation from the woman. The patient replied that it was merely the beautiful shape of the hand which excited him, that to be humiliated by a woman did not procure him any satisfaction and that, hitherto, the idea had never occurred to him of seeing in the hand the symbol or instrument of the woman's power. His predilection for the woman's hand is still so strong in him at the present time, *ut majore voluptate efficiatur si manus feminae membrum tractat, quam coitu in vaginam*. However the patient prefers to perform coition because this seems to him to be natural, while the other proceeding appears to him to be a morbid inclination. The contact of a beautiful woman's hand on his body occasions the patient an immediate erection; he says that an embrace and other kinds of contact are far from making such a powerful effect upon him.

It is only in recent years that the patient has practised coition more frequently, but it is always an effort for him to decide upon it.

Moreover he has not found in coition the full and entire satisfaction which he sought for. But when L. . is near a woman whom he desires to possess, his sexual emotion increases at the mere look of the woman, to the point of producing ejaculation. L. . formally declares that, when this occurs, he intentionally refrains from touching or pressing his member. The flowing of the sperm procures for L. . a much greater pleasure than the performance of real coition

The patient's dreams, which we still have to consider, are never concerned with coition. When he has pollutions in the middle of the night, they come under the influence of ideas quite different to those which possess men under similar circumstances. The patient's dreams are reconstitutions of scenes which took place in his school-days. During that period, besides the mutual masturbation which we have alluded to above, the patient had ejaculations whenever he was seized by any great anxiety

When, for instance, the master gave him a task of dictation and L. . was unable to follow him in the translation he often had an ejaculation (1) The nocturnal pollutions, which sometimes occur now, are always accompanied by dreams bearing upon the school incidents of which we have just spoken

(1) This is from sexual hypercæsthesia. All strong emotion, of whatever nature it may be, places the sexual sphere in a state of ebullition (Binet, *Dynamogénèse générale*) Dr Moll has communicated to me the following case upon this subject

"A similar fact is reported by M. E. . aged 28. He is a merchant, and when at school, and often too when away from school, often had an ejaculation with a feeling of pleasure, whenever he was seized with any strong emotion. Besides this, almost any moral or physical pain produced a similar effect upon him. The patient E. . declares that he has a normal genital instinct, but he suffers from nervous impotence

The patient believes that, in consequence of his unnatural inclination and feelings, he is incapable of loving a woman for any time

Hitherto it has been impossible to take in hand a medical treatment of the patient's sexual perversion (Moll *Perversion de l'Instinct génital* )

' This case of fetishism of the hand certainly does not rest upon masochism or sadism, it is explained simply by the mutual onanism practised by the patient at a very early age. Neither is there any sexual inversion. Before the genital instinct had been able to afford itself a clear account of its object the hand of a fellow pupil had been employed. As soon as the inclination for the other sex assumed shape, the interest concentrated on the hand in general is carried forward to the woman's hand.

Among the fetishists of the hand who, according to Binet, are very numerous, it may be that other associations of ideas arrive at the same result (Krafft Ebing )

**Fetishism of the ear and Mouth** Besides the eye and the hand, the ear and mouth often also play the part of fetishes. Moll mentions similar cases. We all know Belot's novel (*la Bouche de Madame X* ) which according to the author's statement is founded on an observation made in real life.

**Fetishism of Opulent Forms** We are able to give only one rather curious case of this taken from Krafft Ebing.

' A man with numerous hereditary defects consulted me regarding an attack of impotence which drove him to despair.

As long as he was a bachelor, his fetish was a woman with an opulent figure. He married a woman in appearance

corresponding to his taste; he had all his powers when he was with her, and was very happy. A few months later, his wife fell seriously ill, and became considerably thinner. One day when he wished again to perform his conjugal duties, he was altogether impotent, and has remained so. But when he tries coition with stout women he immediately recovers all his powers. ”

### **Fetishism of Physical Defects.**      Observations.

Physical defects even may become fetishes.

“ X., aged 28, has hereditary defects, and is himself clearly marked with stigmata. Since the age of 17, he is only excited sexually at the sight of feminine deformities, especially of women who are lame and have deformed legs.

The patient is unable to give any account of the first associations which have allied his genital sense to these defects of feminine beauty. Ever since puberty, he has been under the influence of this fetishism, which is very painful to him. The normal woman has no charm for him, a lame woman or a woman with club-feet alone interests him. When a woman is affected with such an imperfection as this, she exercises a powerful sensual charm upon him, be she beautiful or plain. In his erotic dreams, he sees lame women only. From time to time he is unable to resist the impulsion to imitate a woman who limps. In this condition, he is seized with a violent orgasm and an ejaculation is produced, accompanied by the keenest sensation of pleasure. ” (Krafft Ebing.)

Another instance is from Descartes, who, in his *Traité des Passions*, has himself made reflections upon the origin of strange inclinations consequent upon certain associations of ideas. He always had a taste for women who

squinted, because the object of his first love had that defect

Lydstone (*A lecture on sexual perversion* Chicago 1890) relates the case of a man who had an amorous connection with a woman whose thigh had been amputated. When he was separated from her, he sought unceasingly and untiringly women who were affected with a similar imperfection.

### **Fetishism of the Hair — Observations**

The fetishism of the hair is common. Fetishists of this kind do not hesitate, under the influence of the fetishist impulse — obsession, to cut off in the streets tresses of women's hair which excites them, so as to keep the precious fetish near them, and to dispose of it as they please. Therefore unfortunate *cutters of hair* are often brought up before the magistrates. Macé, formerly the Head of the Police, gives us a picturesque description of these slaves of their passions, the handlers and cutters of hair, who mingle with the crowd in the great shops of the Bon Marché.

**Handlers, Rubbers, and Cutters of Hair, from Macé** "At the first stage we find the *handlers*. They are so far but slightly corrupted. Their proceeding is irregular and accidental. They insinuate themselves into the crowds and arrange themselves in such a way as to pass their hands over the bosoms and rounded forms of pretty girls, and if they find anything which suits them there and the girl consents, they take her away with them. They are people who handle and examine their goods so that they may not be robbed when they buy.

At the second stage, we have the *rubbers*, they are to be recognized by their looks which they dart in all directions and which they direct towards the opening of the dress to



see the women's bosoms. When they have made their choice for an obscene end, they touch the woman and follow her about for whole hours, kindle and keep alive the flame of their desires by pulling about her dress.

In this variety of "rubbers", some of the bolder and more daring, always under cover of the crowds, indulge in clandestine touches, from which they go away satiated, leaving the woman's dress defiled

A young girl complained to her mother of being literally besieged by an individual whose eyes rolled convulsively in their sockets "Let us get out of this shop," she said, "I am choking, and that man terrifies me. He is mad, he is coming, as you see, to spit upon me."

Unfortunately this is no isolated case.

At the third stage there is a curious category of individuals. To conceal their identity, I am going to borrow a simile

But to whom shall we compare these men?

To hawks which, remaining awhile poised in the air, swoop all at once upon their prey and bear it away to their aerie.

In fact, these distraught slaves of their passions go from one crowd to another, hesitate and shift about for a long time before they stop, then, when they have made their choice, they are seen to dart forward to the woman whom they select and madly kiss the curls upon her neck. Then they slip away as if by magic, clicking their tongue with a sonorous sound and licking their lips to relish the perfume left on them by the little curls on the neck which they preferred.

Golden curls. ebony curls, .. silver curls. There are admirers, many admirers of these dainties. They prefer the hair to be put up into a knot, leaving the back of the neck

quite free, as this sets off the neck and leaves at liberty the pretty, provoking little locks

After the dress-destroyers, come the "hair cutters

In this sentimental category of gleaners of souvenirs, I have questioned an individual who used to get close to young girls of ten or twelve years of age, whose hair fell in a mass or in plaits upon their shoulders. Provided with scissors, he mutilated these silky tresses by shortening them by half

' His answers were as follows ' It is a passion. For me the child does not exist, it is her fine and beautiful hair which attracts me. I often could take them immediately. I prefer to follow the girl, to gain time—that is my satisfaction and pleasure. At length I decide, I cut off the ends of the curly locks—and I am happy

While he explained this to me his eyes were wild, and he kept looking mistrustfully to the right and left, as if he were afraid of being caught. (Macé, *Un joli Monde*) Paris Charpentier, 1887

"A few years ago a tall girl used constantly to be seen at the Bal Bullier, she had a thin and bony face but her black hair was of a really remarkable length. She wore it in waving masses on her shoulders and back. Men often followed her into the street to touch her and kiss her hair. Others used to come to her rooms and, in exchange for a relatively considerable sum, defile her silky head of hair. The girl was obliged to be always on the watch, and to take all kinds of precautions that no one should cut off this ornament, which constituted her sole beauty, and formed her means of livelihood

I have also known a young man of superior birth and attainments, who had a mania for cutting off a lock of hair from all those who gave him or sold him their favours, were it only for a night or for an hour. As he had travel

led across the whole of Europe and had loved everywhere, he had thus collected a considerable number of locks of all shades. He had carefully ticketed them and tied them up with silk ribbons. He declares that it is enough for him to touch or smell one of these locks, brown or fair, red or chestnut as it may be, to immediately evoke the image of her to whom it belonged, and to recall the special perfume which she diffused, and the sensations which she afforded him." (E. Laurent, *l'Amour Morbide* )

The cutters of tresses form an intermediate category between the pure fetishists and the azoophilists, whom we shall study in the following chapter.

### **Fetishism of the Foot. Observations.**

The fetishism of the Foot is the pendant to the fetishism of the hand, but is also its inverse, for whereas the fetishism of the hand is rarely replaced by that of the glove, we rarely find any enthusiasm for the woman's bare foot, and it is most frequently replaced by innumerable cases of fetishism of the woman's shoe or boot.

The reason of this, Krafft-Ebing says, is easy to understand " In the majority of cases, the youth sees the woman's hand ungloved and her foot covered with a boot and stocking. Thus the associations of ideas which determine the direction of the *sexual life* in fetishists, are naturally attached to the bare hand; but as regards the foot, they are attached to a foot covered with a stocking and boot "

Krafft-Ebing considers that the fetishism of the foot frequently has a masochistic character, and he has given, under the heading of Masochism, a certain number of observations. Without denying the share possessed by masochism, the part played by fetishism appears to us to be

preponderant in the following observations which we borrow from that author

"X , a merchant, has periodically, especially when it is bad weather, the following desires. He accosts a prostitute, the first one he comes across, and asks her to come with him to a boot-maker's, where he buys for her a fine pair of varnished boots, on the condition that she puts them on immediately. When she has done this, the woman must walk about the streets, as far as possible in the dirtiest places, so as to bespatter the boots. Then X escorts the woman to a hotel, and before the door of the room is hardly shut, he casts himself upon her feet, rubs his lips against them, which affords him an extraordinary pleasure. After he has cleaned the boots in this way, he makes the woman a present of money, and departs (D Pascalo, *Ygiene d ell amore* )

To the fetushism of the foot, Krafft Ebing refers the case of certain patients who not satisfied with cotton or being incapable of accomplishing it, replace it by rubbing their penis between the woman's feet

— An ecclesiastic aged 50, appears from time to time in prostitutes' houses under pretence of hiring an apartment, he enters into conversation with a *puella* casts lustful looks at the woman's shoes, takes one of them off *osculatur et mordet caligam libidine captus ad genitalia denique caligam premit, ejaculat semen semineque ejaculatio axillas pectusque terit*, recovers from his voluptuous ecstasy, asks the owner of the shoe to grant him the favour of allowing him to keep it for a few days and brings it back after the time fixed with a thousand thanks ' (Cantarano, *la Psichiatria*)

*In Love with his Sister's Feet* Z , a student aged 23 the issue of a defective family the sister suffered from melancholia, the brother from *hysteria virilis*. The patient

was from his earliest infancy a strange creature, and often had hypochondriacal feelings of uneasiness. On giving him a consultation for a "disease of the mind" I, found him to be a man of obscured intelligence, defective, and displaying neurasthenical and hypochondriacal symptoms. My suspicions of masturbation were confirmed. The patient made some very interesting revelations of his sexual life.

At the age of ten, he felt himself keenly attracted by a comrade's foot. At the age of 12, he began to grow enthusiastic over women's feet. It was a delicious pleasure for him to see them. At the age of 14, he began to practice onanism, representing to himself in his imagination the very pretty foot of a woman. From that time he grew enraptured over his sister's feet, who was three years older than he. The feet of other ladies, in proportion as they were sympathetic to him, excited him sexually. The foot was the only thing which interested him in woman. The idea of sexual intercourse with a woman inspired him with horror. He never tried to practise coition. After the age of 12, he felt no more interest in the masculine foot.

The shape of the boot on the woman's foot is indifferent to him, what is important is that the person should be sympathetic. The idea of playing with the feet of prostitutes inspires him with disgust. For some years he has been in love with his sister's feet. By merely seeing her shoes, his sensuality is violently excited. An embrace or a kiss from his sister does not produce this effect. His supreme happiness is to clasp the foot of a sympathetic woman and to lay his lips upon it. He was often tempted to touch one of his sister's shoes with his penis; but up till now he has been able to keep that desire in check, the more so that for the past two years, his genital weakness being very great, the sight of a foot is sufficient to cause him to ejaculate.

We learn from those about him that the "patient" has a "ridiculous admiration" for his sister, so that she avoids him and always tries to hide her feet. The patient feels himself that his perverse sexual inclination is morbid, and he is painfully impressed by the fact that his unclean fancies should have just chosen his own sister's foot as their object. As far as it is possible for him, he avoids the occasions and tries to compensate himself by masturbation, in course of which he always has women's feet present in his imagination, as well as in his nocturnal pollutions. When the desire grows too violent he cannot resist the wish to see his sister's feet.

Immediately after ejaculation he is exceedingly vexed at having been so weak. His affection for his sister's foot has cost him many sleepless nights. He is frequently astonished at being always able to remain in love with his sister. Although he considers it right that his sister should hide her feet from him he is often irritated at it, as it prevents him from having his pollution. The patient insists upon the fact that otherwise he is perfectly moral, which is confirmed by those about him.

**Fetishism of the Odor di Femina** D Binet, quoted by E. Laurent in *l'Amour morbide* is, I believe, the only author who makes mention of this kind of fetishism.

"The part played by perfumes in the phenomena of love is unquestionable. Among certain animals the male bears glands which secrete strong and penetrating odours, which according to naturalists, have no other object but to attract the females and to excite them to copulation. In the human race it is in much greater degree the woman who secretes those odours which excite sensual men. Regarding this M. Binet quotes an absolutely characteristic fact.

"A student of medicine, while sitting on a bench in a

square and occupied in reading a work on pathology, remarked that for the past few moments he had been troubled by a persistent erection. Turning round, he saw a red-haired woman, sitting on the same bench but on the other side, who diffused a rather strong odour. He attributed the phenomenon of genital excitation to the olfactory impression which he had felt without being aware of it. "

" M. Féré quotes a no less curious case reported in M. Binet's work. A distinguished man of letters, when he met a red-haired woman in the street, could not help following her. It mattered little whether the woman was pretty or of repulsive ugliness, elegant or in rags, young or old; it was enough for her to have red hair for him to follow her and desire her. He took a thorough account of his morbid impulsion; according to his assertion, his characteristic taste proceeded from the fact that the first woman whom he loved had red hair. "

But woman is not content with the natural perfumes which nature has bestowed upon her. If there are some whom they attract, there is a greater number who seem to be repelled by them. For the few who like to sniff these hircine odours, how many there are who require her to use the basin, and are only willing to possess a Venus rising from the waves. Therefore woman, in her coquetry, in order to retain the man and to bewitch him with her charms, has learnt how to invent subtle and delicate perfumes which caress the nostrils and tickle them in a delightful manner. Every flower and every plant has been distilled for her. And it is by these borrowed perfumes that she keeps her hold upon the fastidious. One man lets himself be caught by the unobtrusive perfume of mignonette, another by the penetrating aroma of heliotrope or musk, another prefers the mingled exhalations of new-mown hay or pale lilies. Who of us has not an odour

which he prefers? And who would venture to deny their exciting action upon the sexual apparatus? Who of us has not been attracted by a woman because she exhaled the perfume which we like and not another?

If this normal taste becomes exaggerated, we fall into fetish love "We may remark," says M Binet "that the smells of the human body are responsible for a certain number of unions contracted by intelligent men with women of the inferior class of servants For certain men the essential thing in a woman is not beauty, mind, or lofty character, but smell, the pursuit of the smell which they love induces them to pick out a plain, old, vicious and degraded woman "

It is no doubt through a similar association of ideas that we see intelligent men falling into the most singular aberrations Every smell which proceeds from the woman's organs of love appears exquisite to them, and excites them to the highest degree It is then an absolute delirium, and love sinks into the reeking darkness of the entrails "

### **Fetishism of the Voice — Observation**

Besides the worshippers of the different parts of the body, we also have those who fall in love with the voice How many queens of song have owed their finest conquests to the grace and charm of their voice! A Dumas relates how an actress fell in love with a man without seeing him, only through hearing his voice

" Among my clients I could quote an instance of an intelligent engineer who abandoned his lawful wife and two children, to go and live maritally with a singer, by whom he had a child born in adultery Attacked by an internal complaint through which he succumbed the sole relief to his internal pains was to listen to his siren as she sang to him the favourite airs of her *répertoire*



## CHAPTER IX

### GENITAL ABERRATIONS (*CONTINUED*)

#### AZOOPHILISM

Definition of Azoophilism

Men who are in love with a Costume — Observations

Men who are in love with women's aprons, petticoats and under linen — Observations.

Admirers of pocket-handkerchiefs — Observations

Fetishism and azoophilism of homo-sexual Love — Observations

Men who are in love with the shoe. — Observations

Men who are in love with Fabrics — Observations

Cutters of dresses, mantles and furs.

Burners and Defilers of dresses.

Azoophilists guilty of outrages against Public Decency

Men who are in love with Statues

**Definition of Azoophilism** As we have stated in a previous chapter, azoophilism is the genital aberration which applies to inanimate objects. As Laurent remarks, these are not objects belonging to a beloved woman, the reliques of love, but an inert object, forming a part of feminine attire, which attracts the sufferers from azoophilistic aberration.

#### **Men who are in love with a Costume.**

Every normal man, says Thoinot, likes to see his wife or mistress dressed in a certain way, and finds an addition to his genital excitation in a certain fashion of dress, but this is merely an addition, whereas for the fetishist the dress is the *sole* genital excitant.

Between a normal man who is charmed by a dress and the fetishist of dress, it is easy to find a connection, which is supplied by those individuals who are excited by a woman when *dressed*, and not by a woman when *naked*, and by those again who have no genital power except in the presence of a woman dressed after a particular fashion

We give an instance of this taken from Roubaud

X, the son of a general, was brought up in the country. When he was fourteen, a young lady initiated him into the mysteries of love. This lady was fair and wore her hair in ringlets in order that she might not be caught, she was in the habit of remaining fully dressed, with her under garments gaiters, corset and silk gown all on when she was in intimate conversation with her young lover.

After finishing his education X was quartered at a garrison town and wished to profit by his liberty and have some pleasure. He then discovered that his sexual inclination could only be aroused under certain determinate conditions. Thus a dark girl had no effect upon him and a woman in her night dress could completely extinguish his amorous enthusiasm. To awaken his desires, a woman must be fair, with gaiters on and be dressed in a corset and a silk gown, in a word dressed just like the lady who had first awakened in him the genital instinct. He has always resisted all attempts to induce him to marry, knowing that he was unable to acquit himself of his conjugal duties with a woman in her night dress. (Roubaud, *Traité de l'Impuissance*.)

Hammond and Moll make mention of several like cases among hetero and homo sexual individuals. Krafft Ebing admits "as a primary cause, an association which is produced on the first occasion. It is the only plausible explanation of this fact that in these individuals such a costume acts with an irresistible charm, whoever may wear it.

We now give an example borrowed from Binet and related by E. Laurent, who follows it up with some comments and personal observations which we also reproduce.

“ The subject was a magistrate who felt a particular affection for women who wore a particular costume. This costume, half national and half fancy, is that adopted in Paris by the Italian women who act as models. The mere sight of one of these costumes passing along the street produced in him a rather intense genital excitation. He attributes the origin of this phenomenon to an encounter which he had when he was 16, and which agitated him exceedingly; he saw in the street three Italian girls of striking beauty, they stopped near him to look into a shop window. For a moment, he had a charming picture before his eyes, a ray of sun-shine lighted up the brilliant colours, red, white and blue, of their costumes, and shone upon the gold of their necklaces and ear-rings. He has retained such a clear and vivid recollection of this scene that he still trembles when he thinks of it. This circumstance decided his tastes. For him, only Italian women are pretty, and only the Italian costume is elegant. And now, when he has become a grave and serious man, when he sees an Italian passing along the street in her costume, he cannot help following her, the sight of her red gown and blue apron causes him unspeakable pleasure, and, provided that she is young and pretty, he trembles all over from emotion. At one time he went and lodged in the Rue de Jussieu, where the Italian models in Paris have their headquarters. ” (Binet )

This particular taste has for its object not the woman but the costume, for every woman who wears this costume produces upon him the same impression. It is only necessary that the costume should be worn by a woman ; the costume alone, hung upon a hook or put upon a lay-

figure does not produce any phenomena of genital excitation in the patient he feels but a very moderate pleasure in looking at it. As M. Binet points out, this is always the case with fetishism in love, since the costume only becomes an object of amorous attraction because it is worn by a woman. This is an attenuated form of azoophilic love, instances of which are met with every day. We are all or us in fact more or less sensible to a woman's attire, and one who would leave us absolutely cold when she is quietly dressed, excites us keenly if she is fashionably attired. How many ladies of pleasure have assured me that they had no difficulty in finding admirers ready to follow them when they went to masked balls in more or less seductive costumes, while for whole weeks they were unable, when in their ordinary walking dress, to inflame a single man! Often too, the lovers whom they meet with under such circumstances, wish to possess them in the same costume which has attracted them. One evening one of them dressed as a Louis XV shepherdess, brought a man home with her. The price was agreed upon in advance, and, as she was in a hurry, it was agreed that she should not take off her dress. When she arrived home, after thinking it over, she proposed to the man that she should undress completely, provided that he gave her something extra.

— "Oh no," he said, "If you undress, I shall go away."

A few years ago, there was a house in the Avenue Trudaine, the number of which I will not mention, as perhaps it is still in existence, where the women prostituted themselves in the costumes of different religious orders. Parodies of religious worship were indulged in, followed by erotic scenes. The women dressed as though for their first communion, or as brides crowned with orange flowers or as veiled nuns, made their confessions to old liber-

tines and made their communion at an impious altar  
 How attire attracts and how costume seduces! ” (E  
 Laurent )

Hammond reports a case of passion for a part of a woman's dress In this case too, the patient's pleasure consisted in wearing a woman's corset on his body, as well as other articles of feminine attire, without there being in him any trace of sexual inversion

**Men who are in love with Women's aprons, petticoats and under-linen Observations** We have seen by the preceding observation that the worship of women may be diverted to an object which brings back an erotic remembrance The unhappy azoophilist may proceed much further upon this path, and be carried beyond all bounds.

“ Such is the case in an observation given by Dier It concerns a young man who was unable to resist the impulse to tear up a woman's under-linen While he was tearing it up, he always had ejaculations.” (Krafft-Ebing )

The apron is a garment which has no intimate character properly so called, but which, through its substance and colour, recalls the idea of the under-linen, and, by the place where it is worn, evokes ideas of sexual intercourse.

Charcot and Magnan give a case of it which in our view is typical

“ C . aged 37, with serious hereditary defects, having a plagiocephalous skull and of weak intellectual faculties, saw an apron, when he was 15 years old, which had been hung up to dry. He put this apron on and masturbated himself behind a hedge

Since then, he cannot see an apron without repeating the act. When he sees anyone, either a man or a woman, passing along wearing an apron, he is obliged to run after

them To cure him of his repeated thefts of aprons he was placed, when he was 16 years old, in the navy There are no aprons there, so he remained quiet When he came home again, at the age of 19, he once more had the impulse to steal aprons which involved him in disagreeable complications He was several times arrested, finally he was cured of his mania by being shut up in a convent of Trappists As soon as he came out of the convent he began again

On the occasion of a recent theft, he was submitted to an examination by medico legists, and he was then consigned to an Asylum He never stole anything else but aprons It was a pleasure for him to recall the memory of the first apron which he stole

Aprons were the only subjects of his dreams Later on he availed himself of these recollections so as to be able to accomplish occasional coition or to masturbate himself (Charcot Magnan *Arch de Neurologie* )

Lombroso reports a similar case

A youth with serious hereditary defects, had already at the age of 4, erections and a strong sexual emotion at the sight of very white objects and especially of linen The contact and rubbing with these objects procured him pleasure At the age of 10 he began to masturbate himself at the sight of starched white linen He appeared to be affected with moral madness, he was executed for murder

‘ Erlenberg has observed a man who used to steal women’s linen from shops, in order to dress himself up in it at night, in this way, he procured voluptuous sensations for himself, followed by ejaculation He then kept all the linen in his boxes

Here is a case of fetishism of the petticoat, combined with curious circumstances

‘ M Z , aged 35, a public functionary, is the only

child of a nervous mother and of a healthy father. He was nervous ever since his childhood, at the consultation, we remarked his neuropathic eye, his slender and delicate body, his refined features, his shrill voice, and his beard of thinly-scattered hairs. Nothing of a morbid nature was to be observed in the patient, except symptoms of slight neurasthenia. His genital parts are normal, as well as his sexual functions. The patient declares that he has only masturbated himself four or five times, when he was still a small boy.

As early as the age of 13, the patient was very excited sexually at the sight of wet garments, while the same garments when dry occasioned him no excitement. His greatest pleasure is to look at women who have been wetted in a torrential rain. When he meets them, and the woman has a sympathetic face, he experiences an intense pleasure, a violent erection, and feels inclined for coition. He declares that he has never had any desire to obtain wet petticoats for himself, or to wet a woman. The patient is unable to furnish any information regarding the origin of his *pica*.

It is possible that the genital instinct was awakened for the first time at the sight of a woman who had lifted up her petticoats on account of the rain, and so revealed her charms. This obscure inclination which does not as yet afford any account of its real object, has reference to wet petticoats, a phenomenon which still occurs. "

**Admirers of Handkerchiefs** Admirers of women's handkerchiefs are very frequently met with, and generally they steal them.

"At the last Universal Exhibition, a tailor in the boulevard Sebastopol, after being arrested on three successive occasions, was at length condemned to 6 months' im-  
prisonment."

sonment His two first detentions had no effect upon him In his room were found more than 300 handkerchiefs embroidered with different initials under which he had carefully marked his own name in red cotton

When one of these individuals has just taken a handkerchief, he passes it over his lips with a movement of passion, he inhales its perfume, and goes away staggering like a drunken man " (Macé *Un Joli Monde* )

**Observations relating to Admirers of Handkerchiefs** A young man a baker by trade, aged 32, was caught in the act of stealing 1 handkerchief from a lady He confessed, apparently with sincere repentance, that he had already stolen 80 or 90 handkerchiefs in this way He sought only for women's handkerchiefs, and those of young women exclusively whose appearance pleased him

Since the age of 19, he had masturbated himself to excess For several years he had suffered from the consequences of this vice depression fatigue, tremblings in his limbs, pains in his back, and distaste for work He was often a prey to melancholy depression, combined with alarm, then he avoided men's society He had exaggerated and fantastic ideas on the consequences of sexual intercourse with women, and for this reason he was unable to make up his mind for coition Latterly, however, he had thought of getting married

It was with deep repentance, and like the weakly creature he is that X confessed to me that six months before seeing a pretty young girl in the middle of a crowd, he felt very excited sexually, and obliged to rub himself against her, and endeavoured to make up for a more complete satisfaction of his sexual desire by taking her handkerchief Although he was conscious of the unlawful character of



his action, he was unable to resist his impulse. At the same time he experienced terrible distress, caused partly by the genital desire which possessed him, and also by the fear of discovery

As a result of this incident, directly he saw a sympathetic woman, he was seized with a violent sexual excitation, together with a beating of the heart, erection, and *impetus cocundi*, and he felt a strong desire to rub himself against the person in question, and, in default of anything better, to steal her handkerchief

Before the magistrate, on the report of the medicolegist, X . was acquitted " (Lippe Wiener Med Wochenschrift 1899 )

## Homosexual Fetishism and Azoophilism

**Observations** The instances of fetishism of portions of the man's body are very rare Thoinot quotes one from Magnan

" X..., aged 20, has always had an absolute frigidity with regard to women, but on the other hand seeks after sexual commerce with men, on the condition, however, that the object of his inverted affection wears large and heavy moustaches . *this condition is absolutely necessary for his erection*

A curious adventure happened to him one day He met one evening in the Champs-Élysées, an individual who corresponded to his ideal, and induced him to accompany him home When there, what was his despair when his partner let his moustache fall off, and he found that it was only an artificial one! X . was incapable of obtaining an erection until the other replaced his false moustache; the inverted intercourse was then able to take place "

Garnier quotes the case of a young locksmith, aged 16, with a palmated and inverted penis, who experienced a

keen passion for obese old men, and took pleasure in rubbing his penis on that of his passive partner belly against belly

The same author gives us a case of inverted azoophilism for varnished boots

'Louis X', the subject of this observation, belongs to a family possessing numerous manifestations of insanity. When he was 1, he indulged in onanism, but could only attain the voluptuous spasm by the contemplation of *varnished boots* a contemplation to which when quite a child he had been instinctively inclined

When a young man he had no taste for women and, during his year of voluntary military service he attempted coition, which left him frigid, he then returned to onanism

When he was 22 a vague idea arose of passive pederasty with a young man who would be well dressed and wear *varnished shoes*. In his walks abroad he gazed at the shining boots of the riders he felt the liveliest sexual satisfaction in looking at the varnished boots exposed in the boot makers shops, etc. He bought a pair of varnished boots, watched them with jealous care became excited at the sight of them and masturbated himself before them etc

Always preoccupied with his ideas of passive pederasty he thought one day at the Bois de Vincennes that he had found his ideal in a young bicyclist wrongly interpreting the meaning of the unknown's looks, he thought that he was making advances to him. His desires grew inflamed his heart began to beat violently, and his emotion was intense. He saw the young man turn his eyes towards his varnished boots he no longer had any doubt in the paroxysm of his excitation, he displayed his genital organs and the only result of his manœuvre was that he was arrested' (P. Garnier)

### Men who are in love with Women's Caps.

Here is a case of azoophilism of the Cap, quoted by Garnier. We notice two special features in it, the co-existence of kleptomania, an episodic syndrome of degeneracy, and the addition, in the course of the subject's life, of azoophilism of women's chemises.

“ Dr X. ., a degenerate and kleptomaniac, ever since the age of 6, felt a voluptuous sensation developed at the sight, touch, and smell of a housemaid's cap. From that time he sought for every possible pretext to enter this girl's bedroom. When there, he put her linen cap upon his head, and the dirtier the cap was, the more it was soiled with use and impregnated with an odour *sui generis*, the more promptly was the voluptuous spasm produced. At a later date, the contemplation of women's chemises, hung out at the laundries plunged him into the same sexual intoxication ” (Garnier, *les Fétichistes* )

We give, from Thomot, an observation of Charcot and Magnan upon another case of this kind. It is numbered 4, in the well-known treatise of these authors on *l'Inversion du Sens génital*.

L..., the subject of this observation, shows us in the first place very interesting *hereditary* and *personal* defects. He is a typical *hereditary degenerate*, his ancestors and his collaterals are all highly marked *eccentrics*.

His father, very original, very extravagant, and very irregular in his habits, eats at all hours of the day, makes as many as five repasts, often passes his nights in reading novels and newspapers, speaks with vivacity, cries out when he is arguing, and often occasions remark through his singularities—thus he wipes his face with a rabbit skin. On several occasions, and at different periods, he has had at night *painful hallucinations*, which cannot be attributed to alcoholism.

The patient's *sister* has never had any inclination for marriage she has declined two very suitable proposals then, one day when she had gone to the theatre, she expressed a wish to marry an old and very ugly actor whom she saw play, but whom she did not know in any other way

A brother was not amenable to any discipline, and his education was very defective after in vain trying various trades, he ended by becoming a coachman and marrying a cook

As for the subject of the observation himself, how many stigmas, exclusively psychical he has He is extremely timid, he is embarrassed and stammers in the presence of the customers of the business house where he is now employed, after trying twenty different occupations He is unable to write before witnesses, as soon as he is observed, he cannot any longer form his letters, and traces illegible characters Sometimes, but it is true at rare intervals he has nocturnal hallucinations the first occurred when he was six years old Since his childhood he has had passing attacks of deep melancholy, with ideas of suicide more particularly by drowning or hanging, he has also thought sometimes of poisoning himself He is full of fears when he gets up on the roof of an omnibus, and is seized with dizziness and nausea He cannot look out of a third or fourth story window without feeling great alarm When he passes by a lofty house, he fears lest it may fall on the top of him

We now give a description of his fetish love of the manner and time of the awakening of his aberration, and of his conjugal relations

At the age of *five years*, he slept for five months in the same bed as a relative aged 30 and felt for the first time a singular phenomenon this was a genital excitation and

erection, when he saw his bedfellow putting on his night cap. About the same time he happened to see an old woman-servant undressing herself, and as soon as she put on her night cap on her head, he felt very excited and erection was immediately produced.

Afterwards, the mere idea of the *head of an ugly, wrinkled old woman*, but wearing a night cap, produced the venereal orgasm. The *sight* of the cap alone had but little influence, but the *touch* of the night-cap produced erection and sometimes ejaculation. He has never sought for heterosexual intercourse, any more than for homosexual intercourse, and he has never practised masturbation.

It was under these circumstances that, when he was 32, he married a young lady, aged 24, pretty, and for whom he felt a lively affection.

On the first night of his marriage, he remained *impotent* by the side of his young wife. The next day, the situation was the same when, in despair, he *summoned up the image* of the wrinkled old woman covered with a night cap: the result followed at once, and he was able to fulfil his conjugal duties immediately.

During the five years that he was married, *he was reduced to the same expedient*, he remained impotent until the moment when his imagination recalled the favourite picture.

The formula is always and everywhere the same: genital excitation of the fetishist by the fetish alone, and, as a fatal consequence, impotence before the woman, impossibility of normal sexual intercourse in the absence of the *sight*, the *contact*, or the *ideal representation* of the fetish; the woman does not count, she only gathers the *benefit* of an excitation in which she does not play any part." (Thoinot)

**Men who are in Love with the Shoe — Observations** Azoophilists of the shoe according to Krafft-Ebing are often at the same time affected with *Masochism*. We shall therefore give only a single observation by this author on pure azoophilism of the shoe reserving the rest for the chapter on Masochism.

*Fetishism of the Shoe* M von P , a member of the old Polish nobility, 32 years of age, consulted me in 1890 with reference to his abnormal *vita sexualis*. He states that he is sprung from a perfectly healthy family, but that he is nervous, and has suffered since he was 11 years of age from *chorea minor*. Ever since the age of 10 he has suffered greatly from insomnia, and from neurasthenic troubles.

He declares that he was not acquainted with the differentiation of the sexes until he was 15 years old, and his sexual inclinations date from this period. At the age of 17 he was seduced by a French governess, but she did not allow him to perform coition and a sexual excitation only (mutual masturbation) took place. In the middle of this scene his eyes fell upon the woman's very elegant boots. This sight made a deep impression upon him. His relations with this dissolute woman lasted for four months. During his manœuvres with her, the governess's boots became a fetish for the unhappy young man. He began to grow interested in ladies' foot gear and he used to ramble about in order to meet with ladies in elegant boots. The shoe-fetish gained an ever increasing ascendancy over his mind. *Sicuti calceolus mulieris Gallicæ penem tetigit, statim summâ cum voluptate sperma ejaculavit*. When he was parted from the woman who had seduced him, he was obliged to go to the *puellas*, with whom he had recourse to the same expedient. This was generally enough to satisfy him. It was only rarely and subsidiarily that he had recourse to coition. His inclination for the latter act gradually disappeared. His

*vita sexualis* was confined to pollutions arising from dreams in which only women's shoes played a part, and to satisfying his senses with women's shoes, *apospita ad mentulam* but it was requisite that the *puella* should perform this manipulation. In his commerce with the other sex, it was only the shoe which excited him sensually, and, moreover, the shoe must be elegant, of a French shape, with a shining black heel like the first. In time, other accessory conditions supervened the shoes of a very elegant, smart prostitute, with starched petticoats and as far as possible with black stockings.

The rest of the woman does not interest him. The bare foot is wholly indifferent to him, and the woman's intellectual qualities have no charm for him. He has never had any masochistic tendencies, such as wishing to be trampled underneath a woman's feet. In the course of years his fetishism has acquired such an empire over him that, if he sees a lady in the street with a certain look and wearing shoes of a certain fashion, he is so violently excited that he is obliged to masturbate himself. A slight pressure upon this very neurasthenic individual's penis is sufficient to cause an ejaculation. The shoes in shop windows and, for some time, a mere advertisement of shoes, is enough to put him in a state of violent emotion.

His *libido* being very keen, he relieves himself by masturbation, when he is unable to make use of shoes. The patient quickly recognized the inconvenience and danger of his condition, and, although he was physically in good health except for his neurasthenic troubles, he felt all the same profound mental depression. He consulted several physicians. Hydropathy and hypnotism were employed without any result. The most celebrated physicians advised him to marry, and assured him that as soon as he was really in love with a young girl, he would be freed from

his fetish The patient had no confidence in his future however he followed the physicians advice He was cruelly deceived in this hope which had been raised by the physicians authority, although he was united to a lady who was distinguished by great physical and intellectual qualities The first night of his marriage was a terrible time to him he felt himself a criminal, and did not touch his wife The next day he saw a prostitute with a "certain smartness which he liked He was weak enough to have intercourse with her in his usual manner He then bought a very elegant pair of woman's boots and hid them in the nuptial bed, by touching them he was able, some days later, to fulfil his conjugal duties Ejaculation came but slowly, for he was obliged to force himself to coition, at the end of some weeks, the artifice which he employed no longer had any effect, his imagination having lost its vivacity The patient felt excessively unhappy, and would have much liked to have ended his days immediately He was no longer able to satisfy his wife, who sexually had great requirements, and who had been very excited by the intercourse which she had hitherto had with him, he saw how greatly she was suffering both morally and physically He could not and would not reveal his secret to his wife He felt distaste for conjugal intercourse, he was afraid of his wife, dreading the evening *tête à tête*s with her He no longer had erections

He made fresh attempts with prostitutes, he satisfied himself by touching their shoes, he ejaculated or, if ejaculation did not occur he attempted to have connection with the venal woman, but without result, for ejaculation then took place suddenly

The patient came to consult me in utter despair He deeply regretted that in spite of his inner conviction, he had followed the fatal advice of the physicians and made



an excellent woman unhappy, causing her physical and moral injury. Could he answer before God if he continued such a life. Even if he made a confession to his wife, and she did all that he desired, it would be of no use to him, for he must have the "flower of the demi-monde."

The unhappy man's external appearance displays nothing striking, except his moral anguish. His genital parts are quite normal. The prostate is a little large. He complains that he is so possessed with ideas about shoes, that he blushes when they are mentioned. His whole imagination is occupied with this subject. When he is at his country residence, he finds himself often obliged to set forth for the nearest town, which is ten leagues away, in order to be able to satisfy his fetishism before the shop-windows and also *cum puellis*.

It is impossible to undertake any medical treatment with this unhappy man, as his confidence in physicians has been deeply shaken. An attempt at hypnotism and the suppression of his fetish associations by suggestion has failed, in consequence of the moral emotion of this young man who is possessed by the idea of having made his wife unhappy."

**Men who are in Love with Fabrics.** Finally there exists a group of azoophilists, whose fetish is not a part of the woman's dress, but a certain fabric, which does not even always form any part of the feminine toilette, and which nevertheless is sufficient to cause or to accentuate the sexual excitation, such as velvet and silken fabrics and furs.

There is no correlation between this taste and any part of the woman's body, dress, or under-linen, and it does not proceed from an accidental correlation of ideas, as in the preceding observation of the linen cap. Krafft-Ebing sup-

poses that certain tactile sensations, a kind of tickling which has a distant relationship with the voluptuous sensations are the primary cause of this aberration in certain degenerates

‘ Upon this subject and in support of the learned Austrian physician’s opinion, I will quote a personal observation, a memory of childhood. One of my school companions, an unbridled masturbator, who was in the habit also of masturbating his companions, took me one day into his grandfather’s drawing room placed himself in an old Utrecht velvet arm chair, took down his breeches so as to bring his bare buttocks and testicles in contact with the fabric, and then began to masturbate himself with his right hand while he rubbed his left hand voluptuously over the fabric. ‘ I can only discharge (*etc*) in this way’ he said. Afterwards he proceeded to make a case out of a piece of velvet, which he used to rub his penis

We borrow the following cases from Krafft Ebing leaving out some unnecessary details which serve only to lengthen them

‘ N aged 37, sprung from a neuropathic family, and of a neuropathic constitution himself states

“ From my earliest youth I have had a deeply rooted passion for furs and velvets, because these fabrics awaken a sexual emotion in me, and the sight and touch of them procure me a voluptuous pleasure. I can only recall one incident which may have given rise to this strange inclination — (coincidence of the first sexual emotion with the impression of these fabrics, regarding the first excitation for a woman dressed in these fabrics) —

I know that when I was yet but a little child I greatly loved to look at furs and to caress them and that in doing so I experienced a vague feeling of pleasure. At the time of the first manifestation of my concrete sexual ideas that

is to say when my sexual ideas were first directed towards the woman, I already had a particular predilection for a woman dressed in the fabrics

This predilection has remained until I am a man of ripe age. A woman who wears fur, or is dressed in velvet, excites me more rapidly and more violently than a woman without these accessories. The fabrics, it is true, are not the *conditio sine qua non* of excitation, the desire for the usual charms is produced without them, but the sight and above all the touch of these tissues form a means, greatly assist the other normal charms, and procure me an increase of the erotic pleasure. Often the mere sight of a woman who is scarcely pretty, but dressed in these fabrics, gives me the most violent excitation and renders me beside myself. The mere sight of my fetish tissues causes me a still greater pleasure than touching.

Fur is for me so much the object of sexual interest, that a man who wears fur for effect, produces a very disagreeable impression upon me, as horrifying and scandalous as is the effect produced upon a normal individual by a man in the costume and attitude of a ballet-dancer. In the same way I find the appearance of an ugly old woman covered with fine fur to be repugnant to me, this sight awakens contending feelings within me.

The erotic pleasure of seeing furs and velvet is altogether different to my purely aesthetic appreciations. I have a very keen taste for the beautiful toilettes of women, and at the same time a particular predilection for lace, but this is a taste of a purely æsthetic nature. I find a woman in a lace dress and in any other elegant dress, more handsome than another who is not, but a woman dressed in my fetish fabrics is the most charming in my eyes.

I am unable to explain what connection this strange effect upon the tactile nerves can have with the sexual

lite The fact is that such is the case with many men I have also expressly remarked that a fine head of hair upon a woman pleases me very much, but that it does not play a greater part than any other feminine charm, and that in touching furs I do not think of women's hair (The tactile sensation besides in the two cases has not the slightest analogy) Generally speaking there is no idea attached to it The fur by itself awakes sensuality in me How is this? It appears to me to be absolutely inexplicable

The peculiarly erotic effect of my fetish fabrics cannot be explained by their association with the idea of a woman's body wearing these fabrics any more than by any æsthetic effect For, in the first place these fabrics produce the effect upon me, even when they are isolated and detached from the body, when they appear as mere material, and secondly, the more private articles of dress (the corset and chemise) which undoubtedly evoke such associations have a much weaker effect upon me The fetish fabrics all have for me an intrinsic sensual value Why so? It is an enigma to me The feathers on women's hats or fans produce the same fetish impression upon me as fur and velvet similitude of the tactile sensation and of the strange tickling produced by the slight movement of the feather Lastly the fetish effect, although to an attenuated degree, is also produced by other smooth fabrics such as silk satin, etc., while rough fabrics such as coarse cloth and flannel, produce rather a repugnant effect upon me

Other cases of the same kind are to be found in the literature of the subject

A lad, aged 12, experienced a keen sexual emotion one day in covering himself, with a fur rug From that time he began to masturbate himself by making use of furs, or by taking to bed with him a little dog with long hair He had ejaculations sometimes followed by hysterical

attacks His nocturnal pollutions were caused by dreams in which he saw himself lying naked on a silky fur, which completely enveloped him. The charms of the woman or the man had no hold upon him

He became neurasthenic, suffered from monomania of observation, believing that everybody noticed his sexual anomaly, for this reason he had *tædium vitæ* and went mad

He had numerous hereditary defects, deformed genital parts and other signs of anatomical degeneracy." (Tarnowsky).

"C. . is a mad admirer of velvet. He feels attracted in a normal manner towards pretty women, but he is particularly excited when the chance woman with whom he has intercourse is dressed in velvet.

What is striking in this case is that it is not the sight, but the touch which produces the excitation. C..., told me that by passing his hand over a woman's velvet jacket, he had such a sexual excitation as no other means could ever produce in him " (Dr Moll).

A doctor communicated the following case to me. One of the frequenters of a brothel was known by the nickname of "Velvet " He was in the habit of dressing in velvet a *puella* who was sympathetic to him, and of satisfying his inclinations merely by caressing her face with a corner of the velvet dress, without there being any other contact between him and the woman

**Cutters of dresses, mantles and furs:**  
**Burners and Defilers of dresses** The admirers of fabrics and furs readily become thieves in order to gain possession of the fetish which possesses their minds Not being able to acquire the object in its entirety, they cut strips out of these objects and make a collection of them at home

The case below, reported by Garnier, is very instructive

' The subject, a working baker, with *very defective hereditary antecedents*, was arrested in the correspondence room of the *Figaro*, where, armed with a pair of scissors, and concealing himself as much as he could, he was cutting pieces of cloth, velvet or fur according to the nature of the garment, out of the mantles of the ladies close to whom he intruded himself. He was found in possession of a large number of these shreds, and others were discovered when his room was searched.

Ever since the age of 9, the subject had a taste for woolly and downy fabrics. When he saw them, and especially when he touched them, he always felt a great genital excitation, together with erection and sometimes ejaculation. For a long time he had collected pieces cut out of feminine garments with a marked preference for fur, the contact with which placed him in a state of rapture, provided however that it had been worn by a woman.

He was also fond of handling satin, he has several times cut ribbons of this material to add to his collection. When he returned to his room he applied the stolen pieces to his skin, and thus provoked a genital excitation which ended in onanistic manoeuvres. (Garnier.)

Von Krafft Ebing has related a story of a workman at Berlin, aged 25, who in 1891, was caught in the act of cutting off a piece of a lady's dress, indicted before the magistrate, and sentenced to six months imprisonment. The accused defended himself in a *strange manner*. An irresistible impulse, he said, induced him to approach women who wore silk dresses. The contact with a silk fabric was so delightful to him that even during his imprisonment, he felt *affected* when, as he was combing wool, a thread of silk fell by chance into his hands.

“ I now give,” says Thoinot, “ a fine unpublished medico-legal and psychological case of a multiple fetishist (azophilist), who cut, stained, and burned women’s dresses, I owe it to the kindness of M Magnan

Pierre B ., aged 29, a commercial clerk, married, came under M Magnan’s care at the St Anne Asylum on August 11<sup>th</sup>, 1896

The father and grandfather of the patient were wanting in mental equilibrium, and alcoholists. From an early age he was melancholy, restless, often immersed in futile preoccupations, at school, his intelligence was mediocre and his character eccentric.

At the age of 16, he frequently indulged in onanism, he masturbated himself, employing various refinements, for instance, during several months he accentuated his erection by electrifying his penis with a small electrical machine. Onanism performed in this manner appeared to be for him a source of the keenest enjoyment.

At 18, he tried, but in vain, to associate with women, who left him indifferent, he could not attain ejaculation by any other process but masturbation. He grew sullen, very irritable, with some phenomena of nervous exhaustion and became addicted to drink, absinthe being his favourite. When he was 21, he served his time as a soldier, and his health greatly improved. Pierre B . fell in love with a young girl, and tried to marry her, but he was refused, and this was his starting point for fresh excesses in drink, and for a series of pathological accidents which he very well defines in the following terms

One Sunday, he says, I made my way towards the barracks where there was a crowd, and, finding myself next to a young nursemaid, I felt a wish to have her apron, a white apron like *those which the girl I loved used to wear*, I unfastened her apron without her noticing it, I carried it

off and masturbated myself in it then I burnt it while masturbating myself again

I then returned to the crowd, where I saw a woman wearing a white dress I felt a wish to dirty it in one way or another I went to a grocer's where I bought a small bottle of ink I then returned to the woman whom I sprinkled with this liquid and found myself in erection, *especially when looking at the stains which I had just made* When I returned to barracks I masturbated myself, and felt very keen pleasure in seeing again *in thought* the white apron and the dress which I had soiled

Three months later the subject came to Paris where he quickly again displayed signs of sexual perversion

“ One day he says I happened to be at the Bazaar of the Hôtel de Ville when my attention was drawn to a group of women The idea occurred to me, in order to enter on erection of cutting their dress with a knife which I had in my pocket, I was detected by two policemen who arrested me as a pickpocket *though I had cut the dress in quite a different direction to the pocket* Another time I was arrested for having thrown some oil on a white dress, and was sentenced to three months imprisonment A few days after I was set at liberty another sentence of six months imprisonment was inflicted on me for having stained with ink a young woman who was wearing a light dress I made no protest, for I was ashamed of what had happened to me ’

Pierre B often enters into erection “ tempted by women's garments, but the erection is still stronger when his attention is drawn to the stains which may happen to be upon these articles *I have followed women he said who had stains upon their garments, though I was ignorant how these stains were produced, and the fixation of these stains has occasioned me a very lively erection and some*



*times even the loss of the sperm* The patient was obliged to engage, according to his expression, upon a terrible struggle against himself in order not to deface women's dresses, every time that this idea (accompanied by a slight erection) occurred to him.

This unhappy man finally was arrested again, at the moment when he was *burning a young woman's dress with a cigar* He confessed that he had already burned several in this way, in order to procure erections for himself, ejaculation followed sometimes in such a case, when he judged that he had produced a slightly more intense burning On Dr Garnier's report, he was declared irresponsible for his actions. "

**Azoophilists guilty of Public Outrages on Decency** Thoinot admits the existence of a category of azoophilists who are guilty of public outrages on decency He quotes a case from Charcot and Magnan, of an individual who made a fetish of the nails of women's boots

"The subject has a very clear hereditary neuropathy, let us add that he displays personal marks consistent with hysterical symptoms, he has hypochondriacal ideas and hallucinations

At the age of 6 or 7, he was already led by an irresistible impulse to look at women's feet to see if there were any *nails in their shoes*, when there were any, the sight of them produced an indefinable feeling of happiness in his whole being. The aberration increased with age, and soon contact with the nails of a woman's boots immediately produced in the subject erection and ejaculation, without the aid of any manœuvre One fine day, this individual, fascinated by the nails in the women's shoes which he saw in a bootmaker's shop, stopped, and under the influence of

an irresistible impulse, masturbated himself in the middle of the street. He was arrested and submitted to an examination by Dr Blanche who found him irresponsible for his actions.

**Men who are in love with Statues** A curious form of genital aberration is displayed by men who fall in love with statues. This neurosis was known in very ancient times. Ptolemy, on the authority of Athenaeus, states that a Greek became inspired with a passion for a statue of Cupid in the gallery of Delphos. Shut up alone with the statue he satiated his passion upon it, and laid at its feet a wreath as the price of his enjoyment. The Oracle of Delphos, when consulted, declared that the madman must be set at liberty, as he had paid for his pleasure.

Lucian and St Clément of Alexandria speak of a young man who fell madly in love with a Venus of Praxiteles. He hid himself one night in the temple and indulged in amorous embraces of the goddess, who bore marks of the outrage which she had undergone.

Philemon and the poet Alexis also make mention, on the authority of Athenaeus, of an individual named Cleophas, who shut himself up in the temple of Samos in order to possess a statue of Parian marble with which he had fallen in love. But as the coldness and hardness of the marble did not allow him to attain his object he went and bought a piece of meat, which he placed at the genital parts of the statue, and he was then able to satiate his passion.

‘ Some years ago at the Louvre a madman tried to defile the Venus of Milo, and was arrested by the attendants.

‘ It is not uncommon in the Luxembourg and in the

National Museums to see individuals masturbating themselves before the statues. ”

“ A few years ago a young man was arrested at St-Petersburg, who was in the habit of paying too frequent visits by night to a statue of a nymph, which was placed on the terrace of a villa. ” (E. Laurent.)

## CHAPTER X

### GENITAL ABERRATIONS (*CONTINUED*)

#### NECROPHILY

Definition of Necrophily

General Characteristics of Necrophily

Is Necrophily a special aberration? — Contradictory opinions of  
Thoinot and Krafft Ebing

*A* Viciously depraved Necrophilists

Observations — The Convicts who violated Corpses

*B* Fetish Necrophilists Observations

*C* Sadist Necrophilists Observations

The son who assassinated his Mother and violated her Corpse

Bertrand the disinterer of Corpses

The Kanaka Necrophilists of New Caledonia

The Arab Bechir

Louis the Kanaka Interpreter

**Definition of Necrophily** The Necrophilist is the *lover of the dead* sometimes a platonic lover but who often also enters into *sexual intercourse* with corpses, and, at the highest degree of aberration, indulges in strange and violent profanations upon the dead

This definition of Thoinot well shows the necrophilist under his true light, ' for it embraces all the known facts of necrophily, and yet it does not prejudge anything of the nature itself of the aberration which does not yet appear to me to be elucidated on all points

**General Characteristics of Necrophily** We

shall see by the observations given further on, and notably by that of Sergeant Bertrand, that if necrophilists are sometimes merely depraved individuals, they are also certainly diseased and degenerate. They have, unfortunately for themselves, in this latter category, the *impulse obsession*, just as fetishists and exhibitionists. Necrophily therefore, in many cases is a clearly characterized mental aberration

Necrophilists therefore may be arranged in two very distinct categories the first are the *viciously depraved*, and the second are the perverted or *aberrant degenerates*.

**Is Necrophily a special Aberration?** Must we make of necrophily a separate class, like exhibitionism and fetishism, which we have already considered, and like sadism and masochism which we shall consider later on? Thoinot is clearly opposed to this method of solving the question, and is in complete disagreement with Krafft-Ebing. Let us quote the former's argument

**Contradictory Opinions of Thoinot and Krafft-Ebing** "I do not consider that this morbid necrophily deserves to be made a separate class. The single fact which constitutes its peculiar physiognomy, that of aiming at corpses, does not seem to me a sufficient title to allow it a distinct existence, otherwise than clinically. The well-ascertained facts of necrophily appear to me to incline either to sadism or to fetishism

Von Krafft-Ebing makes necrophily a branch of sadism, "to the horrible group of assassins for pleasure, the necrophilists naturally come next, he says, for among the former, a representation which in itself arouses horror, and makes the healthy or non-degenerate man shudder, is

accompanied by sensations of pleasure, and thus becomes an *impulse to the acts of the necrophilist*

This assimilation does not appear to me to be in any way justified at least for the whole number of known cases. Certainly the case of Sergeant Bertrand may be claimed by sadism. But the individuals who come and masturbate themselves before corpses, and those who at the sight or the idea of a funeral ceremony feel a violent genital excitation, are not they for the most part fetishists? The fetish is here of a special kind, a corpse or the mortuary apparatus, but it is a fetish none the less, if, as we remarked above, we are willing to enlarge the limit of fetishists and insexualize fetishism. (L. Thoinot)

Our opinion is that the opinions of the two learned physicians are too absolute. Necrophily as an aberration, may co-exist with fetishism and sadism and there is ground for making that distinction. On the other hand, we know that there are viciously depraved necrophilists. We will proceed to study cases of necrophily relating to these three divisions.

We shall therefore observe successively

A The viciously depraved necrophilists

B The fetish necrophilists

C The sadist necrophilists

### A The Viciously-depraved Necrophilists

— **Observations** Regarding this we read in Herodotus "As for the women of quality when they are dead, they are not sent to the embalmers immediately, any more than those who are beautiful and who have been held in high esteem, but only three or four days after their death. This precaution is taken for fear lest the embalmers should abuse the bodies which are entrusted to them. It is said that one was recently caught in the act

with a dead woman, and that upon the accusation of one of his comrades (Customs of the Egyptians) Herodotus also relates that Periander, Tyrant of Corinth, enjoyed his wife after her death." (Dr Huguet, *De l'Onanisme* )

" In 1787, at Citeaux, near Dijon, an ancestor of mine, called Michera, who was physician to this famous Abbey, left the convent one day to go and see in a cottage, situated in the middle of the wood, the wife of a woodcutter whom he had found dying on the previous day. The husband, occupied in hard work at a distance from his cottage, was obliged to leave his wife, who had no children, relatives or neighbours about her. When he opened the cottage door, my grandfather beheld a monstrous sight. A begging-friar was performing the act of coition upon the woman's body, which was but a corpse. " (Michera *Union médicale*, 17<sup>th</sup> July 1849 )

" Some years before the Revolution of 1789, a priest was convicted of having satiated his passion upon the still warm corpse of a woman, near whom he had been placed to recite the prayers. " (Legrand de Saulle, *la Folie devant les Tribunaux* )

Moreau of Tours gives us a very interesting case, which appears to us worthy of being placed in the same rank as the preceding

" The wife of T. a collar-dresser in the rue Chaudron, died. She was to be buried on Tuesday morning. A friend of the husband's, named L., living in the same street, offered to watch by the body during one of the periods when T. was obliged to be absent on account of the last formalities. The husband accepted his offer, and L. installed himself by the dead woman's bed-side, together with his son, a young man aged 17

It was ten o'clock in the evening L. sent his son away, and remained alone with the corpse. The husband.

who was detained at the printers of the funeral cards, did not return

Then an incomprehensible, unnatural, horrible idea entered the mind of the watcher by the corpse. He blew out the candles by the bed, and the icy, stiffened corpse already in a state of decomposition, was a prey to this nameless vampire

During this time the husband returned. Astonished at not seeing any light in his house, he called for his friend L. The latter, after a few instants replied in a broken voice. He was disordered, pale, and horribly changed, so he appeared by the light of a candle which was relit and his first movement was for flight.

But the husband saw that the corpse had been disturbed and that the bed was in disorder. Mad with grief, not daring to guess at the profanation, he flew at the guilty man's throat. He called for aid, he even seized a knife, and had not a neighbour intervened justice would soon have been done. In the confusion L. contrived to escape. D'Pousson scientifically established the fact of the sacrilege (Moreau, *Des aberrations du sens génésique* )

**A Convict who violated Corpses** I give beneath an entirely unpublished observation which I collected when I was a doctor in French Guiana. It is remarkable owing to the coexistence with necrophily of inversion, sodomy, and if credit is to be given to the guilty man's confession of sadism. It is a fresh proof that all genital aberrations and acts of madness have a common foundation and vary only in their manifestations.

“ The Military Hospital receives not only the soldiers and those who are employed in the Marine Department but also the transported convicts and the Coolies brought from India both men and women. Consequently the



number of subjects intended for the dissecting room is considerable, and it is a difficult matter to make a selection. It would be easy to make a comparative anatomical study of the different races of mankind, as the convict establishment receives not only Europeans, but also prisoners from Africa and the Antilles. Annamites and Chinese may equally be seen there, condemned for crimes against the common law.

The dissecting room of Cayenne is situated in a building adjoining the Hospital, well-lighted and airy. It communicates with the Hospital by a private door, of which the doctors alone have the key. The attendant in the dissecting room was an old convict, who had been in the prison for 30 years, he had formerly been a medical student, and was condemned to penal servitude for life for the murder of his mistress. The old rascal had not his equal for getting ready the subjects for anatomy. Dissection being a very troublesome task in warm and moist climates like Guiana, after having selected on the previous evening the subjects and organs to be dissected, the attendant used to detach the pieces and put them to macerate in a preservative solution. On several occasions, I thought I had remarked, when I was dissecting the genital organs of the coolie women, that they were not in a state of perfect integrity, as the organs of women should be who have died of exhaustion and poverty, as was the case with most of the unfortunate coolies who were brought to the Hospital to die. One day in particular, I found the vulva and the vagina of a child, aged 7 or 8, almost as much dilated as those of a fully-grown woman, and the rectum also bore traces of similar manœuvres. The absence of characteristic lesions furnished me with the proof that these manœuvres had not been performed while the subject was alive. Therefore, strongly suspecting the dissecting-room attendant, I

kept my suspicions to myself and resolved to keep an active watch, so as to discover the author of these infamous acts. At length I had a positive proof of it. A young convict, an avowed passive pederast (a bully of the town) had been murdered through jealousy by one of his lovers whom he had deserted and murdered under peculiarly atrocious conditions (1). The execution had taken place at 6 o'clock, and the body was then taken to the dissecting room, where, during the morning from 9 to 10 o'clock, various galvanic experiments were made. I easily obtained permission to make a special study of the genital organs, and I informed the dissecting room attendant that I should come in the afternoon after 3 o'clock to make a dissection. But after luncheon, I came back before 1 o'clock, in order to have more time to myself. I began the study with the rectum in order to discover if the corpse did not display signs of passive sodomy. I found nothing at first but a slightly pronounced relaxed sphincter yet somewhat considerably dilated. The existence of numerous brown, bushy hairs all round it, hairs which were not worn away, and the circular shape of the anus displaying no infundibulum left me in doubt regarding the passive tastes. The external genital organs, on the contrary, displayed undoubted signs of the active pederast. The testicles were of a size above the average (of the dimension of a small hen's egg), and the pubes was covered with black, bushy hair. The seminal vesicles contained a quantity of sperm.

The subject was very vigorous, although of medium height, with his muscles strongly developed, and solidly built. He had been born in Provence, his skin was almost as brown as that of a mulatto, but (a curious detail) the

(1) We have given in the First Volume an account of the mutilations which this wretched creature underwent before his death.

skin of his gland was of a bright red. The gland had a conical, elongated shape, retracted at the crown, forming but a small projecture, and, commencing from this point, the penis, of very pronounced conical shape, grew gradually wider to the root, the diameter of which was almost double that of the gland. The injective apparatus gave dimensions for length and size at the root much above the average (48 millimètres in diameter by 18 in length), while the gland, on the contrary, although 45 millimètres in length, was not 3 centimètres wide. The generally very pronounced conical shape resembled the shape of a dog's penis.

The evidence had revealed that the criminal was endowed with remarkable salacity, and that he ended by tiring his lover by repeated coitions.

Pursuing my dissection further, after removing the external apparatus, I made a section through the perineum to open the rectum, and I found, to my surprise, in the rectum, a quantity of fresh sperm which had evidently been introduced but a short time. The attendant's embarrassed air at my discovery put me on the right track, and finally I made him confess that he had indulged in pederastic manœuvres on the corpse of the guillotined convict, and that he was in the habit of doing so upon the corpses of women and girls. Usually he had taken care to wash carefully the internal part, so as to remove the traces of sperm. My unexpected arrival two hours before he thought, had prevented him from removing the proofs of his odious profanation. He must really have been void of all human feeling to indulge in coition on the corpse of a guillotined criminal. The Marquis de Sade has related nothing so hideous in his horrible tales. I tried to make him confess what pleasure he found in such a pastime. He only acknowledged that this perverted taste had come to him at the

beginning of his medical studies, and that the sight of the corpses of women laid out upon the slab produced in him attacks of internal priapism. The woman he murdered he had stifled under a pillow and he had enjoyed her while she was in her death agony. Before the Cour d'Assises he had maintained that she died of a cerebral congestion, after a night of orgies together in which they had both got very drunk, and that he had copulated with her several times in the night, thinking that she was only drunk, and that it was only in the morning when he woke up that he had found a corpse already cold at his side. Condemned only to 10 years, and extenuating circumstances having been conceded, he had finally, after several attempts to escape, been condemned to perpetual imprisonment. He was mad, he said in prison and the post which he occupied allowed him to satiate his filthy passion without any danger to himself.

### **B Fetish necrophilists — Observations**

Fetish Necrophilists do not always possess the object of their strange passion, for it is not always that a corpse is at hand, and then become furious masturbators.

When they can see a corpse they have an erection and pollute themselves.

“A series of scandalous facts occurred a few years ago at the Morgue in Paris, they were quickly suppressed and a watchful care is exercised to prevent their recurrence. A certain number of individuals were repeatedly caught in the act of masturbating themselves before the glass case in which the bodies are exposed these were individuals of that class which I have called above, *platonic necrophilists* (Thoinot).

‘I know a case in which a subject only entered on erection by having a funeral scene represented in a brothel. He

had the room hung with black and lit with wax-tapers, and prayers were said; apart from this artificial copy of funeral display, he remained absolutely impotent." (Thoinot)

"A case almost analogous is given by M. Brouardel; in this, an unhappy subject could not meet a funeral or assist at a mass for the dead, without experiencing terrible erections which drove him to despair, and compelled him, at his father's death, to abstain from assisting at the ceremony which he did not wish to profane." (Thoinot.)

We read in Leo Taval (1) the proof that this aberration is known and made use of in the brothels, where, for money, everything is to be found in this good town of Paris.

"There are to be found usually, in one room of the establishment, black hangings, a mortuary bed, in a word all the paraphernalia of woe. But one of the principal brothels of Paris has permanently a special chamber, intended for those customers who wish to make trial of vampirism

The walls of the room are hung with black satin, strewn with silver tears. In the middle is a very rich catafalque. A woman, apparently lifeless, is there, lying in an open coffin with her head reposing on a velvet cushion. All around are tall tapers standing in large silver candlesticks. In the four corners of the apartment are funeral urns and perfuming-pans, burning, with the perfumes, a mixture of alcohol and salt, the pale flames of which light up the catafalque, and give to the flesh of the pseudo-dead, a corpse-like colour.

The libidinous fool, who has paid 10 *louis* for this scene, is introduced. There is a *prie-dieu* at which he kneels. A harmonium, placed in an adjoining closet, plays the *Dies iræ* or the *De profundis*. Then to the strains of this fune-

(1) *La Corruption Fin de Siècle* Paris, Georges Carré

real music, the vampire rushes upon the girl, who pretends to be dead, and has orders not to move, whatever may happen '.

When the necrophile fetishist is able to obtain a corpse, either through the facilities offered by his position (as a grave-digger or dissecting room attendant, etc.), or because he is rich enough to pay for his caprice with gold, he feels no hesitation.

We give three interesting observations of this "A young girl aged 16 belonging to one of the first families in the town had just died. Part of the night had passed, when the sound of a piece of furniture falling was heard in the chamber of the dead. The mother, whose apartment adjoined, hurried in. As she entered the room, she saw a man in his shirt escaping from her daughter's bed. In her terror she uttered a loud cry, which brought everybody in the house round her. They seized the unknown who appeared to be nearly unconscious of what was going on round, and only answered confusedly to the questions which were put to him. At first they thought that he was a thief, but the way he was dressed and certain signs led their researches in another direction, and it was soon discovered that the young girl had been deflowered and several times polluted. On examination, it was found that the attendant had been gained over by a bribe, and soon other revelations showed that this was not the first attempt on the part of this wretch, who had received an excellent education, enjoyed a good income, and was of good family. It was shewn at the trial that he had slipped a great number of times into the bed of young women, who had died and had there indulged his detestable passion. "He was sentenced to imprisonment for life (Brierre de Boismont *Gazette médicale*).

"The subject was a certain X, aged 27, of a lym

phatic temperament, but nevertheless endowed with a great muscular strength. From his earliest years he displayed undoubted signs of idiocy. As he advanced in years, his want of intelligence became more and more marked.

X... was never able to learn to read; besides this he was violent, unmanageable, and full of strange ways. Brought up under the care of the managers of the Troyes Foulting Hospital, he was placed successively with several peasants, but none of them were able to keep him. They brought him back to the Hospital, declaring that they could do nothing with him.

Later on, X ... became subject to attacks of periodical mania. Almost every month, he was extremely violent for several days, abusing the people about him, uttering threats of murder and incendiarism. It was then sometimes necessary to shut him up in a cell, and in some cases to lock him in a strait waist-coat.

From time to time, he left the Hospital by stealth, and after wandering about the country for several days, returned exhausted with fatigue, his clothes in rags, and covered with mud. Nevertheless, between the periods of his attacks, X.... was able to perform the hardest work it was impossible to tire him, and he did the work himself of several men. Therefore, in spite of his imbecile state, farmers were to be found from time to time who agreed to take him.

A fact, however, of extreme gravity put an end to his attempts at liberty.

X ... happened to be with a farmer at Eslissac, when he committed an attempt at rape upon a peasant woman in the presence of five or six persons. They were compelled to confine him again at the Troyes Hospital where

monstrous acts soon took place which we have now to relate

X , evading the vigilance of the attendants, gained admittance to the dead house, when he knew that a woman had been placed there, and committed the most infamous profanations

He boasted publicly of these acts, of which he did not appear to realize the gravity At first, they could not believe it, but, when summoned before the Superintendent, X related what had occurred in a manner to remove all doubts ' (Baillarger *Cas remarquable de maladie mentale* Lecture à l'Académie de Médecine )

' In 1886, similar attempts took place at the cemetery of St Ouen On the night of the 25<sup>th</sup>-26<sup>th</sup> of March the keepers found on the declivity the body of a young girl, 18 years of age, named Mary Fernandé who had been interred the previous day at five o'clock in the evening The corpse had been disinterred taken from the coffin and thrown about 20 mètres from the place where it had been buried, it had undergone the worst outrages Some days afterwards it was noticed that the grave of a little girl had been broken into and the body removed

The police pursued their investigations and further away near a hedge forming the boundary, they found a shroud At that moment they saw a man dart away from the window of an empty house adjacent They went in pursuit and succeeded in arresting him They then visited the house and there they found the small corpse

The individual who had been arrested was questioned, he made no reply and seemed to be dumbfounded

His identity however was soon established

His name was Blot (Henri), he was 26 years of age, a journalist living at No 7 rue Christian

Blot was married and the father of one child, but his



wife, whom he had treated brutally, had been obliged to leave him.

He was well acquainted with the topography and customs of the Cemetery. His father had been employed there, and he himself had worked there as a grave-digger.

He was submitted to a medico-legal examination, and the doctor detected in him habits of intemperance, "and of imperfections due to morbid heredity, but he did not consider him to be a lunatic," and while taking count of his pathological antecedents, the man of skill judged that there was a repression.

Blot is a tall young man, with a red moustache, closely cut hair and a haggard eye. He says that he has acted under the impulse of a will stronger than his own. The cemetery keepers publish a detail of considerable importance. When Blot was a grave-digger at St-Ouen, says one of the witnesses, I often saw half-opened coffins near the common grave, the head and body were visible. Since Blot left the Cemetery, this has not occurred again.

His wife's deposition is no less important.

"During the first six weeks of our union, I was almost happy. But my husband soon grew addicted to absinthe, and became brutal. At bottom his character was cunning. When we were away from home, he used to kiss me before people, and kick me underneath the table. At home, when we were alone, he used to strike me with his fist and kick me no matter where

When I was in the family-way, he treated me with abominable brutality, in order to bring about a miscarriage. I left him in disgust."

Blot was sentenced to two years' imprisonment.

**C Sadistic necrophilists** Here the Sadist element comes into play. not being able to possess his victim while

alive, in consequence of her resistance, the aberrant kills her, and then satisfies his passion upon her still warm body

' One, P by name had premeditated an odious act upon the daughter of the proprietor of the house where he was employed as servant

On the day, when he had promised himself to put his criminal project into execution, the girl was at a country fête

P then turned his brutality upon the mother, aged 53 furious at her resistance, he beat her to death with a spade and committed the last outrages upon her corpse then, throwing it into the water, he soon drew it out again in order to repeat his acts of bestiality

P was sentenced to death, and executed at Beauvais on the 13<sup>th</sup> of Nov 1879

After the execution D Evrard made an autopsy of the brain before several of his colleagues He found very pronounced cerebral lesions, and among others a *thickening and adherences of the meninges on a level with the frontal circumvolutions* These lesions the pathological significance of which is known, inspired MM Cornil and Galippe who took count of the fact with this reflection which we reproduce without comment If the guillotine must be included in the treatment of mental alienation, let it be so stated

In addition to this observation which we have borrowed from Moreau, let us give another which is related by him

" A young man aged 24 carried away by an ignoble passion, indulged in monstrous acts upon children of 9 years of age, and murdered his last victim because he was unable to possess her when alive He committed this last crime in a swamp, he gagged his victim and thrust a branch of tamarisk into her abdomen it was upon this mutilated corpse that he satiated his bestiality (*Cour d Assises de la Charente-Inférieure Nov 24 1876*)

**A Son who murdered and violated his Mother's corpse** On Oct 15<sup>th</sup>, 1890, at Binteniac, in the *arrondissement* of Saint-Mâlo, the corpse of the woman X was found in the loft of a small homestead, her son was lying by her side in a deep and calm slumber, a part of the mother's intestines were thrown over his shoulder, for the son had ripped open her bowels. When he awoke he was quite stupefied, his faculties, in complete disorder, could leave no doubt upon his mental condition. He was apprehended. Dr Porre, called in to examine the state of the corpse, ascertained first of all that there had been a sexual violation. The autopsy conclusively established the fact that the individual after his monstrous act, had passed his arm into the vagina, and with a violence of which unfortunately the inference is undeniable, staved in the bottom of the conduit, thrown the matrix on one side, and penetrated into the abdominal cavity, from which he dragged out two mètres of intestines brutally torn, he reached as far as the liver, of which he brought out some shreds, then he laid down beside his mother and slept.

The autopsy revealed wide hæmorrhagic foci of very recent date, and it was the medico-legal conclusion that the woman X. . had been suddenly seized with an attack of apoplexy, when she went up to her garret.

The enquiry in fact demonstrated that the unhappy woman went up to look for her son, the latter came up after her, found her dead, and satiated his bestial passion, then committing acts of anatomical ferocity, the horror of which no pen can adequately describe. The individual suffered from alcoholism, and had been very mad for a long time. A year previously a doctor had certified as to his mental state, declaring that he was very dangerous, the authorities, for reasons which it does not concern us to know, postponed his confinement in an Asylum. The

consequences of this are to be seen (D<sup>r</sup> Henry Bonnet)

It is plainly evident from this fact adds D Bonnet that a considerable reform is required in our dealings with lunatics The individual whose hideous actions we have related, was named Désiré Harlang, he was a farmer at Morandais in Bienbénier (Ille et-Vilaine), after two days detention he was released

If his being set at liberty took place, it is the fault of our code, which is unwilling that Harlang's monstrous crime should be provided against by any passage of the law

His bestial instinct was only let loose upon a corpse — the corpse of her who had given him birth Now, in order that this may be punishable, there must be a violation of the grave

Madness madness of the most dangerous kind was a sad heritage in the family, on a previous occasion the victim herself, in the course of a fit, would have kicked to death the father of the son who mutilated her in such a horrible way (Camille Allaman *Des Aliénés Criminels* Paris Henri Jouve 1891)

**Bertrand the Disinterer of Corpses** The most interesting observation perhaps of all is that of the famous Sergeant Bertrand surnamed the *disinterer of corpses* Tardieu relates it at length after the very complete and thoroughly sifted study of D Marchal de Calvi, and publishes the autograph manuscript of Bertrand together with a letter addressed by the latter to Marchal de Calvi

As these documents are too long to be reproduced *in extenso* we prefer to give the summing up of them by Krafft Ebing, who at the same time gives his opinion upon the causes of the aberration of sadist necrophilists

‘ The cases in which the author of the deed maltreats and dismembers the corpse are more easy to explain They

form an immediate counterpart to those who murder for the sake of pleasure, granting that the pleasure in those individuals is connected with cruelty, or at least to the inclination to commit assaults upon the woman. Perhaps a remnant of moral scruples makes the individual recoil before the idea of committing these cruel acts upon the person of a living woman, perhaps the imagination leaves out murder for pleasure, and only concerns itself with the result of the murder: the corpse. It is probable that the idea of the absence of will on the part of the corpse plays a part here." (Krafft-Ebing.)

Sergeant Bertrand was a man of delicate constitution and of strange character; from his youth, he was always taciturn and fond of solitude.

The conditions of health of his family are not sufficiently known, but it can be established that among his ancestors there were cases of mental alienation. He declares that he was affected with a strange mania for destruction from his infancy. He used to break everything which fell into his hands.

From his infancy, he took to masturbation without having been led into it. At the age of 9, he began to evince an affection for persons of the other sex. At the age of 13, the powerful desire of satisfying his senses with women awoke in him, he masturbated himself unceasingly. When indulging in this act, he always represented to himself a room filled with women. He there figured to himself, in his imagination, that he performed the sexual act with them, and after that maltreated them. Shortly afterwards he represented them to himself, in his imagination, as corpses, and saw himself defiling these corpses. Sometimes, when he was in that state, the idea occurred to him of having to do also with men's corpses, but this idea always filled him with disgust.

Then he experienced a keen desire to place himself in contact with real corpses

For want of human corpses, he procured for himself the corpses of animals whose belly he opened and tore out their entrails, while he masturbated himself. He declares that he then felt an unspeakable pleasure. In 1846 the corpses were not sufficient for him. He killed two dogs with which he did the same thing. Towards the end of 1846 he felt a wish for the first time to make use of human corpses. At first he resisted it. In 1847, as he happened to see accidentally at the Cemetery the tomb of a dead person who had just been buried such an ardent wish seized him causing headaches and beating of his heart, that, although there were people about and he was in danger of being discovered, he set to work to disinter the corpse. Having no instrument at hand to dismember it he took a gravedigger's spade and proceeded to madly strike the corpse with it. In 1847 and 1848 a wish to brutally use the corpses manifested itself in him for fifteen days. In the midst of the greatest dangers and difficulties he satisfied this inclination about fifteen times.

He disinterred the corpses with his nails, and, such was his state of excitation that he did not even feel the wounds which he inflicted on his hands. Once in possession of the corpse he cut open the belly with his sabre or with his knife and tore out the entrails while he masturbated himself. The sex of the dead, he declared, was all the same to him but it has been ascertained that this modern vampire disinterred more corpses of women than of men. During these acts, he was in an indescribable state of sexual excitation. After dismembering the corpses, he interred them again.

In the month of July, 1848, he fell by chance upon the corpse of a girl aged 16

It was then for the first time that the wish arose within him to perform coition upon the corpse. " I covered it with kisses and pressed it like a madman to my heart All the pleasure to be felt with a living woman is as nothing in comparison with the pleasure which I experienced. After enjoying it for about fifteen minutes, I dismembered the corpse according to my habit, and tore out the entrails. I then buried it again.

Beginning with this outrage, Bertrand declares that he felt the wish to enjoy sexually the corpses before he dismembered them, and this he did with three corpses of women. But the real motive which made him disinter corpses remained the same, the dismemberment, and the pleasure which he experienced at that act was greater than what he procured from coition performed upon the corpse.

The latter act was but an episode of the principal act, and was never able to completely satisfy his lust. This was why, after the sexual act, he mutilated the corpses.

The medico-legists admitted the case of monomania. The Council of War condemned Bertrand to a year's imprisonment (Michéa, *Union méd.*, 1849 - Lunier *Annales méd -psychol*, 1849 Tardieu. *Attentats aux Mœurs*. Legrand. *La Folie devant les Tribunaux*.)

Let us add the ending by Thoinot, studying in his turn this most curious case, which he brings out with great clearness

" Coming out of the Luxembourg at 10 o'clock at night, to go to a meeting which had been appointed with me, my ill-fortune determined that I should pass by the Cemetery of Montparnasse, I felt impelled to enter it according to my usual custom, and it was while climbing over the fence that I hurt myself, I believe that it my machine

had failed me this time I should never in my life have returned to a cemetery again, *still I am sure*

*' In all my visits to the graves there as never in my previous ones my fear, and the evil feeling appeared in me, when a madrigal or a romance, I was obliged to go, it was impossible for me to procure it*

Neurophily has a two fold interest for us a psychopathical interest and a medico-legal interest — it depends in fact on the Court, — but, unfortunately it is now well known

Cases in fact are rare, besides this they are ancient, and therefore are wanting in the details which we require now a-days. It is therefore equally difficult to clearly catalogue neurophily and to classify neurophiles as well as exhibitionists.

What are neurophiles. Sometimes assuredly they are merely *perverted* individuals but they are certainly also *diseased* and *degenerate* — and as proof of this I want only the case of Sergeant Bertrand which has been so well observed that we are able to read and classify to-day without having to regret the existence of a single gap.

This unfortunate man certainly had *causes of mental alienation in his family*.

The perversion of the genital sense was awakened in him in a *precocious* way when he was nine years old he dreamt of sad scenes in which the mutilation of corpse already played a prominent part and from that period he was an unbridled masturbator — may we not say that this perversion, breaking forth so prematurely, was innate in him, as a veritable taint of degeneracy. Read the observation again and then see how this autobiography clearly reveals the *impulsion-obsession* of perverse acts. Sergeant Bertrand, like individuals with a perverted genital sense, was therefore a degenerate whose dominant mark was this singular



anomaly And if the observations which we possess were more complete, no doubt we should have no difficulty in making the same demonstration for a certain number among them " (Thoinot )

We can but give our adherence to Thoinot's opinion Bertrand was a degenerate suffering from dementia, and he was more fit for a Lunatic Asylum than to be judged by a Council of War He was a sadic, because he operated on corpses One stage of dementia more, and he becomes a pure sadic acting to satiate his passion

Let us pity the unhappy necrophiles, for they do no harm to anybody, except to the graves in the Cemeteries

**The Kanaka Necrophilists of New Caledonia** In *Untrodden Fields* I have shown with some details the innate ferocity of the Kanaka. He never tortures his enemy while living, but he is implacable against their corpses, and mutilates them in an erotic manner, after satisfying his brutal lust upon the still palpitating bodies. During the insurrection of 1871, in New Caledonia, the Kanaka when he could not possess the white woman alive, got hold of her corpse and then violated it

### **Violation of decapitated White women.**

It is declared by numerous witnesses, that the unfortunate women and girls of the Colony, who were killed during the insurrection, were first decapitated and then violated Several were eaten, if not their whole body at least their limbs and breasts The bodies which it was possible to recover bore evident marks of erotic mutilations of a fantastic and extravagant nature.

A proof of this is contained in the report by Commandant Rivière on the massacres of Foa and Pouébo.

' The murders and incendiary fires by the Kanakas continue in the bush. The waggons are a proof of this. One of them is freighted with sixteen dead bodies, the other is full of wounded. The savages are excited over the dead, and have indulged in refinements of cruelty and lust. Some limbs are wanting, separated from the trunk by an axe. Besides this there are *ablations with the knife, and even with the teeth*, or monstrous and derisive obstructions by plugs of wood.

**Bechir, the Arab** An Arab who had been transported for political offences, acted as a scout against the Kanakas. From his report, quoted by Commandant Branda, in his *Lettres d'un Marin* I take the following lines:

Behind the Telegraph Office, at Kluch's house, the husband had his head beaten in, the wife was naked, murdered, and had a *broken bottle thrust into her abdomen*.

At the Mostinis, all were dead. Mademoiselle Mostini had been violated and torn, *her abdomen was opened up to the navel*. Her young sister had been struck down at the moment when she was seeking a refuge underneath the corpse. She had undergone the same mutilation as her sister.

**Louis, the Kanaka Interpreter** Finally, I bring to an end this recital of erotic manners and customs with the story of the Kanaka interpreter, Louis, who falling wildly in love with a magnificent fair woman, the English wife of a colonist, led the rebel Kanakas to her house, while her husband and the Hebridean Kanakas were absent. The woman defended herself with a shot gun, and killed two of her assailants. Louis cleft her head with the

stroke of an axe, and satisfied his lewd passion upon the palpitating body of his victim. Then the Kanakas dismembered the body, like an animal in the shambles, and roasted the flesh in the Kinaka oven.

The excellent Louis, no doubt to recruit the strength which he had lost in his necrophile coition, ate the heart as his share, as well as one of the breasts and the genital parts of his victim. This is one way of proving one's love for a woman, but I doubt if the fashion will ever prevail in France

## CHAPTER XI

### GENITAL ABERRATIONS (CONTINUED)

#### BESTIALITY

##### Definition of Bestiality

Is Bestiality a Depravation or an Aberration of the Mind? — Bestiality is as the case may be either a vicious Depravation or a mental Aberration

A *Bestiality as a vice through Depravation or Perversity* — Bestiality permitted to the Mahometans as a Hygienic measure Bestiality in Ancient times Instances — Pasiphae and the Bull — The Mysteries of the Bona Dea — The Satyr and the She Goat — The Sacred He goat and the Woman — Apuleius Golden Ass

Bestiality a vice of our times — Instances Men and Dogs — Curious Observations — Annamite boy pederated by a dog — Peasant pederated by a bull — Men copulating with dogs and bitches — Unpublished Observations — Women and Dogs — Men and She Goats — Men Mares, and She Asses — The sweet hearts of the Regiment — The Fellator of Mares — Men and Fowls — Observations — The Chinese Duck trick

B *Bestiality a Disease through Degeneracy or any other mental Cause*

Observations with comments by Thoinot — Bestiality in the Brothels of Paris

**Definition of Bestiality** Bestiality is any intercourse, through the genital or other channels of the man and woman with a living being which is not of his or her species This definition, thus widened, includes the generality of the cases, not only the anal or vaginal coition of the man with a male or female beast, the counterpart of

the lascivious woman or of the passive man-pederasts, but—also the labial pollutions to which certain animals are trained

**Is Bestiality a Depravation or a Mental Aberration?** Does bestiality constitute merely a perverse act performed by debauched individuals, or has it the characteristics of a mental aberration, like fetishism and exhibitionism? Upon this point physicians are not all agreed. Pouillet makes it to be a simple genital abuse which he ranks in Onanism, and he bases his opinion on the universality of bestiality.

Garnier, who however places bestiality in the same rank as onanism of which it constitutes one of the forms, considers that “making use of animals can only be considered as a mental aberration, as a madness. The fact of men beginning with this way and of their keeping to it, as well as its extreme rarity, are the proofs of this. If depraved individuals are led to this, after draining the cup of other forms of onanism, it is an exception. Sodomy above all may lead a man to it, for bestiality for him is nothing else. On this account we include it under the head *Onanism*. ”

Krafft-Ebing enunciates an opinion which is very similar to that of Garnier

“Bestiality, however monstrous and repugnant it may appear to every honourable man, no less originates sometimes from psycho-pathological causes. A morality fallen to a very low level, a strong sexual impulsion which stumbles at obstacles to its natural satisfaction, are perhaps the principal reasons for this anti-natural satisfaction, which is met with among men as well as among women.

We know from Polak, that in Persia it frequently originates from the fixed idea that it is possible, by the sodomical act, to get rid of gonorrhœa, just as in Europe there

is still a wide-spread belief that a man can by having connection with a little girl cure himself of venereal disease. Experience has shown us that bestiality is not rare in dairies and stables. Occasionally an individual may make use of she-goats, bitches, and even of fowls, as we learn from a case reported by Tardieu and from another by Schauenstein.

Thomot declares more clearly than Krafft Ebing that 'we must regard it (bestiality) as a perversion of the genital sense, it is nothing else in fact, I do not mean in all cases, but in a great number among them certainly. It is then a morbid phenomenon, a perversion on the same lines as all those, which prevails, like the rest, over two greater characteristics, which are sufficient to mark it out, it springs from *hereditary degeneracy*, and manifests itself under the impulsive obsessive manner in a veritable episodic syndrome of degenerates.

"Kowalevsky has reported the typical case which Krafft-Ebing has borrowed, of an individual who at all times had a profound horror of women. He once wished to attempt normal coition but was unable to succeed owing to his *absolute impotence before women*. His genital life had for its sole manifestation coition with animals, fowls, ducks, horses, cows, and this abnormal instinct was first awakened in him when he was seventeen years old.

This is an evident case, you see, of a typical perversion of the genital sense, in which the inclination for animals has completely taken the place of the inclination for women, in which coition with animals is equivalent to normal coition which the patient is absolutely incapable of performing.

Well, gentlemen, what was the mental worth of this unfortunate creature? He was the son of alcoholic parents and since the age of five, he had had epileptic vertigo,

followed by short attacks of ambulatory automatism. Moreover he was a mystic

The two following cases will clearly show you the *impulsive character* of the act of bestiality. You will remark in them besides some interesting features. In the first you will find marks of physical and psychical degeneracy, the patient is weakly an absolute aversion for women, and the equivalent of normal intercourse constituted by masturbation and animal coition. In the second, you will note the precocious display (at 9 years of age) of the perversion, and its awaking, at the adult age, under the influence of *alcoholic excesses*, a feature common to all the perversions hitherto studied. " (Thoinot, *Attentats aux Mœurs* )

We shall see Thoinot's observations a little further on, with those of other authors.

**Bestiality is, as the case may be, either a Depravation or a Mental Aberration.** There are bestialists (if the word is allowed) who act thus from depravity, who are guilty of bestiality either for lewdness or for lucre's sake. These are more or less amenable to the law.

But there also are bestialists who are diseased, as is well shewn by Thoinot.

From this we obtain two principal classes

A Bestiality as a vice, through depravation or perversity

B. Diseased bestiality (through mental aberration).

Bestiality as a vice, through depravation or perversity, has as many causes as Onanism, and an author could make a deep study of the question. Perhaps we shall do so some day. It will be enough for us meanwhile

to lightly touch on it as we pass by. There are bestialists who make use of animals, for want of women or of men. Others practice it for lust's sake and others again under the inducement of money, some too in order to experience a sensation out of the common. At other times, it is in order to be cured of a venereal disease that men have connection with animals. Therefore we must not be surprised if bestiality has been known from the very earliest times.

**A brief History of Bestiality as a Vice**  
Bestiality was known from the very earliest times and notably among the Hebrews. Moses in the Book of Leviticus, thus formulates the punishment for bestialists: "And if a man lie with a beast he shall surely be put to death and ye shall slay the beast. (Levit, XX, 15) — "And if any woman approach unto any beast and lie down thereto, thou shalt kill the woman and the beast they shall surely be put to death their blood shall be upon them. (Levit XX, 15.)

Born in warm Asiatic countries, like all the refinements of lubricity, this vile habit was known in early times in Egypt, where it even had the honours of a religion. The women, in fact, had intercourse with Mendes or Pan the sacred he-goat.

From the banks of the Nile it spread to Greece, and from thence to the Roman Empire, gaining dominion over both men and women.

"Nam et cabras, porcas, equas iniverunt viri et femine insano muscularum bestiarum amore exarserunt.

At Rome, serpents, which were brought up in the temple of Æsculapius, or kept in certain houses as the objects of pleasure for the matrons, served according to various commentators, for extra natural intercourse, for which they



were specially trained. It appears from a passage in Suetonius that Atia, the mother of Augustus, was defiled by a serpent one night when she was sleeping in the temple of Apollo

“Lego Atiam, quum solemne Apollinis sacrum media nocte venisset, posita in templo lectica, dum caeterae matronae dormirent, obdormisse draconem repente irrepisse ad eam pauloque post egressum illamque expergefactam quasi a concubitu, mariti purificasse se et statim in corpore ejus extitisse maculam, velut depicte draconis, nec potuisse unquam eximi, adeo ut mox publicis balneis perpetuo abstinerit.” (*Vita Augusti. See translation, page 344*).

The Roman women, according to Juvenal, sought after asses.

In the middle ages, bestiality was as widely spread, if not more so, than in ancient times. The men-at-arms indulged in it everywhere they went, and all animals were good alike for their passion, mares, sows, sheep, or poultry. When these companies were on the march, historians tell us, they were followed by a herd of she-goats richly caparisoned and reserved for the chiefs and their friends. Thanks to the contagion of example, the vice became general.

It is not therefore surprising to find in all the theological works, recommendations to confessors to put questions to penitents relating to bestiality. And when it was a member of the clergy who had indulged in bestialcoition, the following scale of punishment was imposed. “A priest who sins with a beast makes penance for ten years, a vicar for five, a deacon three, and a clerk two.”

### **Bestiality is permitted to Mohammedans**

In certain Eastern countries, principally in Syria, Egypt, and in Africa generally, bestiality is still very common, and

is not regarded with all the horror that it inspires in Europe. It is all a matter of manners, temperament, and customs.

Moreover, bestiality is permitted to Mohammedans, if we may believe D. Paul de Regla. "Having thus said I must speak of cases where following several doctors who in this have conformed to the advice of celebrated physicians it is allowable to commit fornication with animals of large size such as the she goat, the mule, etc. These cases are in the purely medical province, and cannot be put into practice but as a curative means, and in the interests of health alone. It is thus allowable to commit fornication with *female* animals when a man is suffering with simple or syphilitic gonorrhœa, with violent inflammations of the *Thabar* and with other affections not presenting ulcers, chancres, or any sort of wounds.

Experience has shewn that under the influence of this fornication, the man gets rid of the virus which is the cause of these diseases without its being contracted by the animal, for the virus is immediately annihilated by the great heat which lies in the animal's vulva, and by the acrid and acid qualities of the secretions of its mucous membranes. (Paul de Regla *al Ktab*)

P. de Regla says that this is the natural explanation of the numerous cases of bestiality which, at the beginning of our Algerian conquests, so frequently brought Arabs before the courts of justice. The Arabs, surprised for the most part in our cavalry stables in the very act of bestiality, seemed greatly astonished at the punishments which were inflicted upon them. For a long time no credit was given to their assertion but at length when enquiry was made it had to be recognized that this was a therapeutic means, and not a depravation of the genital sense.

**Bestiality among the Ancients**      **Instances** Among the ancients, as among the Orientals, bestiality was but a piece of dissolute behaviour, or a therapeutic formula. We find in the secret museum of the king of Naples, a group in Parian marble representing a Satyr having connection with a she-goat.

“ **The Satyr and the She-goat.** This group is more remarkable for the expression which gives life to the marble, than for the purity of the execution. It could be wished that the she-goat had been more correctly designed, but it is impossible not to admire the expression of lust and enjoyment depicted on the features of the Satyr, and even on the physiognomy of the strange object of his passion. ”  
(*Musée secret du Roi de Naples*).

The bestial commerce is not confined to the coition of men with the females of animals, as might be supposed from the group above, but it also extends, according to Herodotus, to that of women with male beasts.

**The He-goat and the Woman.** In act, this historian informs us that in his lifetime a he-goat had commerce in public with a woman in Egypt, and that this adventure was known by everybody, without any disagreeable consequences resulting to the woman. The Egyptians excused this crime under the persuasion that the god Pan having metamorphosed himself into a he-goat, there was nothing extraordinary in his vouchsafing his favour to the woman in question.

The matter would obtain the more credence, because in the language of the time, the god and the animal were called Mendes.

The shepherds of Virgil's time did not stand on ceremony with their she-goats. here is a suggestive passage,

“ We know that the jealous he-goats near the dark cave

Cast looks of anger athwart the space,  
And the Nymphs in the shade laugh like us

I will also quote the strongly affirmative passage of Plutarch

“ Wherein you Nature, though it has the law to aid it, cannot restrain your intemperance within the bounds of reason, as though it were a torrent which bears it away by force it commits very frequently and in many places great outrages, disorders and scandals against nature in the matter of this pleasure of love, for there are men who have loved she-goats, sows and mares, etc ”

**Pasiphae's Bull** The best known story is that of Pasiphae who conceived an inordinate passion for a bull of dazzling whiteness, and from this infamous traffic was born the Minotaur, a monster half bull half man

**The Mysteries of the Bona Dea** Juvenal in the *Mysteries of the Bona Dea*, describes to us the lewd manners of the Roman ladies

“ With their limbs stained red with wine, they struggle in the tilts of Venus The tribade, Lafula, challenges the girls from the brothels Insatiable and unwearied, she compels them to cry for mercy under her caresses Then she abandons herself to the tribade, Messalina, whom she adores, and who fastens herself to her flanks From all parts of the cave rises the same cry “ Men! Men! this is the moment Each matron runs after her lover If he is in bed, let him only cover himself with a mantle, and flee! ”

If the lovers are absent let them take the slaves of the house to supply their place If these have fled let them

hire water-carriers at any price. For want of men, the woman who is not provided accepts an ass. ”

**Apuleius' Golden Ass, and the Lady of Quality** That singular story, the *Metamorphoses* or the *Golden Ass*, by Apuleius, the Platonist Philosopher, is well known. A young man is changed into an ass by the sorceries of a witch. He acts as an ass, and he thinks as a man. His master shows him in public for money. The pseudo-ass eats bread and meat, and drinks wine, an uncommon occurrence in the asinine species, which attracts a numerous crowd. Here is the spicy part of the adventure.

“ Among all those whom curiosity attracted there, there was a lady of quality, of high consideration and very rich, who saw all my pleasing ways with such delight and admiration, that she was touched by my merit like Pasiphae, who was deeply in love with a bull, so that she purchased one of my nights from the freedman for a considerable sum; and this wicked man, thinking only of his own interest, handed me over without troubling himself as to what might happen to me.

When we came back from supper, we found the lady waiting for me in the place where I was accustomed to lie. Great Gods! what magnificent preparations! Four eunuchs made a bed upon the ground with coverlets of purple embroidered with gold, and a quantity of those cushions which women use in order to lie more softly and deliciously. They retired and shut the door upon us.

In the middle of the room there was a very brilliant lamp. The woman, after undressing herself, approached it in order to rub herself and me also with a very precious oil, she poured some of it into my nostrils with care; then kissing me with an intimate and earnest affection,

not like those courtesans who ply their trade to have money, but with a veritable love. Then she gave me carresses and spoke to me in passionate terms, as if I had been her lover. "I love you, I burn for you, you are the only one that I would choose, I could not live without you —and many such speeches with which women know so well how to attract men and prove their love to them.

Having taken me by the halter, she easily made me lie in the way which I had been taught, and which appeared to me neither new nor uncomfortable, although I ought long before to have cast myself into the arms of such a beautiful woman. Besides I had drunk rather a large quantity of good wine, and the sweet smelling unguent excited me so strangely to pleasure, but what disquieted me most was to know how, with such long thighs, I should be able to approach so delicate a woman, or how with so hard a horn I could squeeze such white and delicate limbs all made of milk and honey, how, again, with so large and enormous a mouth, furnished with teeth as broad as stones, I could kiss those little lips empurpled with an ambrosial dew, finally, how in spite of the lust with which she was transported, she could receive a member as large as mine.

Ah! unhappy wretch, I said to myself, you will hurt this pretty woman, and then, sacrificed to the wild beasts, you will serve to increase the gift which your master intends for the people! Nevertheless, she did not cease to excite me, to kiss me, to address agreeable words to me, and to ogle me. I have you, she said to me, I have you my pigeon, my sparrow. She soon proved to me that my ideas had been wrong, and my fear foolish, for, squeezing me in a close embrace, *she took the whole of it in*, and the more I, in order to spare her, retired backward, the

more she approached me with fury, and grasping me by the backbone, clung the closer to me; so that I thought I lacked something to satiate her pleasure, and that it was not without reason that it is said that the mother of the Minotaur took such great pleasure in her horned lover.

After passing the night thus without sleeping, the woman, in order that no one might see her, retired before day-break, having made the same bargain for the following night with the freedman, who asked for nothing better, as much on account of the great profit which he gained from it, as from the desire which he had to let his master see such an extraordinary thing, to whom he went and related it immediately " (*The Metamorphoses of the Golden Ass*, by Apuleius).

**Bestiality a Vice of our times. Instances** Without being as wide-spread as among the ancients, or during the Middle Ages, it is undeniable that bestiality is not uncommon. It is met with in the Cavalry regiments, and in country districts among ass-drivers and muleteers; but it is above all shepherds, swineherds, goat-herds, cow-herds and tenders of geese and turkeys, etc., who indulge in the bestial act with the animals which they tend. There are few villages where there is not one of those degraded beings known by a name employed to designate their foul tastes

**Men and Dogs. Curious Observations.** It is not unusual to see our judges sentencing prisoners who have been caught in the very act of bestiality in public places.

Thus a *Chambre correctionnelle* of Paris, on Jan. 5<sup>th</sup> 1880, condemned to four months' imprisonment and a fine of 16 francs, an old man of 74, who was arrested on the

2<sup>d</sup> of the month in a urinal, in the Rue Puébla at the moment when having introduced his penis into the jaws of a large Newfoundland dog, he was proceeding to manualize the animal

And another sentence of six months imprisonment and 16 francs was pronounced on one D , born in Paris, married and the father of three children, who was surprised in a urinal on the Boulevard Voltaire on his knees and with a dog between his thighs The officer who stated the facts pointed out in his report that guided by the plaintive cries of an animal, he was induced to enter the urinal, and there arrested the accused whose dress was covered with water (Pouillet )

Pouillet's two observations do not acquaint us with the mental condition of the two men caught *in flagrante delicto* In these two cases the animals played a passive part It is not the same in the following curious observation, due to Tardieu in which the animal, on the contrary plays the active part It deserves to be quoted *in extenso*, on account of the anatomo-physiological discussion to which it has given rise

“ The third case of bestiality, which has given rise to a quite recent prosecution, was the occasion of a medico legal report very new in its object on the part of a veterinary surgeon, whose latest opinion I reproduce, but I ought previously to give an account of the circumstances under which the act occurred and those which resulted from the *pro és verbal*, which follows, and which I quote *in extenso*

‘ On April 28<sup>th</sup>, in the year 1892, we a commissary of police from information which we received regarding an outrage against public decency committed by one N , a surveyor of roads, and learning that every information regarding this loathsome act could be supplied by one



L. . a labourer, caused the said L... .o appear before us and he there stated as follows .

“ On the 17<sup>th</sup> inst., about 10 o'clock in the morning, I was working between the Lacroix and Robert Joly roads. L . was employed in cutting withies in the wood not far from me . at this time I wanted to smoke a pipe, and I left my work to go and ask L for a match, after going about 50 mètres, I heard a rustling in the wood to my left, and I stopped short, the noise still continuing, I turned aside from my original direction and took a few steps forward

All at once I noticed a dog which I recognized as belonging to M. M . I advanced a few paces further with much precaution, and I observed the said N..... surveyor of roads, with his trowsers down and his sexual parts exposed, his body bent with his face towards the ground, his head being turned almost in my direction.

There I saw N . . and the dog leaning one against the other; N. . in the above position with his right hand behind his back, caressing the dog and pulling about its genital parts with his fingers, I remained thus as a spectator for several minutes, when the act was consummated I saw the dog's member coming out of N... .'s fundament.

N..... then raised his head, and seeing me wanted to set the dog upon me to bite me, several times crying out “ Bite him! ” I observed to N.. .. that the dog was no worse than he, and that I was not afraid of it. •

I went away directly, and a few paces from the spot, I met A. L . I told him that if I had known that he was so near me, I should have called him to let him see the act of which I had just been a witness, and which I hastened to relate to him

L. A... aged 16, a labourer, was also heard as a wit-

ness in the above affair, and declared as follows ‘ On April 17<sup>th</sup> I was cutting withies in the forest of Rambouillet About half past nine I saw the said N , surveyor of roads, accompanied by M M s dog, I remarked to N that it was fortunate that my father was not there at that moment, or he would not go into the forest with the dog, seeing that that was expressly forbidden, upon this he laughed at me and disappeared with the dog into the midst of the wood About a quarter past ten I heard a dog barking I left my work to see if the dog were hunting When I reached the Allée des Chantillons, I saw the said A When I got near him, he said to me, If I had known that you were so near to me, I should have come to look for you to let you see something awful, which I have just witnessed

Here the witness L made word for word the statement as it is written opposite related to him by L immediately after the act had been consummated, and adds that since that day the dog cannot leave N

N aged 43, surveyor of roads, was questioned on the facts which are alleged against him, and replied as follows ‘ On the 17<sup>th</sup> inst about 10 o clock in the morning as I was going to my work at a stone quarry situated in the forest I was accompanied by a large dog belonging to M M , a farmer When I reached the wood, and was in rather a dense spot and believing myself to be sheltered there from everybody’s gaze I unbuttoned and took down my trowsers, I then bent downwards with my face almost against the ground and presented my posterior to the dog to lick me, which he did This was done with the object of allaying the pain caused me by my thighs rubbing together as I walked

“ It is no good my laying any further stress upon other points, it is true that I was seen in the wood, and in the

position which I have just indicated to you by the said L... , but what he asserts is only a falsehood ”

N. ... was indicted and tried for an outrage an public decency, and was sentenced to a year's imprisonment. The Court of Appeal of Paris, being of opinion that it had not been established that copulation between the man and the dog took place, but that N.. . had indulged in obscene manœuvres in public, reduced his sentence to three months' imprisonment

In the course of the pleadings, the following piece of evidence was produced. It deserves to be quoted.

**Medico-legal consultation by M. Janet, veterinary surgeon at Rambouillet, May 14<sup>th</sup>, 1872**

QUESTION . *Can a dog perform anal copulation upon a man?*

No, I think not, for the following reasons 1<sup>st</sup>, because the penis of a dog has a very special conformation which is only suitable for generation with his own species.

2<sup>nd</sup>, because its penis, which is very pointed and slender, has an interior bone covered with a very sensitive erectile tissue, which, during accoupling, swells considerably, forms a plug inside the vagina, and prevents the dog from withdrawing immediately afterwards, the ejection of the spermatic secretion being very slow, which explains why one often sees dogs and bitches unable to separate, and remaining joined together as long as the erectile tissue has not shrunk nor become soft and flaccid again.

In this painful situation, these poor beasts are very frequently the victims of odious brutalities

When bitches are on heat, that is to say in a state of extreme excitement through venereal desires, the vaginal opening becomes dilated very easily, and the mucous mem-

branes acquire a great elasticity, it is then that the dog is able to introduce his penis into it, which is very difficult for him when the bitch has returned to her normal state

How then could the dog, which cannot cover the bitch when she is quiet on account of contraction and resistance of the vaginal tissues, succeed in introducing his penis into a man's rectum? This appears to me impossible for the reasons which I have just given, and also for the following physiological reasons, which I will endeavour to make clear

1<sup>st</sup> On seeing a man's posterior, I do not think that it is in the nature of a dog to feel such ardent venereal desires as on seeing a bitch

2<sup>d</sup> The anatomical constitution of his penis which is very flexible at its point, does not give enough stiffness for him to introduce it into a man's anus and to overcome the very great resistance of the sphincter, the circular muscle of the anus the contractility of which is excessively powerful

3<sup>rd</sup> The man's buttocks also display a surface large enough to put the dog farther away and to prevent the introduction of the penis the length of which is diminished in proportion as the internal bone which forms a protuberance is brought nearer to the point. In this case only a rubbing of the penis on the skin is possible

4<sup>th</sup> The man being on his knees with his hands resting on the ground, facilitating by his position the pederasty of the dog, will never attain his object if the animal not being very tall, cannot encircle his body with his two fore paws so as to have a solid point of support

I have acquired the certitude of what I have stated by placing the dog upon a man who was willing to lend himself to the experiment. Placed, kept there, and held up as he was by me, the dog (the same one that appeared in

the case) if he had been perfectly accustomed to the action, would have been eager to try and satisfy his genesic desires, while, on the contrary, he showed indifference, did not understand what was asked of him, and tried to get away; he has given us the evident proof of unwillingness and innocence

If, contrary to all physiological estimation, the dog had succeeded in overcoming all the obstacles and in completely introducing his penis into the man's rectum, the effect of the erectile tissue of the bone would immediately have been produced, and caused the enormous natural swelling (as in the bitch's vagina during the process of covering) which would have compelled the two creatures to remain stuck together during the entire period of the energetic contraction of the sphincter

You see here then this most curious picture - the man compelled to remain in the quadrupedal position, and he on his part, and the dog on his, obliged to pull in order to free themselves from the bond which attaches them, the man unable to get up or to stand upright without lifting the dog from the ground, causing himself extreme pain and exposing himself to be dangerously bitten. In this case the monstrosity would be undeniable

I conclude therefore that the fact of pederasty of the dog with the man is impossible, owing to the anatomical conformation of the anus of the one and of the penis of the other

I have made numerous researches in many works, but I have not found a single similar case of bestiality "

I should not venture, I confess, to make such a formal pronouncement in the negative And without wishing to enter here into unnecessary detail, I shall confine myself to recalling the fact that too numerous instances of bestiality have been positively verified in the case of women of

evil life for us to completely exonerate the canine species of acts similar to that which has just been related ' (Tardieu )

**Attentats à la Pudeur** I understand Tardieu's reticences " When in doubt abstain But to the defence of M Janer, concluding that " the fact of the pederasty of the dog is impossible, owing to the anatomical conformation of the anus of the one and of the penis of the other, ' I shall contrast an observation of my own and another of Garnier which prove the possibility of the complete consummation of the anal coition of dog and man Let us first give Garnier's observation

" A doctor, summoned to attend a male servant aged 18, found a wound two or three centimetres long in the anus, its margin appearing to have been caused by a fall upon a vine-prop or upon a piece of wood from the pile leading to the wounded man's room But the latter confessed at length, that, for some time he had been *served* by a salacious and vigorous spaniel One day when he was called by his masters not being able to disengage himself, and fearing lest he should be discovered, quite beside himself, he seized hold of the dog's penis and drew it out violently, the anal tear resulted from this

This observation is incomplete in the sense that the doctor did not see the dog's penis in the subject's anus In the following case there was an eye-witness

**Annamite Boy pederated by a Dog** When I was in Cochinchina I was called to M A's, Captain in a Regiment of tirailleurs whose Company was at Mares near Cholen This officer's residence was near the Tirailleurs camp, and the hut of his orderly and his native cook was close to it

This officer had a magnificent brach-hound which he had brought with him from France. Besides his regular staff of servants, he had a small Annamite *nay* about 15 years old, employed to cut the grass for the Captain's horse, and also filling the office of washer of plates and dishes. The Captain, a bachelor, was in the habit of spending the Sunday, his day of rest, at Saigon (3 kilomètres from Mares) with a lady of his acquaintance, and did not return until the evening. One Sunday, his lady friend was unwell, and he left her about 2 o'clock to return to camp, where he had a report to finish besides.

Returning home by a gate outside the camp, leading straight to his quarters, he heard a noise and shouts of laughter in his servants' hut.

Approaching noiselessly, his ear caught the stifled cries and groans of a child. Quickly pushing open the door, he entered the room, and the strangest of sights met his eyes. The little *nay*, without his breeches, was on all fours. His dog was straight opposite to him, in the attitude of the male when he is in the act of coition with the female and remains *stuck* to her for a time more or less long. The whole of the dog's penis was in the anus of the Annamite. The two servants, half drunk, were shouting with laughter at the dog's efforts to separate himself, and at the cries and groans which the pain extorted from the *nay*, who was obliged to move on all fours to follow the movements of the dog. At the Captain's entrance and at the sight of his angry countenance, the two spectators took to flight. The Captain, who was holding his stick in his hand, in a moment of thoughtless anger, let it fall several times on the dog's back; the animal made a violent effort to free its penis from the anus from its human bonds, but with such force that all the anal sphincter was turned back.

I was called in the same evening to make a medico-legal

report and I established the existence of considerable disorders which will find their place in the article on Pederasty. The Captain would not keep the dog any longer and gave orders for it to be killed. I induced the Annamite Sergeant who was ordered to kill it to do so by hanging it, as I wished to study the effects of hanging upon an animal and at the same time to obtain the evidence for conviction. Owing to its being hung the animal died with its penis in erection but without ejaculation. The bone of the penis was swollen and of the size of a large Champagne cork which it resembled in shape. Its diameter at the middle was from 4 to 5 centimètres and the length of the penis was 14 centimètres. This apparatus had completely entered into the anus of a slender puny boy, taller however than a lad 9 or 10 years old in France.

The Captain's enquiry proved that the *ray* was a passive pederast who served as a butt for his two servants that on that day they had got drunk on some bottles of wine which they had stolen from the cellar and that they had also made the boy drunk. After thoroughly amusing themselves with him and having consummated anal coition, the one twice and the other three times they could find nothing better to do than make the Captain's dog have connection in his turn. They had placed the *ray* in the proper position and the cook had held the dog's paws round the subject's loins and belly, while the orderly polluted the dog and when once his penis was in erection had introduced it into the *ray's* anus (previously greased with cocoa-nut oil) and had then pushed the dog from behind so as to make him have a successful connection. The operation had succeeded perfectly unfortunately for the pair the Captain had returned too soon. It must be confessed that it is necessary to be an Annamite pederast to have such ideas as these.



**A Peasant pederated by a Bull.** This is stronger still, but this time the man went voluntarily to meet death I give the observation from Garnier, who has summed up the whole report as given by Tardieu.

“ A more improbable and incomprehensible fact took place on June 4<sup>th</sup>, 1865, in the Jura. A farmer, aged 31, who was perfectly well when his wife left him, was found in bed vomiting when she returned at six o'clock in the evening. He gave as a reason that an hour previously, while relieving himself near the stable, he had heard his two-year old bull bellowing. Fearing that there was some danger, he had run into the stable, without giving himself time to button up his breeches. The animal which had got loose, sprung upon him and trampled him down with his buttocks in the air and his legs caught in his trousers; it had then introduced its penis into his anus, in which he felt very great pain. The doctor, who shortly arrived, found in fact his anus stained with blood and a glutinous matter escaping from it, proceeding apparently from the bull's ejaculation. The wounded man, a prey to the most atrocious agonies, died during the night, at 5 o'clock in the morning, having probably had the rectum opened and perforated. ”

The gross improbability of this tale, and its evident falsity, hardly require to be pointed out. It was imagined only to deceive the simplicity of the outraged wife or of ignorant villagers. The incriminated animal would never have been able to accomplish an accoupling as complete as it was monstrous, without the agreement and good-will of the man. He alone could facilitate its realization by seeking for it, and lending himself to it with complaisance. He found what he was not looking for.

## **Men having Connection with Dogs and**

**Bitches** If the dog can have anal connection with the man, and vaginal connection, as will be seen further on, with the woman can the man pederate with the dog and copulate with the bitch? Our answer is yes provided that the man's virile member is not too disproportionate.

As regards the coition of the man in the anus of the dog the autopsy of the unfortunate animal of which I have spoken above, showed me that there was an anal infundibulum and a relaxed sphincter, forming as it were a mucous cushion. The index finger entered with ease. The orderly and the cook when questioned declared that the *may* was often in the habit of having connection with the dog and of burying his penis completely in its anus. As a verification of their evidence it was found that the subject was possessed of a small penis, with a phimosis and a narrow and pointed gland of a noteworthy truncated shape, which when in erection was not more than 8 centimètres long by 2 in diameter. The matter was therefore possible.

As for the vaginal coition of the man and the bitch I have but to consult my memories of childhood. In the small school where I was a boarder, we were half a dozen young rascals between 12 and 16 years of age. Onanism in common, and even pederasty was a rage among us. The schoolmaster, Père S. had a fine tall bitch (Newfoundland crossed with spaniel) called Soumise. This beast had been trained by one of us, B. a masturbator and sodomist to lick his testicles and penis. A bit of sugar was the honourable recompense. The bitch had come on heat and had been shut up by her master in a little room all alone, at the bottom of the yard. B. got hold of the key and during the recreation hour remained for half an hour in the room with the bitch. He then came back looking very happy at the end of the time, and said to us "Do you know, I have — Soumise." "It's not pos

sible. " " Yes, I tell you, it all went in, and it was fine, fine! " Three among us, profiting by the undermaster's inattention, who was as deaf as a post and as blind as a bat, slipped into the room, where they operated in the same way as B .... The last one, who had rather a larger equipment than the others, had, by what he said, a little more trouble in penetrating into the bitch's vulva, but he arrived there all the same, for it appeared that the bitch displayed the greatest goodwill in the world in allowing them to have connection with her

The arrival of the head-master put an end to these lubricities, for, without suspecting what had occurred, he sent the bitch into the country the next day, and she did not come back again

Another observation confirms the preceding. M. de P. , the Commander of the Marine Infantry in New Caledonia, was obliged to get rid of a bitch which he owned, and which gave herself up willingly to the Hebridean servants of a neighbouring colonist. The latter informed him about it. Puzzled at seeing the Colonel's dog always in his servant's hut, he went inside, and saw the dog licking and caressing the genital parts of one of the latter. The man confessed that he consummated coition with the bitch only when she was on heat, but that his member could not penetrate beyond the gland. Under promise of a litre of rum, the Neo-Hebridean operated in his master's presence, who then went and told everything to his neighbour. The latter hastened to have the animal killed. The Neo-Hebridean, the admirer of bitches, was a masturbator and a pederast. I had this fact from the mouth of the colonist, Colonel P. . having left the Colony when I heard about the matter.

We now let Gainier be the spokesman

" The impossibility for the man to make use of the

dog cannot also be maintained in the case of the woman. Numerous instances of bestiality have been positively established through the vagina, with the dog, in the case of women of evil life. It is therefore a kind of vulvular onanism which is performed. Some are even accused of letting them lick their vulva, as in saphism. Little dogs or young cats would be trained specially for this disgusting office, owing to the keener excitation of the rasping tongue of these animals being preferable to that of a man or a woman.

It even appears that this bestial onanism is far from being uncommon in large towns, among prostitutes and gay women. So *cave canem* — beware of the dog — or girls and widows who drag and carry them about with them with so much care and such kind precautions. When they allow them publicly to lick their mouth it is very permissible to suppose that they allow them also to lick them elsewhere. The caresses and kisses with which they cover them, the tender names of Jules, Thomas, darling love, which they lavish upon them, are the signs by which we may recognize that they make lovers of them when they take them into their bed.

The deep and impenetrable secrecy with which this onanism between two is surrounded does not permit us to know its effects or its consequences. They can be revealed by chance or accident alone. The fact has occurred that domestic animals, especially cats and dogs, by licking the sexual parts of young children, of little girls in particular, have been able to incite them to onanism by drawing the organ from its torpor.

Hufeland relates that a little girl, aged three, while sitting on a stool, was playing with a dog placed between her legs and pressing itself against her. Excited no doubt by the contact and warmth of her legs, the genital instinct

was aroused in the animal, and a kind of copulation took place. The child gave vent to cries, her friends ran to her, and came in time to witness this violence. The child's genital parts were injured, became inflamed, and small ulcerations resembling venereal chancres resulted.

This is the origin of the idea that the lickings cause specific ulcerations, in opposition to the popular belief that there is nothing more healthy than the tongue of a dog. Ulcerations of a bad character appeared on the genital parts of two old maids, according to Ruggieri's report. If this were so, bestial onanism on the part of women would not prevail so generally. If erosions or ordinary pimples may result from these lickings, it is impossible for these animals to transmit and inoculate a specific disease which they do not possess. They rather contract it from the woman, as the she-ass and the mare do from the man.

A frequent and simple cause may nevertheless predispose to this strange aberration, and produce it among little girls. This is the presence of oxyures, or little white worms, in the anus, the migration of which, and their propagation to the genital parts, is not slow in provoking, through the pruritus or tickling which is the result, rubbing and scratching. Here is a recent proof of it.

Tormented thus by these inconvenient guests, in spite of various vermifuges which were employed, lotions and injections of water with a quantity of sugar in it usually are sufficient to kill them on the spot. A young girl of 11 or 12 had come, through these irresistible manœuvres, to discover a certain erotic sensation which led her to manualization. She had been addicted to it for several years, when a little house-dog slipped under her petticoats and discovered the sensitive part. He indulged in licking it, she said; but returning as he did six or seven times, after long intervals, it might well have been something else. She said

that she had also once buried her index finger deep enough into her vagina to tear the hymen. Was it not rather the lap-dog which was the real culprit?

This onanism lasted until she was 16 or 17 years old, while she was living all the time under the eyes of her mother, brothers and sisters, without being discovered. She then noticed that her nymphæ, larger and more projecting than her labia majora, were pendent, blackish, flaccid and wrinkled. And ascertaining, by reading *l'Onanisme* that these vulvular deformations were the mark, the stigma of saphism, she wrote in despair, after refusing a first offer of marriage, fearing to be discovered and disowned publicly upon the evidence of these indelible traces — to know what was to be done to remedy them, and if she could become a wife and a mother. She desired it keenly having so acted neither through libertinism nor through immorality but through aberration and unconscious obsession. And thus different and serious lesions follow from this act perhaps more frequently than it appears. (Garnier.)

**Men and She goats.** I have given in *Untrodde Fields of Anthropology* (2 vols Paris 1898) a case of bestiality between a Neo Hebridean and a she goat. At the request of the master of this hired labourer, this latter day Corydon, I examined the animal and the culprit who was unable to deny the fact, as he had been caught in the act by his master (1).

I should be now much less positive upon the question of knowing whether a man's penis could penetrate into the vulva of a she goat when in a state of rut provided that the shape of the penis lent itself to it. I gather from one of

(1) For full details of this interesting incident the student will do well to refer to the work in question (Vol II pages 360 and 363.)

my former colleagues a navy doctor who has a country-estate in a village of the Cévennes, that a priest had the reputation of covering, like a he-goat, the she-goats when they were in a state of rut. He had even, according to public rumour, been attacked one day by the he-goat, furious at seeing himself robbed of his prerogatives. Had it not been for his dog, and for another priest who happened to be near, the lover of she-goats would have had a very disagreeable quarter of an hour. Questioned by my friend on the possibility of the consummation of the act, he cynically confessed that all she-goats would not allow it to be done, and that there was only one old, black she-goat of great size, which would permit it, when she was on heat, and into whose vulva *he completely entered*. The subject had a penis and testicles of ordinary dimensions.

**Men, Mares, and She-Asses.** The penetration of the mare by the man is most easy, the virile member erring rather from default than from excess. It is true that the Arabs, who habitually practise it, are well equipped, to use a trivial expression.

It is not only the Arabs who indulge in this exercise.

The order given by Frederic, king of Prussia, with regard to a horseman who had had sexual intercourse with his mare, is well known. "This fellow is a pig, he must be put into an infantry regiment." The same monarch had been given the death penalty to sign of one of his subjects who had been convicted of bestiality with a she-ass. The philosopher-king did not confirm the sentence, and wrote underneath that "he gave his subjects liberty of conscience and of p" (Voltaire's *Mémoires*).

**The "Sweet-hearts" of the Regiment** "Here

is a typical adventure, related to me by an engineer in the Russian service during the last Russo-Turkish war

This fellow countryman was in a carriage on the high-road leading from Ibraila to the Danube when his coachman was obliged to pull up to let a Russian regiment pass by which, with singers and musicians at its head, was on its way to the bridge which would lead them into the enemies country

With the rear-guard of the regiment travelled about twenty she asses, carrying light burdens The fine condition of these beasts, the care which appeared to be bestowed upon them and the extreme cleanness of their coat attracted the attention of our engineer who, conversing in Russian with his coachman, could not help remarking upon the cleanness and beauty of these quadrupeds

"Why yes" answered the coachman laughing "they are the *sweet hearts* of the regiment

And as our compatriot did not appear quite to understand, the other explained to him the peculiar service which the she asses rendered to the majority of the soldiers

Later on, our engineer, who now is residing at Courbevoie was able to verify *de visu* the truth of his coachman's assertions

We leave to Paul de Réglé from whom we borrow the story of this adventure the responsibility for the exactness of his statements

Not only do mares and she-asses lend themselves complacently to these practices, but they are also not insensible to labial pollutions

**The Fellator of Mares** "I learnt the following fact from one of my clients who served for one year in a cavalry regiment During his year's service, he happened one night to be on stable guard with a cavalry soldier, who



was a masturbator, and justly suspected of pederasty. This individual was in the habit of sucking the vulva of mares when they were in season. Many of them allowed him to do so. He began by stroking them gently on the crupper, then he tickled them on the vulva and introduced his three fingers into it, practising thus a kind of vaginal masturbation, while with his other hand he caressed the animals neck and shoulders. To do this he stood on the near side of the mare. When he felt that the animal was on the point (*sic*) by its trembling and by the involuntary movements of its vulva, he placed himself between its hind legs, lifted up its tail, licked its vulva, and received into his mouth the humour which came from it. He asked 1 franc to perform this curious proceeding in public. My client was on one occasion a witness of this act, which disgusted him deeply. Unfortunately the observation is incomplete with regard to the mental state of the subject, and in this uncertainty we attributed to *lewd bestiality* what is, perhaps, a case of bestiality through mental aberration."

**Men and Poultry.** It is not only quadrupeds which serve to satisfy the passions of men. Poultry also are frequently victims to it. We append two observations regarding this

"The first relates to one E... aged 35, a labourer, who was sentenced by the 8<sup>th</sup> *Tribunal correctionnel* of the Seine to three months' imprisonment for an outrage on public decency.

He was accused of having committed acts of bestiality on fowls.

These acts had occurred at a lodging-house keeper's in the Rue des Gravilliers. This man had found one of his fowls dead. He observed E .., one of his lodgers, and surprised him at the moment when the act was being con-

summed The fowl was injured, and E had feathers and traces of blood upon his dress (Tardieu, *Attentats aux Mœurs* )

**Sodomy** " In a country town, a man of the upper classes, aged 30 was surprised in sodomical intercourse with a fowl The malefactor had been sought after a long time, for the fowls had been disappearing one after the other

The President of the Tribunal asked the prisoner how he could have thought of committing such a disgusting act he defended himself by calling attention to the smallness of his genital parts, which rendered all intercourse with women impossible for him The medical examination in fact, verified the extraordinary exiguity of his genital parts From the intellectual point of view, this individual was perfectly normal

No information was to be had with regard to contingent defects, or to the period when the genital instinct awoke (Gyurkovechky, *Mannl Impotenz* 1889 Krafft Ebing )

**The Chinese Duck Trick** " A large number of ducks are eaten in Cochín-China salted and smoked in the Chinese fashion The principal market for them is at the Chinese town of Cho lon, entirely populated by inhabitants of the Celestial Empire and their households A friend of mine, Ban Hap, a manager of the Opium Farm warned me one day never to let my cook buy a dead duck in the market without first examining its anus He also advised me, if the duck were alive, to see that the cook (a Chinaman or Annamite) did not have connection with it before he killed it As a matter of fact, I satisfied myself one day that a fine Barbary duck, which my cook had just brought back from market, had had the cloaca of the

anus torn I could not make out whether the act had been committed before or after the animal's death. But I concluded from this fact, and from the warning which was given me, that bestiality is very common in the Far East "

**Diseased Bestiality (through Degeneracy or any other Mental Cause).** Here we enter the domain of pure madness, and the following observations will show the extent of the affection. Let us first give those by Krafft-Ebing.

**Observations on cases of Diseased Bestiality** In several cases which came to the knowledge of Krafft-Ebing, the subjects were of weak intellect.

The sodomist of Schanenstein also was a lunatic. The following case of bestiality is evidently due to morbid conditions. The subject was an epileptic. The sexual inclination for animals appears here as an equivalent for the normal genital instinct.

"X ., a peasant, 40 years of age, is an Orthodox Greek. His father and mother were hard drinkers. From the age of 5 the patient had epileptic attacks; he falls to the ground and loses consciousness, remains motionless for two or three minutes, then he gets up and begins to run without knowing where he is going, with his eyes widely opened. His genital instinct awoke at the age of 17. The patient has no sexual inclinations for women or men, but strongly developed ones for animals (birds, horses, etc.) He had connection at first with fowls and ducks, and later on with horses, and cows. He has never masturbated himself.

The patient is a painter of holy images, very limited in his intelligence. For some years, he has had religious *paranoia* with states of ecstasy. He has an "inexplicable

love for the Holy Virgin, for whom he would give his life. When received into the Hospital, the patient did not show any organic blemishes, or marks of anatomical degenerescacy.

He has always had an aversion for women. Having once attempted coition with a woman he remained impotent, in the presence of animals he always has his full powers. He is always modest when in women's society. Coition with women seems to him almost like a sin' (Kowalewsky *Jahrb f Psychiatrie*)

' On Sept 23<sup>d</sup> 1889 at mid day, a shoemaker's apprentice W aged 16 caught a goose in a neighbour's garden and practised acts of bestiality upon this animal until its owner arrived. In reply to his reproaches he said, "Well is the goose ill from it?" and went away without any further answer. When questioned by the judge, he confessed to the act, but excused himself by alleging a temporary absence of mind. Ever since a severe illness which he had when he was 12 years of age he has had attacks several times a month accompanied by feelings of heat in his head, then he is very excited sexually, does not know how to relieve himself or what he is doing. He defended himself in the same way at his public trial, and pretended that he did not know of the *species facti* except through the statements of the neighbour. The father declares that W is sprung from a healthy family but that, since he had scarletina when he was 5 years of age he has always been unhealthy and that when was 12 he had a cerebral complaint with fever. W had good antecedents, he had been diligent at school, and afterwards had assisted his father in his business. He had not been addicted to masturbation.

The medical examination has not established the existence of any moral or intellectual deficiency. The exami-

nation of his body showed that his genital parts were normal. The penis was relatively much developed, and there was a considerable augmentation of the reflex of the tendon of the knee. For the rest, the proofs were of a negative character.

It has been proved that amnesia did not exist *tempore delicti*. It was impossible to prove the existence of attacks of mental disorder at an anterior period, and nothing was observed during the time of observation which lasted six weeks. There was no perversion of the *vita sexualis*. The medical report admits the possibility of organic conditions proceeding from a disease of the brain (fluxion to the head) which might possibly exercise an influence on the perpetration of the act of which he was accused. " (Taken from a medical report, by Dr Fritsch, of Vienna )

(Impulsive Sodomy) A ., 16 years of age, a young gardener, an illegitimate child, whose father was unknown and whose mother had grave hereditary defects and was an hysterio-epileptic. A . 's skull and face are deformed and asymmetrical, and he is a living skeleton. He is short, has been a masturbator since his infancy, is always morose, apathetic, fond of solitude, and very irascible. His passions reacted in a manner so to say pathological. He is an imbecile, physically, he has wasted away considerably, probably owing to masturbation, he is also neurasthenic. He shows, moreover, hysterio-pathical symptoms (a diminution of the field of vision, dyschromatopsia, a diminution of the olfactory sense and of the sense of hearing on the right side, *anæsthesia testiculæ dextræ*).

A is convicted of having partly masturbated and partly sodomised dogs and rabbits. When he was 12 years old, he saw some boys masturbating a dog. He imitated them, and consequently cannot prevent himself from torturing in this abominable way the dogs, cats, and rabbits

which he comes across He sodomised much more frequently female rabbits, the only animals which had any charm for him When night fell he used to go to his master's rabbit shed to satisfy his horrible passion, and rabbits were frequently found with their rectum torn His acts of bestiality always took place in the same way He had veritable attacks which occurred periodically, about every eight weeks in the evening, and always with the same symptoms A at first had a feeling of great discomfort a sensation as if blows of a hammer were falling on his head It seemed to him as if he were losing his reason He struggled against the idea which possessed him and urged him to commit sodomy on rabbits, and he felt an ever increasing agony and an augmentation of the pains in his head to such a point that he could no longer endure it When he had reached the *summum* of this state he had buzzings in his head the perspiration stood on his skin, his knees trembled, at last all power of resistance vanished, and there was an impulsive execution of the act

When the act was consummated, he was freed from his pangs The nervous crisis disappeared, he once more had power over himself and feeling ashamed of what had just occurred was afraid that that condition might return A declares that if when in that state he was given the choice between a woman and a rabbit, he could not help choosing the latter In the times too between his attacks, among domestic animals, it is only rabbits which please him In his exceptional states, it is enough for him, to have sexual satisfaction to press and kiss etc a rabbit but sometimes he falls into such a *furor sexualis* that he must forcibly sodomise the animal

These acts of bestiality are the only ones which can satisfy him sexually, and for him it is the only form possible of sexual activity A declares that he has never had

voluptuous sensations; the satisfaction consists merely in his being freed, by this means, from the painful situation created for him by an impulsive constraint.

It was easy to demonstrate by the medical examination that this monster was a psychical degenerate, a sick man deprived of his free will, but not a criminal. " (Boeteau, *la France médicale*, 38<sup>e</sup> année, no. 38 )

Thoinot also supplies several observations which we append *in extenso*, as they bring into relief all the psychical characteristics of diseased bestiality

### **Observations with Comments by Thoinot**

" A young peasant was brought to us by his father among the out-patients at St Anne's Hospital. He is a farmer by profession. We discovered physical and moral imperfections in him. His body is slightly asymmetrical, but without any marked deformation, his skull displays an abnormal flattening of the frontal osseous projecture and of the right temporal, from which can be clearly seen a facial asymmetry, the arch of the palate is pointed, and the teeth decayed.

He has been for a long time addicted to masturbation, and has always been of a melancholy and apathetic character, he seeks for solitude, avoids his companions, and takes no part in their games. He often flies into a passion and grows violent. A mere reprimand from his master provokes him to a fit of mad passion. In a case of this kind, after a fit of anger, he made a wide and deep gash with a piece of glass on his left hand, the mark of which he still bears

Another important mark from the psychical point of view is his weakness of mind and mental debility

I now come to the fact. The following medical certificate upon this subject was handed to me

“ The patient named X indulges in unnatural acts upon animals In February last his master noticed that one of his rabbits had been split open by the manoeuvres which he had practised upon it

A short time after, he observed that his dog was growing thin under extraordinary conditions Lastly a fortnight ago he lost three other rabbits and the autopsy proved the fact that X had had relations with them

In our subject's acts of bestiality there are two very distinct tendencies in existence Sometimes he pollutes the animals sometimes he goes further and consummates the venereal act of these two kinds of impulsion however the second is the more frequent

While he takes the first animal which comes in order to satisfy the first, rabbits alone have any effect upon him for the second, towards other animals he is absolutely cold

At night fall he makes his way to the loft where his master's rabbits are kept he catches a doe kisses it with fury presses it against him and in some cases accomplishes coition The number of his victims is great for the disproportion of the organs nearly always entails the death of the female The sight of and contact with the doe inflame his desires

What is important to note is the manner in which the attack commences He feels a great *feeling of discomfort*, a *peculiar disorder*, a *fearful pain in the head*, it seems as though some one were hammering on his head with a large stone

When once the satisfaction of his requirement is accomplished he experiences a *relaxation he feels relieved* Reason resumes its sway and he remains quiet until the moment when a fresh impulsion is developed and leads him to perform the same act



The crisis is marked besides by an *agony*, with *cold sweats* and palpitations of the heart, his legs give way beneath him, and it is then that he *succumbs* to return again almost to the normal state.

In an ordinary way, women are *completely indifferent* to him, he never concerns himself with them for the satisfaction of a venereal desire " (Ball )

The *second case* is taken from an interesting memoir of Boissier and Lachaux, inserted in the 1893 volume of the *Archives de Neurologie*

Jules I.. is 35 years of age, born of a *drunken father* and a *very eccentric mother*. He has been *repeatedly* since his infancy tormented by an incomprehensible wish to have connection with animals, when he was *nine years old*, happening to be alone in a stable, he had sexual relations with a fowl, when he was thirteen, with a heifer, and lastly, when he was seventeen, with a she-ass Later on he had intercourse with women He married when he was 20 He appeared to be cured, and resisted his temptations to bestiality But when he was 27, he *took to drink* the evil then recovered all its violence, and one day overthrew him under the following circumstances

The patient had one day to take a she-goat of his to a he-goat in a neighbouring village, he had placed it in a tumbril which he drove himself sitting on a plank The presence of this she-goat going to the male caused him a vague feeling of discomfort, increased by the solitude of the long, deserted road, which soon gave place to a furious desire to have intercourse with this beast. The desire soon acquired an unheard-of intensity, he tried at first to fight against it . , but the temptation was so frightful that he felt his will wavering He loosened the reins and clung to the tumbril in order to resist The violent beating of his heart shook his whole frame, he had a painful feeling of

oppression on his chest, he felt that he had grown quite pale. To this general disorder was added a *genetic excitation* he was in a state of erection. The situation became altogether intolerable. He could struggle no longer, he lay down on the bottom of the cart and, not without difficulty attained his end. The wretched man confessed that he had never had so much pleasure in a normal connection.

This is enough upon the impulsive bestiality of degenerates. Every case certainly is not included under this heading. I allow, there are some undoubtedly which are to be imputed to a *gross perversity*, the *vice of bestiality* if you will. But the type which I have presented to you is established on *certain principles*, it is *easily recognisable*, and from the medico legal point of view it has a principal interest.

**Bestiality in the Paris Brothels** Let us complete our reference to bestiality by a quotation borrowed from Louis Fiaux. According to him and many other authors bestiality is a source of gain for the Paris brothels where unnatural old debauchees are shown the odious spectacle of a woman copulating with a dog.

‘ It is in the brothel in short that bestiality is most frequently practised. Like the priests of Baal Phegor who were not content with selling themselves to the faithful during the prayers to the idol, but trained dogs to the same ignominies and applied the proceeds of this double hire to the revenues of the temple, the landlords go so far as to speculate upon the sight of a woman copulating with a dog.

In this paroxysm, certain houses make use of that large kind of dog known as Danes, which have been in fashion for several years past. The suburban houses less systematically ignoble however than the others, imitate them they adopt the cross between the Newfoundland and the mast

iff which is so numerous in the suburbs of the great City.

In 1862, when we were studying the police question in the Conseil Municipal, we had before our eyes a memorandum of protest from a Swiss who had been expelled from France and whose wife had gone to live in a house at Montrouge (extra muros) it gave details of this debauchery which the Fathers, St Thomas and all the theologian moralists who follow him, rank as far worse than sodomy.

But this is sufficient upon this repulsive subject

Plus dicere licuit, sed plus dicere non licet

#### TRANSLATION OF LATIN PASSAGE ON PAGE 310

“ I read how Attia, one midnight when she had arrived to attend the customary festival of Apollo, had her litter set down in the Temple, and following the example of the other matrons there present, went off to sleep, how a serpent then glided suddenly into her sleeping place, and presently emerged again, and how on awakening next morning she purified herself as if after intercourse with her husband. Directly afterwards we are told, a mark appeared on her body, showing the figure of a serpent, and could never be effaced, the result being that she presently ceased to frequent the public baths, and never resumed the habit. ”

(1) (Louis Fiaux, *les Maisons de Tolérance*, Georges Carre, Editeur Paris, 1896) Besides Dr Fiaux' work the student should consult “ *The Secrets of Women* ”, a curious work translated into English from the Arabic, which contains, amongst other stories, “ *The Woman who had Carnal Commerce with an Ass* ”, and “ *Of the Lady who gave herself up to the Embraces of a Bear* ” (Paris, Charles Carrington, 1898). A further work dealing with this recondite and tabooed subject is “ *Human Gorillas* ” A Medico-legal and Historical Study of the crime of Rape With a realistic Frontispiece and fifty-two Illustrations printed in the text The only book in the English language dealing scientifically and historically with the Violation of Women (Paris, Charles Carrington, 1900)

## CHAPTER XII

### GENITAL MADNESS

#### SADISM

Definition of Sadism — Antiquity of Sadism — Sadism exists principally among Men — Causes of Sadism — Reason of the greater frequency of Sadism among Men — Acquired Sadism and Congenital Sadism — Classification of Sadists — Symptomatic and Etiological Elements of Sadism — Relations of the Sadic act with the Sexual Life — Victims of Sadic Cruelty — Greater Sadics — *A* Innate — *B* Acquired — The Law of Greater Sadism — Observations on Greater Innate Sadics (Andreas Beschel Philippe Grassi, Menesclou Alton The Ripper of Whitechapel Verzeni Lepage etc.) The political and military Life of Gilles de Rays called Blue beard — Nature of the Sadic crimes committed by Gilles de Rays — Depositions of his accomplices Henriot and Fonton — The guilty man's Confessions — Gilles de Rays Sadism was it innate or acquired? Gilles de Rays was diseased a Madman, and not a Monster The Violator Assassin Blanchard — Murder committed by two Pederasts upon a young boy aged three and a half — Six curious Observations relating to innate Sadists and Greater acquired Sadists — Unpublished cases of Sadism relating to the Annamite Races — Their natural Cruelty — Political Sadists during the Insurrection in Cochín China in 1867 — Sadic and Pederastic vengeance inflicted on a Pirate Chief — Case of Erotic Mutilation through Pederastic Jealousy — Sadic Murder of a European for the sake of Gain

**Definition of Sadism** ‘ To find in suffering of a very variable degree — sometimes slight sometimes considerable or of an atrocious refinement — which the individual craves to be inflicted, sees inflicted, or inflicts himself on a human being the always necessary and sometimes sufficient condition of sexual enjoyment such is

the perversion of the genital instinct which is designated in the present day under the name of Sadism." This definition of Thoinot is very wide and very complete, and embraces almost the whole number of sadic cases

To commit an act of Sadism is therefore to cause suffering to another in order to find in this suffering a sexual enjoyment and the perverted individual affected with Sadism bears the name of a Sadic

As is well known, this name comes from the Marquis de Sade, who has continued to be the prototype of this monstrous anomaly

**Antiquity of Sadism** Sadism, in the same way as all genital perversions, has always existed. It is sufficient to read Suetonius' Lives of the Twelve Roman Emperors, to recognize the fact that the majority of them were more or less complete Sadists, at the same time as they were pederasts or sufferers from sexual inversion.

In the Middle Ages, we find the famous Blue-beard, the Seigneur Gilles de Rayes, whose history we relate further on, who mutilated thousands of children to satisfy his lust

Thoinot tells us that Charles the Bad, King of Navarre, used to make one of his pages and a little girl whom he carried off from the neighbourhood, enter into sexual relations in his presence, at the moment of their sexual paroxysm he stabbed them both with a poignard and then satisfied his passions, overexcited by this atrocious scene, upon a courtesan, but who too died ere she quitted his arms

Brantôme has preserved for us the memory of other Sadics of his times, but these were for the most part of a less ferocious type, simple flagellators

Sadism is very common in our times under different forms which we enumerate further on.

### Sadism exists for the most part in Men

Just as exhibitionism, sadism is almost the exclusive appanage of man. Nevertheless, though they are rare, cases of Sadism exist among women. We shall give instances of them.

**Causes of Sadism** Krafft Ebing draws attention to the intimate correlation which exists between cruelty and pleasure, and quotes in support of his statement Blumroder, Lombroso and Mantegazza.

‘ Blumroder (*Ueber Irresein* Leipzig, 1836, p. 51) *hominem vidit qui complura vulnera in musculo pectorali habuit, quae femina valde libidinosa in summa voluptate moriendo effecit*

In an essay ‘*Ueber Lust und Schmerz*’ (*Friedrichs Magazin für Seelenkunde*, 1830 II 5) he particularly calls attention to the physiological correlation which exists between pleasure and the thirst for blood. Upon this subject he recalls the Indian legend of Sciva and Durga (Death and Pleasure) the sacrifices of men with voluptuous mysteries the sexual desires of the age of puberty associated with a voluptuous inclination for suicide, for flagellation for pinches for wounds inflicted on the genital parts in the vague and obscure desire of satisfying the sexual want.

Lombroso also (*Verzeni e Agnoletti*, Roma, 1874) quotes numerous instances of the tendency to murder during the surexcitation produced by pleasure.

On the other hand very often when the desire for murder is excited, it brings after it the sensation of pleasure. Lombroso calls to mind the fact quoted by Mantegazza that in the horrors of a sack, the soldiers ordinarily experience a bestial pleasure.

These instances form cases of transition between the manifestly pathological cases. There is therefore an *acqui*

*red* Sadism, just as there is an acquired pederasty, which disappears together with the cause which produced it

We shall not follow Krafft-Ebing into the comparison which he makes between cruelty and pleasure, we are satisfied with drawing attention with him to the fact that this inclination for cruelty which is natural to the human species, and which is a product of atavism from our primitive ancestors, "is increased to an inordinate degree in a psychopathic individual, while, on the other hand, the imperfection of the moral sentiments results in there being no fetters morally, or in their being too weak to have effect "

**Reason of the greater Frequency of Sadism in Man** Krafft-Ebing finds one powerful reason for this due to physiological conditions. In love, the man attacks and the woman defends. In normal conditions, the man sees himself in the presence of a resistance which it is his task to overcome, and it is on account of this struggle that Nature has given him an aggressive character. "But this aggressive character may, under pathological conditions, exceed all measure, and degenerate into a tendency to subdue completely the object of its desires as far as to hurt and even to kill it " Sadism is therefore but a pathological exaggeration of certain accessory phenomena of the *vita sexualis*, which may be produced in normal circumstances especially in the woman

What the Sadist experiences is solely the desire to commit violent and cruel acts upon persons of the other sex, and a sensation of pleasure by merely representing to himself these acts of cruelty. From this there results a powerful impulsion to commit the acts desired.

**Acquired Sadism and Congenital Sadism.**

Besides acquired Sadism (transitory as it may be called), there is a *congenital* Sadism

As regards the former it may be said, in consequence of the association between pleasure and cruelty that not only does the voluptuous passion awake the inclination for cruelty but that the contrary also may take place the idea and especially the sight of cruel acts act as a sexual stimulant and are in this sense employed by perverse individuals. But it also happens that the accidental sight of blood spilt puts the psychical and predisposed mechanism of the Sadist into motion and awakes the inclination which was in a latent condition in him

According to Krafft Ebing ' it is impossible to establish empirically a distinction between cases of congenital and of acquired Sadism. Many individuals *originally blemished* make every effort for a long time to resist their perverse inclinations. If the sexual power still exists they have at the beginning a normal *vita sexualis* thanks often to the evocation of images of a perverse nature. Later on, only after having successively overcome all the contrary reasons, ethic and aesthetic, and after having verified the fact on several occasions that the normal act does not procure for them any complete satisfaction, the morbid inclination comes to light and manifests itself externally. A disposition perverse *ab origine* then tardily betrays itself by acts. This often produces the appearance of an acquired perversion and occasions a mistake as to the origin of the evil. *A priori*, it may nevertheless be supposed that this psychopathical state always exists *ab origine* (Krafft Ebing )

To Thoinot as well as to Krafft Ebing, the congenital Sadist is a degenerate and in the immense majority of cases an hereditary degenerate. He is, in short what the other sexually perverted individuals are. He gives as a proof of this the instance of Verzeni, whose history we



give further on as taken from Lombroso, of another *ideal Sadic* given by Krafft-Ebing, and of a third, the young L. . P. (an observation of Gyurkovechky) descended from a family of high rank, born of an hysterical mother, and whose maternal *uncle and grandfather* died in an Asylum and who was himself an epileptic

“ It would be easy to multiply instances you have but to dissect the typical observations on Sadism hitherto published, and the degeneracy of the subjects will appear plainly evident. ” (Thoinot )

**Classification of Sadists.** We have the man Sadist and the woman Sadist, and in each of these the acquired Sadist and the innate Sadist But the gamut of Sadic acts is singularly varied, it extends from the *monstrous, frightful crime* to the *absolutely puerile act*, the mere symbol of cruelty, and the series of transitions between these two extremes is very copious

We shall therefore, with Thoinot, distinguish between what he calls the *greater Sadics*, who besides may be as much acquired as innate, and the *lesser Sadics* who are generally innate

The latter may be divided into several groups, which at the present day are well known in mental and forensic medicine

These are 1<sup>st</sup>, the *prickers and cutters of girls*, and are themselves subdivided according to the part of the body to which they nearly always address themselves; as prickers of the fingers, prickers of the buttocks, prickers of the legs, prickers of the arms, or as cutters of the ears or testicles

2<sup>nd</sup>, the *flagellators*, who belong to a lower degree of the scale of Sadism than the prickers.

3<sup>rd</sup>, the *pinchers* of women, those who vex and humili-

hate them, who strike them on their lower parts, try to make them weep, and dirty them in a more or less filthy manner

4<sup>h</sup>, and lastly we shall place at the lowest stage certain cases of symbolical Sadism

**Symptomatic and Etiological Elements of Sadism** Thoinot has known well how to bring into relief the different symptomatic and etiological elements of Sadism. After having shewn, as we have seen, that the Sadist is an hereditary degenerate in the immense majority of cases, he adds: "To say that Sadism is developed on a basis of hereditary degeneracy, is equivalent to saying that, like the other marks of degeneracy, like the other sexual perversions with which you are acquainted (inversion and fetishism), the Sadic inclination is a *congenital* phenomenon *innate in the subject*, and ought therefore to break out with a remarkable precocity as in fact is the case." And he quotes instances of children of 14, 10, 8 and even 7 years of age who were pinchers and flagellators, and masturbated themselves in presence of the voluptuous idea evoked by the blows which they had administered, or by a manual correction given before their eyes.

"The awakening of Sadism is therefore as you see, often precocious. But sometimes the Sadic reveals at once what he will be later on, and his abnormal instinct has from the very earliest time its veritable direction: the blood-thirsty Sadics are aroused and reveal themselves when they are quite young at the sight of blood flowing before them; the flagellator Sadics are aroused and reveal themselves at the sight of a corporal correction of which they are witnesses. Sometimes, on the other hand, the Sadic while revealing his instincts in the most precocious

manner, is not at first upon the right path. Verzeni, the woman-strangler, experienced a strange pleasure at the age of twelve in killing fowls, and committed for pleasure's sake veritable massacres in his poultry-yard. This was certainly a form of Sadism, for Sadism upon animals, to which we shall devote a few words below, is of the same genus as that which takes man for its victim; but this was not, as will be seen, the same variety of Sadism which afterwards rendered Verzeni unhappily notorious.

To the precocious development of Sadism may be contrasted its retarded development. A subject of this class dates his abnormal inclination only from a scene at which he has happened to be present, or from something which he has read, when he was already of a certain age, such was the case, as you have seen, with Gilles de Rays. But do not conclude from this that the breaking forth of Sadism may occur in an ordinary way in a normal subject at the sight of blood being shed before his eyes, or of pain inflicted in his presence upon a human being, etc. The only man to become a Sadic is he who has a foundation upon which Sadism is developed, and to congenital Sadism only *retarded* Sadism is contrasted and not acquired Sadism in the true sense of the word. These cases of retarded Sadism however are uncommon, just as cases of retarded inversion and retarded fetishism.

The theory of innate Sadism possesses an excellent argument in its support in the facts of *direct or collateral Sadic heredity*. The flagellator Sadic of Moll, to whom we have previously alluded, had a brother who also clearly displayed Sadic tendencies: the one loved to beat women until he made them cry out with pain, the other had a passion for ejaculating upon women's faces, and felt a lively satisfaction when this act made them weep. In Krafft-Ebing we find another case of Sadic heredity: one of his patients

was seized with genital excitation when he saw fowls being killed, and his father had a singular liking for squeezing violently with cords the hands of young women or young girls

The *erotic dreams* of Sadics clearly mark the characteristic of the deep inveteracy of the inclination. A *cutter of girls* at Augsbourg, regarding whom Demme communicated an observation to Krafft-Ebing had pollutions under the influence of dreams in which he saw wounded girls etc., etc. The dreams of Sadists are analogous to those of inverted individuals and of fetishists, they reveal the inmost sexual personality of the perverted individual

As a mark of degeneracy, Sadism clearly shows in its manifestations the characteristic of episodic syndromes of hereditary subjects *the Sadic act is an impulsion-obsession*

Verzeni when he committed his Sadic crimes no longer knew, saw or heard anything around him *he was dominated by his Sadic madness*. When the act was committed he felt a great satisfaction and a certain feeling of comfort

This obsessive, impulsive characteristic is well marked by M. Magnan in an observation which we have given previously regarding the pricker of buttocks

The girl pricker at Bozen whom we have discussed above gave as the motive of the acts of which he was accused a sexual inclination extending to frenzy which only found satisfaction in the idea or the act of pricking women. This inclination possessed him for whole days, and the disorder only ceased when he had yielded to his obsession. satisfaction then took the place of the possessing and impelling idea

You no doubt remember the Sadic, mentioned by Garnier who turned his rage against himself for want of any other object, cut a piece of skin out of his fore arm and

eat it he acted in this way at the height of the obsession, and in order to divert the *impulsive fury* which dominated him

Sometimes, the Sadic impulsion, latent or restrained to the normal state, breaks out at the pathological state, as the result of an alcoholic excess for instance. An individual of whom Tarnowsky speaks, was normal when sober, but when he was drunk was obliged, in order to be able to copulate, to wound the woman's buttocks and to see the blood run " (Thoinot )

**Relations of the Sadic Act to Sexual Satisfaction** The formula given by Thoinot is as follows

*" The Sadic act is always necessary and sometimes even sufficient for the sexual enjoyment of the perverted Sadic individual "*

Thus there are two groups of Sadic acts, the one *preparatory to, accompanying or following* coition, the other replacing normal sexual intercourse, *to which, as regards the perverted individual, they are equivalent* We shall see various instances of the former group, which is the more numerous.

The second group, which perhaps is the less numerous, is the more interesting of the two It is certain in any case that this group includes Sadics of every kind, from the great criminal, murderer, mutilator and even cannibal, down to the mere defiler of women " All Sadics of this category have a profound horror of sexual intercourse Some of them have attempted it, but have never succeeded in it, *except by stimulating their imagination by the evocation of Sadic scenes*, and then, wearied and disgusted, they have renounced it Others during their whole life have never had the idea of touching a woman to all of them the Sadic act is sufficient, it gives them more pleasure and they confine themselves strictly to it " (Thoinot )

This author quotes the instance of Vezeni, to which we refer the reader, as well as of different prickers of women, which we give further on. It is unnecessary to multiply instances, they abound in every degree of Sadism.

“All Sadics, as you are aware, do not carry their impulses into action. With regard then to the *idealist Sadics*, what is the relation between their Sadic imaginations and the sexual satisfaction? The formula is a simple one and an adaptation of the general formula to the particular case. The one class practises coition, but in order to find complete satisfaction in it, is compelled to evoke a picture of the favourite Sadic scene. The other class has a horror of coition, and has erection and ejaculation at the Sadic evocation alone, or by masturbating themselves in presence of the Sadic scene.”

**The Victims of Sadic Cruelty.** The victims of Sadic Cruelty are usually *individuals of the female sex* but sometimes they are *individuals of the male sex*, and children in particular. The pure Sadist attacks a woman or a young girl in preference in order to perform his act with greater facility. The pederast Sadist chooses a young boy in preference in order to satiate his double passion. We shall see an instance of this in the case of Gilles de Rays, and in a curious observation by Tardieu, ‘the murder of a little boy by two pederasts.’

The reader will now be in a position to recognize the morbid psychology of the various cases which we shall proceed to place before him. We shall naturally begin with the Greater Sadics both male and female.

**Greater Sadics.** The greater Sadics are innate or acquired, and there is between these two groups the same difference as between the pederast and the inverted indivi-

dual, *id est* between pederasty and aberration. But the two groups display common characteristics in the different elements which compose greater Sadism and which we denominate the law of Sadism.

**The Law of Greater Sadism.** This law may be defined as follows. It is the resultant of various elements the *total or partial re-union* of which is eminently characteristic, *murder after multiplied tortures, rape, mutilation of the corpse, and repetitions of the crimes.*

Availing ourselves of Thoinot's assistance, we will examine these different elements one after the other.

*Tortures.* The tortures inflicted upon his victim by the Sadist are often incredible. He beats her while she is alive, and continues to beat her when she is dead; he stabs her with his knife, he tears her with his nails and his teeth, in short he indulges his fury upon her like a veritable wild beast.

*Mutilations.* The mutilations of the corpse may be as numerous as they are varied, certain Sadics go so far as to dismember the body. But there is a mutilation which bears the Sadic mark, and which is generally met with; *the mutilation of the genital organs.* The tearing out of the vulva, the removal of the penis and testicles with a knife or with the teeth, invariably indicates the Sadic crime.

The mutilation of the corpse is sometimes even accompanied by cannibalism. The Sadic sucks the blood of his victim, and devours the raw and palpitating flesh. One of the most terrible features of the Sadic crime is its repetition. The Sadic, impelled by the irresistible impulsion which dominates him, heaps crime upon crime until the moment when he falls into the hand of justice, like Gilles de Rays and Vacher, the murderer of shepherds. Or, like Jack the Ripper, he disappears and escapes the public pen-

ality of his crimes Very fortunately, we do not always find the complete union of these various elements The murder of the victim is often the only element of it The criminal has not tortured or violated or mutilated his victim, and the Sadic crime would resemble an ordinary crime were it not for the motives and the morbid personality of the criminal

Let us now give some observations upon the greater innate Sadics

### Observations upon greater innate Sadics

The most horrible but also the most characteristic fact to show the connection which exists between pleasure and cruelty, is the case of Andreas Beschel, which Feuerbach has published in his work

*B* *puellas stupratas necavit et dissecuit* — With regard to the assassination which he committed upon one of his victims, he expressed himself in his interrogatory in the following terms

‘ I opened her breast and cut the fleshy parts of her body with a knife Then, I dressed the body as a butcher is accustomed to dress an animal which he has just killed I cut the body in half with an axe, in such a way as to be able to bury it in the hole which had previously been dug in the mountain, and was intended to receive the corpse I may state that on opening the breast, I was so excited that I trembled and that I should have liked to have cut a piece of flesh and eaten it

Lombroso also quotes cases of this kind among others that of a man named Philippe, who was in the habit of strangling prostitutes *post actum*, and who said ‘ I love women but it amuses me to strangle them after enjoying them

A man named Grassi (V Lombroso, *op cit*) was seized



in the night with a sexual desire for a female relative Irritated by the woman's resistance, he gave her several blows with a knife in the abdomen, and when the unfortunate woman's father and uncle wished to prevent him, he killed them both Immediately he went and allayed his sexual desire in the arms of a prostitute But this was not enough for him, he murdered his own father and cut the throat of several oxen in the stable "

" On April 15<sup>th</sup>, 1880, a girl, aged four, disappeared from her parent's house On the 16<sup>th</sup>, Menesclou, one of the lodgers in the house, was arrested. In his pockets were found the fore-arms of his victim, and out of the fire-place were taken, half-burnt, her head and viscera Portions of the body were found also in the water-closet, but it was impossible to discover her genital parts Menesclou, when questioned as to what had happened to the child, was agitated These circumstances, as well as a lewd poem which was found upon him, left no doubt as to the fact that he had murdered after outraging the child Menesclou displayed no feelings of repentance; his act, he said, was a misfortune The accused man was of limited intelligence He showed no sign of anatomical degeneracy, he was hard of hearing and scrofulous

Menesclou was 20 years of age When nine months old he had convulsions, later on, he suffered from insomnia; *neurosis nocturna*, he was nervous, and developed slowly and in an incomplete manner From the commencement of the age of puberty, he grew irritable, displaying evil inclinations, he was idle, unmanageable, and unfitted for any occupation He did not amend his ways, even in the reformatory He was placed in the navy, but there also he was good for nothing When he returned home after his period of service, he robbed his parents and kept bad company. He has never run after women. He indulged in

onanism with hardour and occasionally indulged in sodomy with dogs. His mother suffered from *mania menstrualis periodica* one uncle was mad, another a drunkard.

The autopsy of Menesclous's brain allowed a morbid alteration of the two frontal lobes to be proved, of the first and the second temporal circumvolution as well as of a portion of the occipital circumvolutions.

"Alton a shop man in England, took a walk one day in the outskirts of the town. He enticed a child into a small plantation, returned after spending some time there, and went to his office where he wrote the following memorandum in his note book *killed to-day a young girl it was fine and hot*

The child's absence was remarked, search was made for her, and she was found torn in pieces, certain parts of her body, the genital parts among others, could not be discovered. Alton did not display the slightest trace of emotion, and did not offer any explanation of the motive or the circumstances of his horrible act. He was a psychopathic individual, who now and again had fits of depression with *taedium vitae*.

His father had had an attack of acute mania and a near relative suffered from mania with tendencies to murder. Alton was executed.

In such cases it may happen that the morbid individual feels a desire to taste the flesh of his murdered victim, and that yielding to this perverse aggravation of his objective representations, he eats parts of the corpse.

— Leger, a vine dresser, 24 years of age, of a gloomy disposition from his youth, morose and avoiding all society, went away to look for work. During eight days he prowled about in a forest. *Puellam apprehendit duodecim annorum stupratae genitalia mutilat, cor eripit, eat it, drank the blood and buried the corpse.* When he was arrested, he at first

denied, but finally confessed his crime with cynical composure. He listened to his death sentence with indifference, and was executed. At the autopsy, Esquirol ascertained the existence of pathological adherences between the meninges and the brain (Georget, account of the Léger trial, etc.)

Tirsch, a pensioner at the Hospice of Prague, always of a reserved and curious disposition, brutal, very irascible, sullen and vindictive, was condemned to 20 years' imprisonment for the rape of a girl aged 10, and had latterly attracted attention by his fits of passion for frivolous causes, and by his *taedium vitae*.

In 1864, after being jilted by a widow to whom he had proposed marriage, he conceived a hatred for women. On the 28<sup>th</sup> of July, he prowled about with the intention of murdering an individual of the sex which he so much detested.

*Vetulam occurrentem in silvam arrexit, coitum poposcit, renitentem prostravit, jugulum feminae compressit "furore captus" Cadaver virga betulae desecta verberare voluit neque amen id perfecit, quia conscientia sua haec fieri vetuit, cultello mammas et genitalia desecta domi cocta proximis diebus cum globis comedit.* When he was arrested on the 12<sup>th</sup> of September, the remains of this horrible meal were still discovered. He alleged, as a motive for his act, an "internal thirst" and himself asked that he might be executed, since he had always been a pariah in society. When in prison, he displayed excessive irascibility, and at times had fits of rage, during which he refused any food. It was remarked that the greater number of his former excesses coincided with explosions of irritation and rage (Maschka, *Prager Vierteljahrsschrift*, 1886).

In the category of these psycho-sexual monsters must no doubt be included the Whitechapel Ripper, whom the police are still looking for and unable to discover.

The regular absence of the uterus, ovaries, and vulva in each of the ten victims of this modern Blue-beard, leads to the conclusion that he sought for and obtained a keener satisfaction in cannibalism

In other cases of murder for pleasure, the *stuprum* has not taken place, either for physical reasons, or for psychological reasons, and the Sadist crime alone takes the place of coition

The prototype of such cases is that of Verzeni. The life of his victims depended on the early or late manifestation of ejaculation. As this memorable case includes all that modern science knows of the connection existing between pleasure, the madness of slaughter, and cannibalism, it is proper to make detailed mention of it here, the more so as it has been well observed

— Vincent Verzeni, born in 1849, was arrested on January 11<sup>th</sup>, 1872, and was accused 1<sup>o</sup> of having attempted to strangle his cousin Marianne, aged 4, when she was lying ill in bed 2<sup>d</sup> of having committed the same offence on the person of the wife of Arsuffi, aged 27, 3<sup>d</sup> of having tried to strangle M<sup>me</sup> Gala by squeezing her throat while he knelt upon her body, 4<sup>th</sup> he is suspected besides of having committed the following murders

In the month of December, between 7 and 8 o'clock in the morning, Jeanne Motta went to a neighbouring *commune*. As she did not return the master in whose house she acted as servant, went to look for her, and found in a pathway, near the village the horribly mutilated body of the girl. The viscera and the genital parts had been torn out of the body and were found near the corpse. The nudity of the corpse and marks of teeth on the thighs gave cause for belief that an attempt at rape had been committed, while the mouth being filled with earth showed that she had been suffocated. Near the corpse, under a heap of

straw, were found a detached portion of the right calf and of the dress. The author of this crime remained unknown.

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of August, early in the morning, Madame Frigeni, aged 28, went into the fields. As she had not yet returned at 8 o'clock, her husband went to look for her. He found her dead in a field, bearing round her neck the traces of strangulation and numerous wounds, her stomach had been opened, allowing her entrails to escape forth.

On the 29<sup>th</sup> of August, as Maria Previtte, aged 19, was crossing the fields, she was pursued by her cousin Verzeni, dragged into a field of wheat, thrown to the ground, and seized round the throat. When he relaxed his grasp for a moment to make sure that there was no one near, the girl got up again and by her earnest supplications induced Verzeni to let her go, after he had tightly squeezed her hands.

Verzeni was brought before the court. He was 22 years of age, his cranium of medium size and asymmetrical. The right frontal bone was narrower and lower than the left, the right frontal protuberance was but slightly developed, and the right ear smaller than the left (by one centimètre in length and three in width), the lower portion of the helix was wanting towards the two ears, the temporal artery was slightly atheromatous. He had a *bull's neck*, an enormous development of the zygomatic bone and of the lower jaw-bone, a greatly developed penis, absence of the *frenulum*, a slight *strabismus alternans divergens* (insufficiency of the *recti interni muscles* and *myopia*). From these marks of degeneracy, Lombroso deduced a congenital arrest of development of the right frontal lobe. Apparently Verzeni was an hereditary degenerant. Two of his uncles are *crétins*, a third is microcephalous and beardless, with one of his testicles wanting and the other atrophied. His father shows marks of pellagrous degeneracy and had an attack of *hypochondria pellagrosa*. One of his cousins suf-

ferred from cerebral hyperæmia, and another was a kleptomaniac

Verzeni's family are of a religious turn of mind, and sordidly avaricious. His intelligence is above the average, he well knows how to defend himself, tried to prove an alibi, and to contradict the witnesses. No sign of mental alienation is to be found in his past life. His character is strange, he is taciturn and fond of solitude. In prison, his attitude is cynical, he masturbates himself, and tries at all costs to see women.

Verzeni finally confessed his crimes, and detailed the motives which had induced him to commit them.

The accomplishment of his crimes, he said, had procured him an extremely agreeable (voluptuous) sensation, accompanied by erection and ejaculation. He had scarcely touched his victim on the neck when he felt sexual sensations, it was all the same to him if the women were old or young, plain or beautiful. Usually, he experienced pleasure merely by squeezing the woman's throat, and in this case he left his victim alive. In the two cases mentioned, the sexual satisfaction was slow in coming, and then he had squeezed his victim's throat until she was dead. The satisfaction which he experienced in these strangulations was greater than that which he procured through masturbation. The contusions on the skin of the thighs and pubes were made with his teeth, when he was sucking with great pleasure the blood of his victim. He had sucked a piece of the calf and had taken it away to broil it at home, but, altering his mind, he had hidden it under a heap of straw, for fear lest his mother should notice some of his proceedings. He had carried away with him the garments and the viscera, he carried them for some time because he felt a pleasure in smelling and handling them. The strength which he possessed in these moments of pleasure was

enormous. He had never been mad; when performing his acts, he no longer saw anything around him (evidently the sexual excitation, carried forward to the highest degree suppressed in him the faculty of perception) the act was instinctive. Afterwards he always experienced a certain feeling of comfort and a sentiment of great satisfaction. He never felt any remorse. The idea never came to him of touching the genital parts of the women whom he had tortured, or of defiling his victims, it was sufficient for him to strangle them and to suck their blood. In fact, the assertions of this modern vampire appeared to have a foundation of truth. The normal sexual inclinations appeared to have been foreign to him. He had two mistresses, but he contented himself with looking at them, and he is astonished himself that when in their presence, the desire never came to him to strangle them or to grasp their hands. It is true that with them he never experienced the same enjoyment as with his victims. No trace of moral feeling, or of repentance, was discerned in him.

Verzeni declared himself that he would become good if he were kept shut up, for, when restored to liberty, he would not be able to resist his desires. Verzeni was condemned to hard labour in perpetuity (Lombroso. *Verzeni e Agonletti* Roma, 1873 )

The confessions made by Verzeni after his condemnation are very interesting

“ I experienced an indescribable pleasure when I was strangling women, I then had erections and a veritable sexual desire. Merely smelling a woman's garments was enough to procure pleasure for me. The sensation of pleasure which I experienced in squeezing a woman's neck was greater than that which I obtained through masturbation. I experienced a great happiness in drinking the blood from the pubes. It also caused me great pleasure to draw

out the hairpins from the hair of the women whom I murdered I took their garments and viscera in order to have the pleasure of smelling and handling them My mother at length discovered my proceedings for after each murder or attempted murder, she noticed spots of sperm on my shirt I am not mad but, at the moment when I am killing a woman I no longer see anything After the perpetration of the act I was satisfied and felt well I never had any idea of touching or looking at the genital parts It was enough for me to grasp the woman's throat and to suck her blood I am still ignorant at the present day how a woman is made While I was strangling a woman, and afterwards also, I pressed myself against her body without directing my attention any more to one part than to another

Verzeni was only led to his perverse acts after noticing when he was 12 years old, that he felt a strange pleasure every time that he had fowls to kill This is why he then killed a large number of them alleging that a weasel had got into the farm yard (*Lombroso Goldammers Archiv*)

Lombroso (*Goldammers Archiv*) also quotes an analogous case which took place at Vittoria, in Spain

— A man named Gruyo, formerly of exemplary conduct, who had been three times married, strangled six women in ten years The victims were almost all of them prostitutes and no longer young After strangling them, he tore out their intestines and kidneys *per vaginam* He abused some of his victims before murdering them upon others he did not commit any sexual act, owing to the impotence which came upon him later He performed his atrocities with such precautions that for ten years, he remained safe from all pursuit

**Attempted homicide Profoundly perverse**



**instincts Responsible for his actions. Condemned to Hard labour in perpetuity.** Joseph Lepage, aged 17, in the morning of January 14<sup>th</sup>, 1889, took advantage of the absence of the Sieur Pierre in whose house he had been received for some time, while his father was at the Hospital, to attempt to murder the wife of Pierre who was asleep in her bed, with her young child by her side, by inflicting on her a stab with a knife. Awakened by the pain, the victim, hardly conscious of what had happened, turned round and saw Lepage standing by the side of the bed, and cried out to him " You have hurt me. " Joseph Lepage, without losing his countenance and holding the knife behind his back, replied in a tone of surprise . " Have I hurt you ". The woman Deschamps, seeing herself covered with blood, called out for help, and Lepage ran away.

A few hours after, he was arrested in the neighbourhood. He did not attempt any denial; and it was without any emotion that he replied to the questions of the police. When examined by the magistrate he lost none of his assurance, and even seemed to try to show off his cool perversity and most revolting cynicism, evidently seeking to produce an effect, and proclaiming with a smile, and in slang terms in preference, his criminal projects, the details of their performance, and his sorrow that he had not been more successful in his design to kill the woman (Deschamps)

He did not conceal the fact that he was envious of that public curiosity which attaches to a crime, and to the attitude of murderers who have left a name behind them in criminal annals Requested by Dr Paul Garnier to set forth in writing his intentions, as well as the circumstances of the act of which he was accused, Lepage drew them up

in several pages to which he gave the title of "History of my Life

" Allowed at an early age, he writes, to do as I liked it is not surprising that I have a distaste for hard work I have copied my father's example in his chief fault, that of drinking absinthe When I had any money I always drank two or three glasses of it a day As I did not like work, I only thought of loafing about The worse I was dressed, and the worse company I kept the prouder I was Then, later on, I only thought of making my brothers and sister weep, and of giving them digs with my knife, I loved to see the blood run The proof of this is that once when my parents had gone out, and I was left alone with my brother, I do not remember what passed between us it is a fact nevertheless that I pricked my brother with a sword which my father had in the house With regard to the crime he says, I had a wish to steal her money, I had no hesitation in murdering her, and if necessary the child lying at her side I should have struck a second blow in order to effect my purpose but as she woke up directly and threatened to have me arrested, I took myself off My intention was to cut off her head and to rob her of her eight francs As for my ideas, I give you them in one word to kill, to rob to murder and to make as many weep as I can and besides that to be always killing someone was my fixed idea To be cutting off heads was my fancy When I was young I dreamt only of giving blows with my knife *I wanted to do like Pranzini*, but I have hardly succeeded, so much the worse since I am caught but it is not the time to weep But it is unfortunate all the same to see oneself caught for a mere stab

Certain phrases had given reason for supposing that perhaps the avowed motive of his criminal attempt was not the real or the exclusive motive Lepage declared that

he wanted to kill the woman Deschamps in order to rob her of her purse, but one day he all at once cried out . “ Well ! I’ll tell you all about it It was not only in order to take her purse that I tried to murder her I had thought of that for a long time, and as I knew very well that she would not agree, I had the idea of killing her and then of satisfying myself well for once ; while her body was still warm, it would have been just as good as when she was still alive ! ” And then, “ They ought to acquit me, for, if I did her any harm, it was in order to do her good. They ask me if I repent, yes, I do repent that I did not kill her, but patience ! anger and hatred are accumulating against her, and I do not despair of avenging myself one day or another. Ah ! I would go to the guillotine in order to have her, and to feast upon her blood. For if I remain quiet any longer I think I shall be stifled. ”

These extracts are enough, we think to show the deeply perverted and malevolent nature of Joseph Lepage. The expert proved that the perversion affected his intelligence, which remained active, much less than his moral and affective faculties, he concluded that Lepage could be put upon his trial to give an account of his conduct He was condemned to hard labour in perpetuity

The jury treated Lepage as an essentially dangerous creature. ” (Dr Garnier )

If investigations had been made among Lepage’s ancestors, it would have been found perhaps that he was a *degenerant and diseased*, and the expert’s report would not have been so conclusive against this unhappy creature.

**The Political and Military Life of Gilles de Rays, called Blue-beard.** There was once a Sadic who for the space of several years mutilated unfortunate children, making them undergo incredible tortures.

This worthy predecessor of the Marquis de Sade was the high and potent Breton Lord, Gilles de Laval, Sire de Rays, a companion in arms of Charles VII, who, as a reward for his good and loyal services in the wars against the English nominated him Marshal of France. He had fought by the side of Jeanne d'Arc, for the deliverance of Orleans, and when the heroine wished to raise the Oriflamme on the walls of Paris, Gilles de Rays went down with her into the moat where she was wounded by an arrow. It was the Marshal who as Councillor and Chamberlain to the French King brought him to Rheims to be consecrated there, and he had the honour of bearing the Holy Ampulla, which he had sought with all care and money at the Abbaye de St-Remi.

His courage in the battle field was equal to his wisdom in the King's Council-chamber. He showed himself in turn a statesman and a warrior when all at once he quitted the service of Charles VII and replaced his sword in its sheath.

He retired to his estates, where he gave himself up to the study of the occult sciences, and fell into the hands of astrologers, magicians and alchemists, seeking after the secret of the philosopher's stone which is able to make gold from copper and silver from lead.

At the same time, Gilles de Rays led a life of such idleness, luxury and debauchery that in less than two years, in spite of an annual income of 300 000 *livres* (equivalent to 3 000 000 in the present day), he was obliged to make over or sell a part of his estates, to his Suzerain in particular Jean V Duke of Brittany. Sinister rumours prevailed about him. Public report accused him of stealing children for diabolical purposes, and asserted that these children were never seen again.

The unhappy serfs wept in silence for their children, who

had disappeared, not daring to complain for fear, for the complaint of a humble vassal against his powerful lord had as much chance of succeeding at that period, as that of a rag-and-bone man against Rothschild, the king of the Jews, of having stolen a penny from him, would at the present day

To effect the apprehension of Gilles de Rays and to compel him to give an account of his crimes before the Law, it was necessary that he should embroil himself at the same time with his Suzerain and also with the Bishop of Nantes on a question of interest. Jean V, persuaded and circumvented, gave orders for the trial to begin, and sent the order to Gilles de Rays to repair to Nantes and there appear before the Court presided over by the Grand Seneschal of Brittany, Pierre de l'Hospital.

A long and minute enquiry revealed unheard-of crimes, and, on this occasion, public report was inferior to the truth. In spite of the evident efforts of the deputy of the Procureur of Nantes, whose speech for the prosecution was delivered with the deliberate intention of saving the life of this great Sadié, the revelations made by the Marshal's two accomplices Pontou and Henriët, his providers and executioners in ordinary, were so positive, and given in such detail, that Gilles de Rays confessed all his crimes.

The Court, in consequence, " notwithstanding the quality, dignity, and nobility of the said accused, " condemned him to be hung and burnt.

And this sentence was executed, in spite of the great and signal services rendered by the Marshal to France, and Charles VII, to whom he had written to save him, left him to perish by the hands of the public executioner.

After his condemnation, Gilles de Rays, in spite of the depositions of his accomplices, which were the cause of his condemnation, begged of the Court the favour " to

allow me to be executed at the same time as my two servants and accomplices, Henriët and Pontou, in order to comfort them and warn them as to their salvation before the execution, and to give them an example how to die well. For if it were otherwise and my said servants did not see me die they might fall into despair and imagine that I should remain unpunished, whereas I shall suffer the penalty which I have deserved more than they. Grant me this favour Monseigneur of dying with them.

This favour was granted to him as well as that of obtaining from the Bishop of Nantes and from all his clergy, "a fine general procession, to obtain from God that my two servants and I should be kept in the firm belief of our eternal salvation, which is the sweetest consolation of the soul.

Before the execution, Gilles de Rays made an address to Pontou and Henriët after the manner of a sermon, in order to exhort them to die well in expiation of their crimes. Then before dying, this extraordinary man knelt down, joining his hands, and kissing a crucifix, and harangued the crowd as follows.

Good people, who are here present to see what will be my end. I recall to your minds that I am your Christian brother therefore pray for me. I adjure also the fathers and mothers of the children I have slain, to pardon me and to pray to God for me for the love of the Passion of Our Lord. Be not more inflexible towards me than God. I pray you, the more so as I trust in his pity and expect there from mercy and pardon. That is why I commend myself to Monseigneur St James whom I hold in singular affection, and also to Monseigneur St Michael, imploring them that at this hour and in this my great need, they will aid me and assist me before God notwithstanding that I have not obeyed them as I ought to have done. When my soul

departs from my body, may Monseigneur St-Michael receive it and present it before God, in order that God may take pity upon it and not punish it according to its offences ”

After this pathetic discourse, the condemned man began to recite the prayers for the dying, while two executioners passed the rope round his neck, after making him get up on a high stool placed at the foot of the gibbet, as a last honour paid to the delinquent's noble rank. The pile of wood was lighted before the Sire de Rays was hoisted to the gallows, and the stool was then overturned; and he remained hanging while the flames burst forth and enveloped him

Thus died the great and powerful Seigneur Gilles de Laval, a pederast, a Sadic, a credulous and superstitious mystic, addicted to the occult sciences.

**Nature of the Sadic crimes committed by Gilles de Rays** We find them enumerated at length in the confessions of Pontou and Henriet, when replying before the Court to the interrogatories of the Grand Seneschal, Pierre de l'Hospital, and they also gave a detailed account of all the Sadic crimes which they committed in common with their master.

These confessions are to be found in the work of the bibliophile P -L Jacob (*Curiosités de l'histoire de France*).

**Confessions of Henriet, Gilles' Chamberlain** After relating how he had entered his master's service, and the way in which they had removed from the Chateau de Chanton, three large boxes full of the calcined bones of children and sent them to Marchecoul, Henriet confessed that before delivering over on his own account

children to the Sire de Rays, he had taken part in the murder of those given over by Gilles de Sille and Pontou

‘ These little children were brought in the evening into the Marshal’s chamber, *Habitabat eos, apud eos calebat et reddebat naturam super ventrem eorum cum maxima dilectione, sed habitationem efficiebat semel tantummodo pro sua voluptas*

After satiating his horrible lust, the Sire de Rays took pleasure in cutting the throat of his innocent victims, or he ordered sometimes Gilles de Sille sometimes Pontou and sometimes Henriët to bury a poignard in the child’s jugular, so that the blood might spurt out on him and inundate him with intermittent jets the warmth of the blood as it trickled over his flesh caused him a kind of ecstatic delight The room was sometimes completely swimming in blood

Then the Sire de Rays went to bed, murmuring prayers in an undertone, and his three accomplices washed the floor and burnt the bodies of the murdered children in a large fire-place, while the bodies were being reduced to cinders, the Sire de Rays dwelt complacently on the sensations he had felt while cutting their throat, or being sprinkled with their warm blood

When the bodies were burnt, the clothes and every thing else which had belonged to the children were also burnt there was an unendurable smell in the room and throughout the whole house the Sire de Rays alone delighted in breathing this evil smell of burnt flesh and bones

The example of Gilles de Sillé and Pontou decided Henriët to devote himself to the pursuit of children, and he handed over several whom he selected among those who came to beg at the gate of the Château of Machecoul He remembered having put to death more than forty under



similar circumstances, which horrified and pleased him at the same time

There was also a man named Rossignol, who laboured with great zeal in the burning of the bodies.

The Sire de Rays used to reserve, no doubt for purposes of magic, certain parts of the dead bodies, among others the hair and the right hand. He often shut himself up in a lofty chamber into which no one had ever penetrated, except the astrologer Francois Prelate, and remained there for whole days, coming out thence sad and depressed.

One day, the door of this chamber being half-open, a little page, who happened to go in, caught sight of magical instruments, furnaces, pincers, phials full of blood and a hand of wax armed with a blood-stained dagger. The said page did not carry his indiscretion far, for he fell into the water of the moat and was drowned, which caused the Marshal's servants to say that the devil had taken the soul of this urchin.

The President of Brittany invited Henriët to complete his confessions by describing the children whom he had handed over himself to his master, and the depositions of the witnesses relating to these kidnappings of children were read over to him, so that he might confirm, explain, and enlarge upon them

Pontou had hidden his face in his hands and appeared indifferent to everything. Henriët struck him on the shoulder and implored him to assist him in recalling his remembrances. Pontou replied with a deep groan.

Ah! unhappy man, murmured Pontou, without raising his eyes, you will ruin us all and not save yourself

Henriët declared that the first child he handed over was the son of a man named Thierry : the mother only separated herself from him under the condition of seeing him attached to the chapel of the Sire de Rays. After placing

this child in Pontou's hands, Henriët was obliged to go to Nantes and, on his return to Marchecoul, he learnt that the child was no longer alive. "The poor little fellow has gone off like the rest!" Pontou said to him laughing. Then, in succession, Henriët delivered over to Gilles de Rays while the Marshal was staying at Nantes, the children of Guibelet Dolé of Jean Januret, of Regnault d'Ouette and of Jean Denis de Lemion. The fate of all these children was the same. It was at the Hôtel de la Suze in the chamber of Gilles de Rays that these unheard of mysteries of debauchery and ferocity were performed. Henriët remembered the child whom Pontou brought from Roche-Bernard to Marchecoul to be a page and who was stabbed and burnt, he remembered also a fine young boy who lived with a man named Rodigo at Bourgneuf en Rays, and whom Pontou brought to Marchecoul promising him silk clothes and steel weapons but he had no part in the murder of this child.

— Is it possible, enquired the deputy of the Procureur de Nantes that the bodies were burnt in the fire place of a room and consumed by the heat of the fire? Only think what it is when some porkfat runs into a kitchen fire!

— The burning did not last long, Messire, I assure you replied Henriët. The fire place in Monseigneur's chamber is very large, both at Marchecoul and at Hôtel de la Suze great logs of wood were placed on two fire dogs, with two or three bundles of sawn wood on the said log, then the dead children were laid upon them, so that they were all consumed in a few hours and if perchance the log was like to go out, the flame was stirred up with iron hooks, in order that the bodies might the sooner be burnt and reduced to powder, which powder was thrown out of the windows into the moat. And while the children were roast

ing, the Sire de Rays did naught but groan and pray in his bed

As to the charge of magic, Maître Philippe de Levron, whose mission seemed to be rather to defend the Sire de Rays than to accuse him, objected this charge ought to be abandoned, for the empty talk of a little page, who is now dead, does not avail to impute such a crime to the Sire de Rays, whom I hope to be a good Christian and not a worshipper of the devil, in spite of all his sins, which may God pardon !

In truth when Monseigneur remained shut up with his Italian astrologer. Maître François, I would not wish and ought not to suspect that it was for magic and devil-worship, but, once, the said maître François, having come forth from that chamber where he was with Monseigneur, called maître Eustache Blanchet, who passed for an invocator and demoniac, they talked together in a low tone, and I heard maître François say that he would cause *Aliboron* to appear. The next day, I asked maître Eustache what this Aliboron was that maître François would cause to appear, and he answered me that it was the devil, at which I was much afraid and made the sign of the cross. Maître Eustache began to laugh, and asked me not to drive away his friends, for fear that they might not return again. He added, however, that maître François was so intimate with the devil or Aliboron, that he could make him come out of hell for a pot of wine. After this conversation I kept away from maître François, and cursed his damnable art, and this no doubt prevented the Sire de Rays from allowing me to share in their proceedings. He only told me to beware of entering his chamber while maître François was there. I went into it nevertheless one day, at the château de Tiffauges, and I observed a large circle traced on the floor, with crosses and characters which I could not comprehend. Therefore I ran away as quickly as possible,

and Monseigneur cried out to me not to turn my head. Another day, Monseigneur sent me to look for a book which he had in a box, and I was greatly troubled to see that this book was written in letters of blood. 'Henriet Monseigneur said to me, ' did you not feel that it burnt your fingers ?

— What you have stated regarding the excesses committed by Messire de Rays, interrupted the deputy of the Procureur de Nantes, seems to be pure invention and wholly improbable. The greatest criminals that ever lived have not committed such crimes except perhaps some of the Cæsars and Emperors of ancient Rome.

— Yes, Messire, it was the acts of these Cæsars that Monseigneur de Rays thought to imitate and to please him. I used to read to him the chronicles of Suetonius and Tacitus, in which are narrated in fine style various abominations of nature which rejoiced him much. I therefore this reading served only to heat him the more and he then said to me that he would rather see the head of a child being cut off, than to be sitting at table at a solemn banquet. Often, when the poor little things were stripped of their clothes, he delighted in sitting upon their belly, and in this position he would cut off their head with a single stroke, sometimes he made an incision in their neck behind, to make their life gradually ebb away, sometimes he flung himself upon the headless bodies while they were yet warm. At other times he would saw their neck half off, very gently so that they might still live, without being able to cry and he would wash his hands and his beard in their blood, or again he would keep them underneath him when they were dead, singing psalms and especially the *De profundis* on their account. Lastly, he was wont to say quite proudly, that no man on this planet knew how to do what he did.

These are marvels of abomination which cannot be believed, cried the deputy of the Procureur de Nantes, and perhaps you speak thus through hatred of Monseigneur de Rays, for the witnesses have made no such revelations. Will not the torture cause you to contradict it?

Nay, Messire, I have told the truth for love of the truth rather than through fear of the torture, and I maintain on my oath that the said things are quite true. You may ask those about it who know, messire Roger de Briqueville, messire Gilles de Sillé, Rossignol and Pontou ... Wilt thou not say the same, Pontou? I urge thee for the salvation of thy soul Maître Eustache Blanchet must also be asked what he knows about it, for, sometimes, as Monseigneur was having two little children dismembered by the arm-pits and was taking pleasure in seeing the blood trickle from these severed limbs, maître Eustache said to me in a whisper that Monseigneur could not carry out what he had taken in hand without giving the feet, the legs, and the other parts of these murdered children to the great devil, who wished to have his share of them. On certain occasions, when Monseigneur was in a pleasant humour and these children began to cry, he gave orders that a rope should be put round their neck and that they should be hung up at a height of three feet in a corner of his chamber, and this was done by one of us; but they did not wait until the children were dead, and they were let down quite out of breath, all trembling and swooning, and were bidden not to utter a word and to close their eyes. Then Monseigneur (1) made a sign that their throats should be cut and their heads separated from their bodies, and then he cried out for the head to be shewn him, if it was a fine one.

(1) Ponens membrum in manibus eorum incalescebat illum et suscitabat, usque ad reddendam naturam supra ventrem

— The little children who were killed in this way resumed the deputy to the Procureur de Nantes, who wished to lay a trap for Henriette were they not sometimes of the female sex ?

— Sometimes it is true, but Monseigneur did not take little girls unless there was a lack of male children, he then had these poor girls killed without looking at them (1)

— You lie before God and the Law, interrupted Philippe de Livron, for it has been proved by the enquiry that all the lost children were males, and that no woman or girl was ever missing in the country of Rays

— I remember for my part having taken two or three little girls who came for alms to the château de Machecoul, and it was I who cut off their heads as I have said Besides, on the last journey that Monseigneur made to Nantes to wait there for the money which our Lord the duc de Bretagne owed him (it was in July, I fancy) they did not know of a male child to bring to Monseigneur but André Brichet met a little girl on the stair-case of the hôtel weeping and asking for her mother and he took the said child off in his arms, for which Monseigneur gave him ten golden crowns although he gave ordinarily only two or three for male children After having his pleasure of this girl, who was killed without much preparation, he gave orders that the body, which was already drained of blood, should be taken out of his sight and that it should be well hidden On which, Pontou conceived the idea of carrying the body to the private closets of the Hôtel and of throwing it into the privies where no one would find it, but the said body remained in the air, hanging by a nail, so that it could be seen from above, and so all the mys

(1) *Habebat habitationem supra ventrem earum tanquam eorum et dicebat minimam esse voluptatem si cognoscebat illas naturaliter*

tery would have been known. Pontou therefore went down with a rope to loosen the said body, and he fell with it into the privies, from which we drew him out with great difficulty, and so covered with ordure that Monseigneur refused to receive him for three days.

How many children do you estimate were put to death by Messire de Rays and his servants ?

The tale of them would be lengthy, for, for my part, I confess to having killed more than twelve by Monseigneur's orders, and I handed over to him more than sixty. Now, before I entered the said Seigneur's service, I knew that things went on in the same way. I have been told that the Château de Machecoul, having been for some time occupied by the Sire de la Suze, who took it traitorously, Monseigneur was in great haste to recapture it, on account of the children's bodies which he had hidden in a chamber full of hay, and that there were more than forty bodies quite dry and black as charcoal, because they had been burnt. A woman of Madame de Rays went by chance into this chamber, and saw the bodies, and Monseigneur however would not have Messire de Bricqueville kill this woman as he proposed.

Did Messire de Rays then have all the children put to death who were handed over to him and with whom he had intercourse ?

He also had intercourse with the little children of his chapel; but he did not ill-treat them, and even loaded them with favours, because they kept his act secret. As for the children which were brought to him without the porter observing them, he spared none of them, for fear lest they should complain, and give rise to suspicions against him. I remember two who were brothers; he only took one of them to know for his pleasure, the more handsome of the two, but the other, during the mystery, remained

also in the chamber, on his knees and praying, after which, both of them were killed by Monseigneur's own hand, who struck one behind and the other in front

— Have you anything more to declare, and do you maintain on your oath that all you have said is the truth

— Yes, I have sworn and I swear again, that all the things I have said are true, and I appeal to the testimony of my friend Pontou, here present who will be unable to contradict me, for the sake of the forgiveness of his sins

This deposition produced upon the judges a feeling of profound horror and even of terror The human imagination, at that period of simple religious beliefs, had not yet penetrated the mysteries of refined perversity The obscene and atrocious details into which the accomplice of the Sire de Rays had entered, found no analogy except in the private life of the Roman Emperors, and it was doubtless from that impure source that Gilles de Rays had borrowed his monstrous crimes

Several times, while Henriët was speaking, the President de Bretagne had testified, by making the sign of the cross, to the astonishment and indignation which he felt, several times he had blushed and looked down

**Confession of Pontou, page to Gilles de Rays** ‘ It is now fully ten years since I entered Monseigneur's service, and I shall be twenty five years of age next Christmas I was at first a page in My Lord's service, and maître Roger de Bricqueville was then governor of the pages, I soon became page in waiting and filled that office very worthily, when one evening I saw in Monseigneur's chamber two dead children, who had their throats cut, when I saw this I began to cry out murder and wanted to run away but I had no time to do so, for the Sire



de Rays, whom my cries had aroused from his repose, seized me by the hair and lifted his sword to slay me as he had slain the two children. Maître Roger de Bricqu eville, fortunately happened to be there and prevented him from carrying out his purpose, and pointing out to him that I was young and handsome, undertook for me that I would not reveal what I had seen; after which, as a guarantee for my oath, he compelled me to lend my body to Monseigneur's pleasure, who did to me as he did to the other children of his chapel, and did not cut my throat. As for all that Henriët has related concerning the wicked and damnable deeds of Monseigneur towards the little children who were given over to him, I must certainly confess that such was the case, and I will not relate them again, for fear of offending your ears, Messeigneurs I have always thought that Monseigneur only acted in this way at the instigation of the devil and his magicians, for he performed all his duties as a good and faithful Christian, fasted on Vigils and Ember-days, listened very devoutly to three Masses a day, one high and two low, sang the psalms to the sound of the organ, and dispersed much in alms, for which he was loved and blessed by his subjects. But, on certain days, he seemed to be attacked with a diabolical fury, and he wished to have little children given over to him, whom he used to kill in different ways, after abusing them carnally. The pleasure which he gained in doing this was atoned for by the great repentance which he felt afterwards: as soon as the mystery was completed, he regretted and deplored his crimes, asked for pity of God, and passed the rest of the night in watching and prayer, sometimes kissing the dead children's cut off heads and speaking to them as if they were alive, sometimes kneeling and weeping before the bodies which were being burnt in the fire-place. It was a terrible sight to see, and many a time I

thought of becoming a monk in a monastery, so as no longer to be a witness of these sacrileges

— You do not say if you had any part in them, interrupted the President de Breagne were you active or passive?

— Alas! Monseigneur, I did what my good Sire de Ravaud ordered me to do sometimes I held the children and stopped their mouth so that they should not cry, sometimes I cut off their head or buried my dagger in their throat I was obliged situated as I was, to take part in the business to burn the bodies on the fire dogs to keep up the fire on the hearth to throw the bones and the carcases into the privies or into the moat of the Château, for since the Châteaude Chantoë had been surprised by the Seigneur de la Sire and that a number of burnt or decomposed bodies of children had been found there, Monseigneur no longer kept what he called the *reliques* of his pleasure but he destroyed the traces of them as far as he could, and I served him marvellously in that in as much as the blood was washed away the bones and remains of the bodies were buried or dispersed the garments consumed, and every vestige of the said children annihilated Nevertheless Monseigneur had a fancy for keeping the heads which seemed to him the most handsome, although I often implored him to let them also be burned I put the said heads away in boxes and sacks full of salt so as to keep them fresh These boxes will be found, fastened with padlocks and strong locks, in a cellar of the Château de Machecoul

— I will cause these boxes to be looked for, said Pierre de l'Hospital But confess what children were given over by you

— I could not tell the number of them, for I used to hand these children as occasion might happen and accord

ing to Monseigneur's appetite, but I estimate however that during ten years, I have seen two hundred children killed, and I even confess that I am guilty of their murder. However these were not the only ones who died in that interval of time, since I was often absent, or sick, or otherwise prevented, and Monseigneur did not wait for me in order to take his pastime. I will not contradict what has been revealed in the enquiry concerning me, and I confess that I brought to the Hôtel de la Suze ten or twelve children who were put to death, in particular the son of one named Januret, the son of the late Sonnet de Villefranche, the son of Georges Laurent and others, I remember also handing over to Monseigneur for his pleasures, a child who lived at the Roche-Bernard, another who was in Rodigo's house, and many others whose names do not occur to me. All those who were handed over to him had the same fate, although they were killed in different ways and after different treatment. It must be added that Monseigneur began to concern himself with children about fourteen years ago, and since that commencement he has made a greater massacre of them. Thus, I have heard say, when the old Sire de la Suze, Monseigneur's uncle, was alive, some children were killed in My Lord's chamber at the Château de Chantocé, and in truth, when the said Chateau had to be handed over four or five years afterwards to our very-dread Sire de Bretagne, I assisted my friend Henriët, another man called Petit Robin, and a tall page named Hugues, to remove the dried decomposed bodies which were there. Petit-Robin and I went down with ropes to the bottom of an *oubliette*, and we put the dead bodies into a canvas sack which Henriët and Hugues pulled up, while the Sire de Sillé kept watch. Now, this work occupied all the night, and I counted thus forty-six children who were packed in a large box

and taken by water to Machecoul Monseigneur wished to see them and pretended that he recognized them, among others a little lad whose beauty he greatly praised, saying that his head would make the cherubim jealous, but I answered him that all this mass of corruption was very sad wherefore he abstained from viewing them, and had a fine Mass sung to music in memory of the dead About this time a report prevailed that a number of children had been wickedly slain in the Châteaux of the country of Rays and upon this I advised Monseigneur to reduce to powder certain bodies which I had seen in a dungeon of Machecoul, which advice he complied with about eighty bodies were burnt in a single night

— Do you maintain the truth of your accomplice Henriet's confessions touching the execrable practices of the said Sire de Rays? I consider, for my part, that they are lies and calumnies

— I am compelled to tell the truth, Messires and I have not began so well in order to finish otherwise Henriet has related the facts as they were Monseigneur took great delectation with the poor children who were brought into his chamber of an evening and he frequently cut their throat with his own hand after or during his intercourse with them, sometimes he cut off their head with a single blow, and held his hands under the jet of blood which issued from the severed neck, murmuring paternosters to God and to the Saints, as well as conjurations to the Devil When he fixed a rope to the children's neck and placed this rope on a hook so as to lift them into the air like a strappado, he did not cease to speak to them and to ask them to pray for him

— You do not then deny that the Sire de Rays had intercourse with the Devil? remarked the deputy of the Procureur de Nantes

In truth, I would prefer an age of purgatory rather than that these impieties and sacrileges had been the cause of the wicked life which Monseigneur led, for then he would have less to atone for, but I regret that the Devil should have been the instigator of the murder of so many little children. Thus, one evening Monseigneur had great diversion with one of these children, he took its heart and one of its hands, which he placed on the glowing coals until the heart and the hand were dried up by the fire, then he placed them in a fold of his robe and carried them to Maître François, who at that hour was having conversation with the Spirits of Darkness. I do not know what they did with the said objects, but I saw afterwards the heart enclosed in a glass, as for the hand, I was told that it was a *mandragore* or talisman to acquire wealth. Henriet informed me that the said *mandragore*, or hand of glory following any one, would be found in Monseigneur's hood and that it would prevent him from dying by steel, by water, or by fire, as long as he kept it in this way about him. This is what I remember he said on this subject when Messire Jean Labbé came to Machecoul with the officers "Quick, go and find my black velvet hood with the double folds, for therein is my liberty, my honour and my life." But, diligent though we were in looking for the said hood, we knew not what had become of it, and I believe that the Enemy of men had stolen it, so that Monseigneur might not aid himself with it in this danger, and this made him say : " If my hood is lost, I shall lose my head ! "

**The Confessions of Gilles de Rays.** The confessions of Henriet and Pontou were the ruin of Gilles de Rays, who was not long before he confessed the truth himself, in spite of the efforts of the deputy of the Procu-

reur de Nantes to prevent him from incriminating himself

“ Alas, no, replied the Sire de Rays, raising his countenance streaming with tears Henriet and Pontou have told the truth, and God Himself has loosened their tongues in order to cause me to make a general confession of my sins

— Do so then, Messire replied the President and so lessen the burden of your sins in this life and in the next

— It is quite true, Messires, said the Marshal, after collecting his thoughts and taking courage, it is quite true that I have stolen little children from their poor mothers, these children I have killed or caused to be killed either by cutting their throat with daggers, knives and other instruments, or by separating the head from the body by axes or swords, or by breaking their skull with sticks or hammers, or in other ways sometimes, I took away or caused to be taken away their limbs, such as their hands, arms, legs, *et cætera*, sometimes I ripped open their chest or stomach to see their entrails or heart inside, sometimes, I had them fastened by a rope to a hook to strangle them and kill them gradually then when they were half dead, I had intercourse with them some times, when they were dead and still warm, I used to kiss them and take pleasure in viewing the finest heads after which the bodies were burned and consumed to ashes

— At what period did you begin these execrable practices? said Pierre de l'Hospital, aghast at the frankness of these horrible confessions Who induced you to perform them? Assuredly it was the Spirit of Evil, the Enemy of men the Tempter

— I do not know, but of myself and out of my own head, with no advice from anyone, I conceived the idea of acting thus merely for the pleasure and delectation of my lust, in fact I have found incomparable delight

therein, doubtless through the instigation of the Devil. It is about eight years ago that this diabolical idea came to me, it was the same year as my late grandfather, the Sire de la Suze, departed from this life of sin. I then left the camp of the King of France, to repair to Chantocé, in order to lay my hands on the goods and heritage of the defunct; now, being by chance in the library of the said Château, I found a Latin book on the lives and manners of the Cæsars of Rome, by a learned historian named Suetonius, the said book was adorned with pictures well painted, in which were to be seen the proceedings of these pagan Emperors, and I read in this fine history how Tiberius, Caracalla, and other Cæsars had their sport with children, and took singular pleasure in torturing them. Upon which, I wished to imitate the said Cæsars, and, the same evening, I began to do so, following the pictures of the lesson and of the book. For a time, I did not confide my affair to anyone, but afterwards, I told all the mystery to my cousin Gilles de Sillé, then to Maître Roger de Bricqueville, and successively to Henriët, to Pontou, to Rossignol, to Prinçay, to André Brichet, and to a man called Hugues and to another called Robin, both of whom died in a very Christian manner. The said men employed themselves in finding children for my wants, and assisted in the mystery, especially Henriët and Pontou, whom I had trained to this game. The children killed at Chantocé were thrown into a vat at the bottom of a tower, from which I had them taken on a certain night and placed in a box to be taken away to Machecoul and burned there, which was done. As for those killed at Machecoul and at Nantes, in the Hôtel de la Suze, they were burned in my chamber, except some beautiful heads which I kept as *reliques*. I could not say how many were thus killed and burned.

— Will you not enquired the President de Bretagne, name or point out some of the children who perished thus?

— The tale of them would be lengthy, Messires and I do not so well remember the names of these children, as their heads before and after death I remember in particular a handsome boy who lived at Rodigos, and whom Henriet brought to me while I was at Bourgneuf That evening, at the said place Bourgneuf, I had intercourse with him and put him to death with my own hand The body was hidden in a wrapper and taken to Machecoul remember also a pretty little page whom Prinçay had, and another which belonged to one of my gentlemen, the Sieur de la Saulsaie I also can recall a sweet little boy who was murdered at Vannes through which I was passing, it was André Brichet who brought him to me, saying “ Take him Monseigneur, he is a morsel for a king Of the others who met the same fate, I could not say anything, except that in number they were about a hundred and twenty a year

— That would be at least eight hundred in the space of seven years I cried Pierre de l Hospital, making the sign of the cross in sorrow Ah! Messire, you are possessed of the devil no doubt I pray to God that you be not so presently

— In truth, the Devil at times tormented me, but I drove him away by the power of prayers, of Masses and of offerings

— Now, I pray you to tell the Court all that you know of this demon how he assailed you, and how you at any time invoked him, with the assistance of sorcerers, necromancers and invocators of devils

— Alas! Messire, said the Sire de Rays bursting into tears, it is very true that I have invoked demons or rather



that I have been a witness of invocations; but, before being there, I heard Mass and made confession, so that the Devil could not hurt me. Therefore, these godly actions certainly prevented the demons from coming to the said invocations and agreeing to do according to my wishes. ”

**The Sadism of the Marquis de Sade, was it innate or acquired?** Can we admit the *innateness* of Sadism in this prominent individual of the class, who died so miserably, and whose surname of Blue-beard has become that of a sanguinary monster We cannot, if we rely on his deposition before the Court According to his statement, it was owing to his reading the works of Suetonius that he was induced to perpetrate such acts But for such a seed to germinate, it was requisite that the soil should be favourable, and, in our opinion, Gilles de Rays, if not an innate Sadic, was at least a Sadic in whom the growth of the malady had tardily developed Unfortunately we know nothing regarding his childhood. Was he a masturbator? Was he fond of seeing human creatures and animals suffering? Was his conduct regular from the point of view of sodomical and pederastic relations, while he was a companion of the Pucelle and chamberlain to the king of France? These are questions which meet with no reply. But we have a right to consider that he was a pederast, knowing as we do his vice. The characteristics, however, of innate Sadism are very marked in his case. He displays in the highest degree *impulsion obsession and recurrence*, which, like the good Catholic he was, he attributes to the influence of the Devil The mysticism, with which he is imbued, struggles in vain against the terrible morbid *impulsion* When the deed is done, he weeps, he sobs, he asks God for pardon, has Masses said, gives money to the churches, *and then begins again*

When he was brought before the Justice of men and before remorse compelled him to confess the truth, he wrote a long letter to the king of France, to ask for his protection, and in this letter he ingenuously makes confession of his crimes I extract from it the following curious paragraph “ I shall not however remain unpunished and absolved, for I have a firm resolve to quit the world and its vanities, to become a monk in a convent, and to give myself to penitence and to bewailing and hoping for eternal life

Often do I reproach myself my very venerated Lord, for having quitted your service six years ago, for had I continued therein I should not have committed such crimes, but I ought nevertheless to confess that I was induced to retire to my estates of Rays through a certain furious passion and desire which I felt for your own Dauphin, so that I *nearly killed him one day*, as I have since killed a number of little children, through the secret temptation of the Devil

Was not this desire to kill the Dauphin an impulsion obsession of the first rank? Such an idea could only originate in a madman's brain!

This was his attitude, according to P L Jacob, when he first appeared before his judges

“ The Sire de Rays did not at the first sight show that vicious nature and those atrocious habits which were attributed to him, on the contrary he had a sweet and cajoling expression of countenance which was not rendered sombre by his small moustaches, and by his beard fashioned after the shape of a swallow's tail

This singular beard, which did not resemble any other, was black, although the hairs were fair, but it assumed, under certain influences of light and position, nearly blueish shades, which had given to the Sire de Ray the sur

name of Blue-beard, a name still popular in Brittany, where his history has been metamorphosed into a marvellous and fantastic tale.

At times too, his eyes became fixed, and the pupils dilated to such a degree, while they gleamed with a sombre fire, that they seemed to fill the whole of the orbits, which grew round and retreated into his head. Then his complexion assumed a pale and cadaverous shade, his forehead, particularly at the commencement of the nose, became folded in deep wrinkles, and his beard, which seemed to bristle, was usually rather blue than black. But, after a few seconds, his countenance again became serene, with an almost caressing half-smile, and there remained in his look only a vague and lingering melancholy. ”

**Was Gilles de Rays a diseased subject, a madman and not a monster?** Let us sum the matter up. The reader no doubt will give us the right to conclude by saying that Gilles de Rays, the great Sadist, was a diseased subject, a congenital maniac, at the same time mystical and blood-thirsty, perhaps at the beginning an *innate* pederast, but not a monster of depravity and cruelty.

History has forgotten the noble services which he rendered in the defence of his country, and has preserved only the memory of his atrocious crimes. Medical science, which is more impartial, ought to do the exact opposite. Such, at least, is our opinion.

Here is an observation, due to Moreau, in which murder was followed by rape. Was the subject an innate or an acquired Sadist? As we are in doubt, we shall classify him in the former of these two categories.

“ A miller and his wife of Bas-Coudray, in the *commune*

of Saint Isle, had taken into their service a young fellow, aged 20 named Blanchard

Blanchard had been at the mill a week, when, on the 2<sup>d</sup> of February last, M and M<sup>me</sup> Houssin, his master and mistress, went away for the day, leaving their daughter Henriette, aged 11 1/2 years

About noon, a labourer, sent out in the early morning, was surprised on his return to find the house shut up He raised himself up to the window, and saw, scattered on the floor, the contents of a linen cupboard, and noticed Henriette Houssin's *sabots* at the foot of a stair case

He called silence only answered him He went in search of Blanchard, but the youth had disappeared

What should he do? He would inform the neighbours and bring some people to the deserted dwelling A farmer's wife came in haste a messenger was sent to the child's parents, another went for the *gendarmes*

They went up to the first story On a bed lay the lifeless body of Henriette, her neck bleeding from a transversal wound Around the wound a violent pressure had left the imprint of nails The murdered little girl had evidently been the object of the most odious outrage

Blanchard had enticed his victim by asking her to help him fill his sack with bran

He had rushed upon her Foreseeing her desperate efforts the brute had kept within reach of his hand an open knife

Blanchard whose real name was Bouché, was sought for by the Public Prosecutor at Rambouillet as being guilty of two crimes

In October last, he went to Dourdan A little girl his cousin, was at school at Brénillet He persuaded the mistress to entrust him with Eugénie A , took her into the

wood of Bretigny, and ignobly defiled the child who had been confided to him

In November, B meeting a woman, Marguerite G . . , aged 80, in the forest, precipitated himself on the poor old woman, and indulged in fresh and odious violence.

Bouché, cynical until the end, listened with a scoffing air to the sentence which condemned him to death." (*Cour d'Assises de la Mayenne, 10 Avril 1877* )

We now give an observation, borrowed from Tardieu, of a complete Sadic murder committed by two pederasts. The observation is very detailed and conclusive on the pederasty of the two murderers, but is silent as to their morbid condition But, from the little which Tardieu says about it, it appears to us that they were two degenerates, and consequently two *innate* Sadics It would have been curious to refer to their ancestry, and to discover their original defects. Unfortunately, this is what has not been done.

**Murder committed by two pederasts on a boy three and a half years of age Monstrous violence** Young S . . , aged 3 years, the son of a wine merchant, No 8 de l'Avenue de Paris, was killed about four o'clock, on Jan. 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1866, in the plain of Saint-Denis

According to the report of the Commissary of Police of Saint-Denis, the child must first have been the victim of the brutal passions of two men, who then smashed in his head with kicks and blows with stones

A travelling bookseller, named Castex, aged 55, one of the authors of the crime, met on the road a young copper-moulder who, after inducing him to commit mutual pollutions, had enticed the child behind his parents'house. There, while one of them held the poor little fellow's

held between his legs, forcing him to the most disgusting office, the other violated him from behind and tore him in the very depths of his body Then, after biting his sexual parts in a final excess of brutality, they crushed his head by stoning and kicking him, and left him in the field lifeless, mutilated, and unrecognizable even to his father's eyes

1 The young Jean Saurel was killed by blows inflicted on his head with the utmost fury by the aid of blunt instruments with a wide surface such as a stone or the sole of a heavy boot

2 The child's cries were stifled by an attempt at strangulation, effected by the hands resting on his chest and squeezed round his neck

3 Death was preceded by violence of unexampled brutality inflicted on his sexual parts by means of the teeth, and on his anus by the intromission of a hard and voluminous body like the virile member

4 The nature the seat and the amount of violence can leave no doubt on the co-operation of two criminals at least in the murder of the child Saurel

The next day I proceeded to the autopsy of the young Saurel

He is a child three and a half years of age tall and strong His head is black, and as it were parchmented The face has holes in more than twenty places The bones are bare The forehead, the left temple and the right cheek bone are shattered, the orbit is open The chin is torn the cheeks perforated At the occiput is a wide wound covered with coagulated blood Round the neck are to be seen the deep imprints of nails The susternal region is bruised by the pressure of the hand which has left deep ecchymoses The sexual parts are soiled with dirt and blood The base of the penis on the pubes and at the commencement of the purses, is surrounded by a circular excoriation wide and

deep, showing in places the marks of teeth and nails impressed in the flesh. The anus is widely open, torn and bleeding, to a considerable height in the rectum. No sperm is to be found there. The thymus and the cellular tissue which surrounds the larynx is infiltrated with blood. The lungs are emphysematous and pale, the heart is empty. The stomach is full of food, the digestion of which has hardly begun. There is not the least trace of resistance on the hands or elsewhere.

The accused man, Castex, was visited by me immediately after the preceding operation, he is a man of 55 years of age, with a bestial expression, who stammers in an almost convulsive manner, and under an appearance of intellectual infirmity does not succeed in hiding a knowledge of the facts, a confession of which was quickly drawn from him. He bears slight marks of scratches on his left eye, nose, and ear.

The penis has nothing unusual about it. But the anus displays an unwonted width and dilatation. The nail of the great toe of the left foot is broken and bleeding.

Afterwards, on Jan. 17<sup>th</sup>, at the dépôt of the prefecture, I visited the accomplice of this abominable criminal.

He is a youth under sixteen years of age, who, in spite of his extreme youth, is already faded, and presents the appearance of the deepest degradation. He bears marks of scrofula. His person bears no marks of recent wounds or blows, but on the back of his right hand there is to be observed a large burn, with irregular and projecting edges, hardly yet cicatrised, caused by some corrosive substance, which does not appear to have run over the hand, but has rather the appearance of a caustic application made directly. Whatever may have been the circumstances under which this burn occurred, it is certain that it would have had the result of destroying every trace of wounds, sores,

excoriations or bites which might have existed on that part. We ought to add that the burn does not date further back than about a fortnight. The left hand bears some marks of burns much more superficial and remote. The complete examination to which we submitted the accused enables us to state that the virile member the exaggerated development of which contrasts with the age and height of the young T , displays that club like conformation and that habitual turgescence which belongs to masturbators. The anus has been enlarged and relaxed, it is slightly sunken but not altogether infundibuliformed.

To sum up 1. The man named Ledain bears manifest traces of passive habits of pederasty. He displays no signs of struggle or conflict.

2. The man named Ternon displays all the most marked signs of vicious and unnatural habits.

We conclude the series of greater innate Sadists with six very interesting observations which we give *in extenso*, in spite of their length.

**“ Imbecility Epilepsy Attempted Rape Death of the Victim** In the evening of the 27<sup>th</sup> of May 1888, the little boy Blaise aged 8, was playing with other children near the village of S . An unknown man came along the road, and enticed the child into the wood.

The next day the child's body was found in a ravine, with the stomach open, a wide wound on the side of the heart and two wounds with knife-stabs in the neck.

It was deemed to be a murder for the sake of pleasure, a man of the same appearance as the little boy's murderer had already, on May 21<sup>st</sup>, attempted to treat a little girl, 6 years of age, in the same fashion, and had only been prevented by chance.



It was ascertained that the corpse was found in a crouching position and having no clothing except a shirt and a flannel waistcoat; a long incision was found on the scrotum.

Suspicion of the murder attached to a farm-servant E. ., but, when the children were confronted with him, they were unable to establish his identity with the unknown man who had enticed the boy into the wood. Moreover, with the aid of his sister, E. . proved an alibi.

The *gendarmes* however were indefatigable, and succeeded in collecting fresh proofs, and E... finally made a full confession.

He had enticed the little girl into the wood, had thrown her on the ground, laid bare her genital parts and had wished to abuse them. But as she had ring-worm and cried a great deal, he had lost his desire to commit the act, and had run away.

After enticing the boy into the wood under pretext of taking birds-nests, he had a sudden desire to abuse him. But as the boy refused to undo his trowsers, he had taken them off by force, and as he cried out, he gave him two stabs with a knife in his throat. He had then made an incision on the pubes to have a semblance of the genital parts of a woman, and in order to satiate his desires through that slit. But the body having all at once grown cold, he had lost all wish to commit the act, and had hastened to wash his hands and his knife, and to take to flight.

When he saw the boy dead, he had grown afraid, and his member immediately became flaccid.

During his interrogatory, E. . played with his beads, as though the matter did not concern him. He acted through mental weakness. He cannot understand, he adds, how he could have committed such a deed. Perhaps it is in his blood, for he often grows so dizzy as to fall to the ground. His former masters assert that at times he was absent-

mind and stubborn, and that then he did not work for days and avoided men's society

His father deposes that when at school E had a difficulty in learning that he was clumsy in his work and of ten so dull that they did not dare to punish him. Then he ate nothing occasionally left the house, and remained absent for several days

At these periods he appeared to be altogether absorbed in his thoughts made singular grimaces, and uttered incoherent words

When he was a young man, he still used to make water in his bed, and when he went to school he often came home with his clothes wet or soiled. His slumber was very agitated so that no one could sleep beside him. He never had any companions, he was never cruel, bad, or immoral

The mother makes a similar deposition she adds more over that at the age of 5, for the first time he had convulsions and that he lost the power of speech for a week. About the age of 7, he had attacks of convulsions for a fortnight, and has also been dropsical. Later on he frequently had convulsive movements during his sleep, he often talked in his sleep and sometimes after nights like that his bed was found all wet

At times nothing could be made of this boy. As the mother did not know if it was because of his bad disposition or from illness she did not dare to punish him

Since his convulsive attacks at the age of seven he had so much retrograded intellectually that he could not learn even the ordinary prayers he grew moreover, very, passionate

The neighbours, the communal authorities, and the school masters confirmed the fact that E was a man of

weak mind, passionate, at times very strange, and naturally in a state of psychical exception

The result of the examination by the medico-legists is as follows E . is tall, slender, thin, his skull has a circumference of hardly 53 centimètres, it is rhombically deformed and the hinder part is abrupt

His air is unintelligent, his gaze is fixed and without expression, he holds his body negligently, leaning forward, his movements are slow and heavy. His genital parts are normally developed. E . 's whole person indicates torpor and mental debility

He has no marks of degeneracy, nor anomaly of the vegetative organs, nor any disorders with regard to motility or sensibility. E . is born of a perfectly healthy family He does not remember having had convulsions in his infancy, or having wetted his bed at night, but he states that during the last few years he has had attacks of vertigo and of " heaviness " in the head

At first he flatly denies the murder. Afterwards he confesses everything with great repentance, and reveals clearly before the *juge d'instruction* the motives of his crime. Such an idea had never occurred to him previously

E . . has for several years been addicted to onanism. He practices it as often as twice a day. He states that owing to lack of courage he has never asked a woman for coition, although, in his erotic dreams, scenes with women were always brought before his imagination Neither in his dreams nor in his waking moments, has he ever had perverse tendencies, or specially ideas of sexual perversion or Sadism Neither has the sight of the slaughter of animals caused him ever any interest. When he enticed the girl into the wood, he wished no doubt to satiate his desire ; but he could not explain how he came to attack the little boy. He must then have been beside himself The night

following the murder, he could not sleep for fear, therefore he has already twice confessed his crime in order to appease his remorse. He is only afraid of being hung. He prays that he may be spared that kind of punishment, since he acted only from weakness of mind.

He could not say why he opened the boy's stomach. He had no idea of prying into the entrails or of smelling them. He asserts that the day after his attempt on the girl and the night following the murder of the boy, he had had his attack of convulsions. At the time of his acts, he was fully conscious, but he did not reflect on what he was doing.

He suffers greatly from head ache, cannot endure heat, or thirst or alcoholic drinks, he has times when his head is completely upset. The examination of his intellectual faculties establishes the existence of an advanced degree of imbecility.

The medico-legal report (by D. Krautzner, of Gratz), shows the imbecility and the epileptic neurosis of the accused, and admits the probability that the crimes of which he retains but a summary remembrance, were committed in a state of psychical, pre epileptic exception, occasioned by neurosis. In any case, E. is a danger to the public security and he requires to be shut up, probably in perpetuity, in a lunatic asylum.

**Rape committed by an Idiot on a little girl.**  
**Death of the Victim.** On the evening of Sept. 3<sup>d</sup>, 1889, Anna, the little daughter of some labouring people aged 10, went to the village church half an hour's walk from her home and did not return. The next day, her corpse was found fifty paces away from the road, in a clump of trees, the face was turned to the ground, the

mouth was stuffed with moss, there were marks of violation on the anus

Suspicion fell on a labourer, K. , aged 17, for he had already, on Sept. 3<sup>rd</sup>, tried to entice the child into the wood as she was coming from church.

N. . was arrested, and at first denied it, but soon after made a full confession. He had killed the child by suffocation and, when she did not any longer stir, *actum sodomiticum in ano infantis perpetravit*.

During the first judicial enquiry, no one had raised the question as to what was the mental condition of this monstrous criminal, the demand of the advocate to whom the defence had been entrusted a short time before the judicial discussion, that the mental condition of the accused should be submitted to medical examination, was rejected "because there was no fact mentioned in the brief which gave grounds for inferring a cerebral disorder."

By chance, the bold advocate succeeded in bringing out the fact that the accused's grandfather and aunt on his father's side were lunatics, that his father had been since childhood a brandy-drinker, and crippled on one side. The counsel for the defence was able to confirm these facts in the course of the trial

The ascertaining of these facts however had no effect. At last the advocate induced the medico-legist to propose that N. . should be sent to an Asylum for six weeks, in order that his health might be observed

The report of the alienist doctors at the Asylum showed N. to be an idiot who could not be accounted as responsible for his actions.

He appeared indifferent, dull, apathetic, he had forgotten almost all that he had learnt at school, he never showed in his words or gestures the slightest inclination

of pity repentance, shame, hope or fear for the future His countenance was as motionless as a mask

The skull is altogether abnormal, and shaped like a ball, a proof that the brain was already diseased at the foetal period or at least in the first years of development

Upon this opinion, N was confined permanently in a Lunatic Asylum

Thanks to a bold advocate, and to his unwearied sentiment of duty, the magistracy was able, in this case, to avoid committing a judicial murder and human society was able to save its honour (Krafft-Ebing, *op cit* )

**Sadism committed on boys and girls by a moral idiot** N , aged fourteen years and five months, killed a little boy in a cruel way The enquiry elicited, besides two cases of homicide, a series of seven cases in which N cruelly tortured little boys All these children were between 7 and 10 years of age N enticed them to a deserted spot undressed them completely, attached them firmly to some object, gagged them with a handkerchief and beat them with a stick, a strap or an rope end, giving them measured blows leaving an interval of a minute between each blow, and ‘ smiling during this time, without uttering a single word He compelled one of the boys, by threatening him with death, to say the *Pater noster* twice, to swear to keep silence, and then to repeat blasphemies which he dictated to him In another case which occurred later, he pricked the boy's cheeks with a pin, played with the child's genital parts and then made pricks in this part of his body and around it, he made him lie on his stomach stamped on him, pricked and bit him on the *nates*

Another boy was bitten on the nose, and received several stabs with a knife The eighth victim was a little girl

whom he enticed into his mother's shop There he assailed her from behind, closed her mouth with one hand, while with the other he cut her throat.

The corpse was found in a corner, covered with ashes and rubbish, the head was separated from the body, the flesh detached from the bones, and the body covered with numerous wounds and incisions. The largest incision, a gaping wound, was on the inner side of the left thigh, traversing the genital parts as far as the cavity of the abdomen. Another incision extended from the iliac fosse in an oblique direction across the abdomen The clothes and linen were cut into bits and torn

The corpse of the ninth victim had the throat cut, the blood had trickled from the eyes, the heart had been pierced with numerous stabs A number of stabs had penetrated the cavity of the abdomen The scrotum was open, the testicles were cut as well as the penis.

N .. had enticed the boy in the same way as the girl, he had first cut his throat, and then inflicted the stabs with the knife

N. ., about whose antecedents there was no information, was seriously ill during the first year of his life, he was then as thin as a skeleton. In his second year, he recovered a little, except that he often complained of pains in the head and eyes, and of dizziness, he was in good health until the age of 11, when he had a "serious illness with delirium Sometimes, the head-aches seized him suddenly, in such a way that he suddenly left off his games, and was unable to return to them until after the lapse of a certain time When he was questioned at these times, he would only answer slowly and in a low voice. « Oh, my head ! my head ! »

He was an intractable child, disobedient, and refractory to all education. He showed sudden changes in his state

of mind, his desires and his ideas. At the age of three, he was one day surprised in torturing a chicken by stabbing it with a knife. He told stories with an air of perfect truth. At school he deranged the other boys, made grimaces, never ceased murmuring, was disobedient and wanting in respect to his master. He considered all correction as an injustice. Sent to a reformatory, he kept apart from the other pupils, was occupied only with his own concerns, was distrustful and hated by his comrades and had no friends. His intellectual faculties are good, it was agreed that he had a clear intelligence, perspicacity and a good memory. From the ethical point of view, however, he showed himself very defective. He does not show the slightest grief, or the least repentance for his acts. He has no consciousness of responsibility. For his mother only he has a slight affection. He attaches no importance to his crimes. He coolly weighs his chances, and says that they can not condemn him to death since he is only 14 years old, he knows that hitherto it has not been the custom to hang boys of 14 and, he adds, they will not begin to break the tradition with him. As to the motive of his actions, no explanation can be obtained from N. He declares that once after reading the stories of the cruelties which the prisoners of the Red Skins had to suffer, he enquired about these cruelties, and was induced to imitate them. He had even, for this reason, wished to run away and go to the American Indians. When he marked out a victim for himself, he always had his imagination filled with scenes and acts of cruelty.

On the morning of these days, he always woke feeling dizzy and his head heavy, and that lasted all the day.

As to physical anomalies, there is nothing but the considerable volume of the penis and testicles. The *Mons Veneris* shows a complete pilous system, all his genital parts



have the proportions and development of those of an adult man. No symptoms could be found indicating the existence of epilepsy." (Dr Mac Donald, *Clark University Mass.*)

**Murder through Sadism.** "A married man, 30 years of age at the period of his last crime, that is to say at the time of its discovery He had enticed a girl into the belfry of a church of which he was sacristan, and killed her there Before the proofs and signs, he confessed to having committed another murder, similar to the former

The two corpses had numerous wounds on the soft parts of the head, wounds caused by a blunt instrument, the bones of the skull were beaten in at many places, and there were effusions of blood under the *dura mater* and in the brain The two corpses had no wounds on the other parts of the body, the genital parts in particular were intact

On the criminal's linen, who was arrested soon after the crime, spots of sperm were found L . . . is described as being of a sympathetic exterior, he is of brown complexion, and beardless There is no information regarding his hereditary conditions, nor on his antecedents, nor on his *vita sexualis ante acta*, etc

He gives as a motive . pleasure of the most cruel and abominable shape." (Dr Mac Donald. *Clark University Mass* )

**Murder for pleasure.** "A man of middle age, born in Algeria, and asserting that he belongs to the Arab race. He served for some years in the Colonial forces, then travelled as a sailor between Algeria and Brazil, and then left for North America, led by the hope of gaining his living more easily there He was known among his friends as an idle fellow, cowardly and brutal. He has been several times

condemned for vagrancy, he is said to be a thief of the worst kind, walking about with women of the vilest class, and making common cause with them. His perverse sexual habits and his practices in that way are also known. He had on several occasions bitten and beaten the women with whom he had sexual relations. According to his description, we might identify him with that unknown individual who, during the night, frightened women in the street by putting his arms round them and kissing them, and who was known as *Jack the Kisser*.

He was tall (over 6 feet) and a little bent. His forehead low, his cheek-bones very prominent, his jaws massive, his eyes small, close together and red, his look was penetrating, he had large feet and hands like the claws of a bird of prey. His arms and hands were covered with tattoo marks, among others the portrait in colours of a woman, round which was inscribed the name "Fatima", a noteworthy fact, for, among the Arabs of the Algerian troops, the tattooing of a woman's portrait is a mark of dishonour, and the prostitutes of that country have a cross tattooed on their body. His exterior gave the impression of a being of very limited intelligence.

N was convicted of having murdered a woman of ripe age, with whom he had passed the night. The corpse had several wounds, remarkable for their length, the stomach was open, pieces of cut bowels, as well as an ovary and other parts were found scattered round the corpse. Several of the wounds had the shape of a cross, and one that of a crescent. The murderer had strangled his victim. M denies the murder, as well as any inclination for such acts. (D. Mac Donald, *Clark University, Mass.*)

**Greater Acquired Sadists.** We can here bring forward several personal observations. They refer to va-

rious cases of Sadism, through vengeance, through perversity, through jealousy, and for money or political hatred. They are entirely unpublished, and we have never come across any similar ones related in any work (medical or otherwise) published on the habits of the Annamites. These observations, in fact, have been collected in Cochin-China by ourselves directly, or communicated by credible eye-witnesses.

**Cases of Sadism relating to the Annamite Race Its Natural Cruelty.** In *Untrodden Fields* we have shewn that the Annamite race is thoroughly pederastic, let us now state that it is naturally fierce and cruel, showing that lust and cruelty are sister passions.

The atrocious penalties of the old Annamite Code were mitigated in 1812 by the Emperor Gin-long, but they would not be accepted by any civilised nation. A thing which always strikes Europeans is that a man condemned to death walks to the punishment with his arms tied and his legs merely shackled, listens to his sentence of death, kneels down and bends his head with resignation, without trying to make a movement to avoid the blow of the fatal sabre. The spectators who form the circle, look on with curiosity, but without compassion at the blood spurting out and the head falling off, as though some animal were in question and not one of their own kind.

In Europe, if the executioner were to fail to come, it would perhaps be difficult to find another man to take his place. In Cochin-China, there would be but a difficulty in making a selection, for in 186 , at each inspection, the Matas (native cavalry) practised every day a game of cutting heads, by cutting off with a single blow from a sabre, a ring in the trunk of a banana-tree, placed on the

ground like a skittle. The height of skill was to sever the ring without upsetting the trunk.

**Political Sadism during the Insurrection of 1867 in Cochin-China** After the taking of the three Southern provinces in 1867, the French Administration was hardly installed before, by the orders of the Court of Hue, the insurrection began. It was not general for with no other arms than lances of bad steel, or simple bamboos with one end hardened in the fire, the Annamites could not contend against the rapid fire of our soldiers. The insurrection was limited to the formation of bands of pirates (a name given to them because they operated on the rivers so as to escape in boats and avoid the pursuit of our colonists) composed of vagrants under guise of politics, the bands pillaged, burnt, raped, mutilated, and massacred the partisans of the French with unheard-of refinements of cruelty.

**Sadistic Cruelties** The processes adopted by these pirates were analogous to those of our *Châsseurs de l'Ouest* during the Revolution but instead of heating the feet, they burnt the genital parts of the victims, or buried a red hot iron in their vagina or anus. Complete or partial castration, as well as ablation of the breasts in the case of women, were practices frequently carried out. Death was then given by the sabre or by the rope.

It may be easily understood that a few executions of this kind were enough for a chief of a band to terrorize whole provinces.

It is true that these acts frequently recoiled on those who perpetrated them and the chief of a band became in his turn the victim of a son avenging the death of his parents.

This vengeance was Sadic, as will be seen in the following observation.

**Sadic and Pederastic Vengeance inflicted on a Pirate Chief** “The chief Quan Lan terrorized the provinces of Mytho and Vinh-Long, evading all pursuit with rare skill. He had besides invented an ingenious means of acquiring information as to how he was being pursued. He introduced young men or boys as servants into the houses of French Administrators, or as interpreters and writers to the Court, and ordered them to furnish him with all the information he required. The life of the parents of these spies, who lived in a village at a distance from the Administrative centre, answered for their fidelity. This very fact however was the cause of his ruin.

After mutilating, he murdered, for purposes of robbery, an Annamite merchant who was proceeding from Saigon to Vinh-Long, with a junk full of merchandise.

The body was thrown into the Cambodge, and received no burial, which is considered as a terrible misfortune for the family. It is a disgrace, and an ineffaceable blot upon the children. The merchant had a son, 28 years of age, a Latin interpreter who was highly appreciated by the authorities at Saigon, and who likewise spoke French with facility.

As soon as he knew of his father's death, this young man left Saigon, without announcing his departure to anybody, went to Mytho, where he obtained employment with the Administrator X .. G. , a notorious pederast, whom I shall speak of in the chapter on Pederasty. The young La (the son's *nom de guerre*) was a very handsome youth and, for an Annamite, well endowed as to his genital parts, he did not fail to please X .. G. , and soon became one of his principal favourites.

He gained in this way a certain amount of independence and, under pretence of discovering imaginary relatives, he courted and finally took to wife, a woman, in a village where he well knew that Luan Lan had a concubine and numerous partisans. He brought the woman with him to Mytho after the marriage ceremony, put her in the family way, and then sent her back into the country to stay with her parents.

Luan Lan was soon informed of the pederastic relations existing between La and his master X G a man of high courage, and having the reputation of being one of the most intelligent officers in the branch of the service in which he started and who had actively pursued Lan on several occasions, without being able to capture him.

Lan thereupon placed an embargo on La's wife and informed her through his concubine that she was on no pretext to leave her parents under penalty of seeing them perish by the most fearful tortures. He then informed La, at Mytho, that if he did not serve him as a spy he would kill his wife and the child within her.

This was precisely the result which the Saigon Annamite looked for, who played his part of spy in a marvellous manner, at first giving, by agreement with X G, excellent information, but finally laying a trap for him. I pass over the details of the wiles of the two Annamites M X G, accompanied by two boys and six rowers armed with guns the nipples of which would be stopped up so as to make them miss fire was to be taken in a pagoda on the banks of Cambodge, at a short distance from the village in which were the wives of Lan and La. It was Lan on the contrary who was surrounded in his hut by 30 Mates and four Europeans (X G, his secretary, orderly officer, and myself, all armed to the teeth) the night preceding that on which X G was to be captured, I merely mention that

Lan was rendered intoxicated by a drug mixed with his opium, a drug procured by a Chinese chemist, which enabled him to be captured without his offering any resistance.

Quan Lan was brought to Mytho, confessed, and was finally condemned to death by X. G., and the sentence declared that after the execution, which was to take place before the Pagoda, the body was to be thrown into the water, and the head exposed before the Pagoda until it was completely decomposed

La had requested as a favour from X. G., that he might himself be the executioner of Lan, and that Lan might be handed over to him the night preceding the execution, which was to take place at sunrise X. G..., who could refuse nothing to his favourite, sent on the previous day 150 native soldiers well armed to hold the village, and caused the Pagoda to be occupied about midnight by his 12 personal attendants, commanded by a Doi (sergeant) with orders to be at La's entire disposal

X. G. and myself were to arrive there at dawn in a swift junk on the falling tide I had obtained permission without any difficulty to hold an autopsy on Lan's body, in the Pagoda, where we were to pass the day.

When we reached the Pagoda, we found Lan a living corpse, his face deadly pale, unable to speak and scarcely able to stand. It was necessary to carry him to the village market-place, hardly a mile away. When he arrived at the place of execution we were obliged to give him a bowl of *sum-chum* (rice brandy) so that he might hold himself steady to some degree upon his knees, for his whole body was agitated with a convulsive shaking, while a white froth trickled from his mouth

La, the amateur executioner, lifted up the victim's chignon and marked on his neck with his saliva reddened with betel-nut, the place where he ought to strike. I had

my eyes fixed upon him his eyes shone like fire-brands his lips, parted in a sardonic grin gave him the look of a hyena When X G gave the signal, the first stroke was delivered but the head did not fall, a notch only was made in the neck It was followed by a second, and then by a third The body had fallen forwards, and the executioner with his left foot resting on the shoulders kept on chopping, hacking off the neck with small strokes with his sabre The Matas remained impassive, and so did X G After a time which appeared to me to be very long, the neck was cut through but the head remained still attached by the throat and skin La then drew out without hurrying himself, a knife from his pocket and severed the recalcitrant shred of skin as though it were a slice of ham He then took the head in his left hand, looked it straight in the face, spat upon it and abused it He then nailed it himself to a post before the gate of the Pagoda

I commenced my autopsy immediately I found to my great surprise, the trace of considerable disturbance in the genital organs The gland of the penis was enormously tumefied, of the colour of wine-lees, and bearing marks of punctures, some of which were still bleeding The skin of the scrotum and of the penis had traces of circular excoriations, which had the appearance of having been produced by a human jaw The testicles were congested and tumefied, the epididymis was swollen the scrotum had acquired an enormous size, and the skin of it was red and strained with an effusion of considerable serosity On the side of the rectum, I observed that the anus was dilated gaping, and almost wide enough to receive a child's hand The radiated folds of the anus had disappeared and in their place there was to be seen a pad formed by the sphincter having been drawn out

I forthwith caused La to come to me in order to hear



what he had to say. He answered me frankly that he would tell me all, if I would give him the liver of his victim to eat (called by the Annamites *faire le gase*), the supreme vengeance which can be inflicted on an enemy

At this price, I obtained a complete confession from La. It appeared that at the beginning of the night, Lan had drunk a Chinese aphrodisiac, the effect of which was immediate. About 10 o'clock he had been taken into X G's room, who was amused (*sic*) at this, and he with La and the twelve personal attendants had left at 11 o'clock in a junk for the Pagoda, which they reached about 2 o'clock in the morning. Lan was laid on an Annamite bed of open bamboo work flat on his belly, with his hands tied up, so as to expose his buttocks, and for the space of 4 hours was sport for the lust of the twelve attendants who had given him no respite, *uno avulso, uno deficit alter*

La had made a hole in the basket-work on a level with Lan's abdomen, and during these four hours, sitting underneath the bed, he had indulged in unbridled acts of masturbation, and in violent fellatory manœuvres upon the unfortunate man's genital parts, so that he completely exhausted him by making him ejaculate again and again, until at length blood came from the urethra. Then, he had pricked his penis and gland with a long hair-pin, and bitten his scrotum and testicles

I should not have given credit to this fact had it not taken place before my eyes, and I should never have believed that a man for vengeance sake could have indulged in such manœuvres. But what astonished me more, at that time, was X. G.'s attitude in allowing such abominable acts to be committed, and in making himself the quasi-accomplice. I bring no accusation, I merely state a fact of moral perversion

I did not come across any similar instance of monstrosity

till 20 years later, in New Caledonia among the convicts. The observation here given had for its motive the jealousy between two pederasts, one *active* and the other *passive*, and it was the "woman" who took vengeance on the "man."

**Sadism through jealousy Mutilation of the genital organ of an active Pederast by the teeth of a passive Pederast**

This observation relates to the amours of two Pederasts

I must confess that the fact did not occur before my eyes. It took place before my arrival. I was acquainted with the Archives of the Council of War, and I have had in my hands the medico legal report of the doctor who was charged with the autopsy of the uninteresting victim.

Let us state in the first instance, that the two prisoners were as fond of one another as Lafontaine's pigeons. X was a fine young fellow, aged 23, sentenced for having killed his mother by kicking her in the abdomen. The worthy fathers on the Seine had saved the life of this voluntary orphan, by giving him the benefit of extenuating circumstances. The mother had been her son's mistress, and had scenes of jealousy. In the course of a fight, this loving son had murdered his too sensitive mistress-mother.

Z was the "woman", 40 years of age, he had been condemned for theft, accompanied by an attempt at murder. It will be seen that they were a most uninteresting pair. The "woman" had gained a fair character, and was confidentially employed in an office, which allowed him to treat his sweet heart to tobacco and other delicacies as well as pocket money.

This happy existence lasted only for a time. The incon-

stant X...left his sweet-heart in the lurch, perhaps finding him too used up after long service, and took one who was younger and more complying. *Inde irae* on the part of Z.. , who made every effort to bring back the faithless one to the fold. He was not successful, and seemed reconciled to his loss. But he was waiting patiently for a favourable opportunity, and knew the Italian proverb " Vengeance is a dish which is eaten cold "

One afternoon, the two former comrades happened to form part of the same gang. Z . was gay and amiable, and cracked jokes at first with his ex-husband, at length, he gave him to understand that he knew some men who had contrived a well-laid plan of escape, and that if X.. cared to share in it, there would be room for him as well. In exchange for this, he asked him to resume their common life when they had once escaped from New Caledonia.

X. . fell into the snare, and asked for detailed information; as Z . pretended that it would be dangerous to talk about it in public, he agreed to meet him in the middle of the night in a thicket near the camp of Dombia, where the convicts enjoy a certain amount of liberty, their huts not being surrounded with a wall like the Noumea penitentiary.

What happened at the meeting which took place between these two ignoble creatures? X . was found the following day with his throat cut, his eyes and ears slashed, and his body pierced with more than twenty stabs in the abdomen. The state displayed by his genital organs was as follows. I copy the medico-legal report word for word.

" The condition of the genital organs is as follows. The teguments of the penis are exactly divided in front of the penis at the place where these teguments are continued with those of the abdomen and scrotum. This division is regular and almost circular. The penis deprived of all its

cutaneous covering has been cut a little behind the gland. This is not a clean cut like one produced by a sharp instrument. It is irregular and gnawn, and could not have given passage to a large quantity of blood.

The stump formed by the remaining portion of the urethra and of the cavernous bodies is hardly 6 centimètres in length. It displays absolutely the characteristics of a bite and tear produced by the tooth of a vicious horse, of which we possess many medical observations.

What confirms our opinion is that at the beginning of the purses, there is to be found a wide and deep circular excoriation which has almost completely severed the tumefied skin of the purses and which displays impressed upon it here and there the marks of teeth and nails.

A sanguine effusion exists under the left part of the scrotum. The testicles, and the left one especially, are greatly bruised and appear to have been the object of violent pressure with the hands, or even to have been gnawed with the teeth.

Before the Council of War the accused made answer that after a violent scene of explanation with his ex husband, the latter had tried to knock him on the head, and that he had been obliged to defend himself against him with the latter's knife which he had let fall out of his pocket.

After giving him a stab in the throat he had "seen red" and continued to strike him mechanically on the face and in different parts of the body.

He maintained that the wounds observed on the genital parts must have been inflicted by a dog which was roaming about there. After he fled and while X was in his death agony, the dog was attracted by the smell of the blood and had partly devoured the genital parts of the victim who was lying on his back with his trowsers open, consequently with his penis and scrotum projecting.

It was the fact that the upper button, which alone kept the trowsers up, was torn off as though someone had tried violently to unbutton the trowsers.

To this statement of Z .. the Public Prosecutor raised the opposite theory in his address; that Z . had proposed to X. to pollute him and to kiss his penis, and that while he was holding it in his mouth, he had suddenly bitten it and at the same time had violently squeezed his testicles in his hands.

The pain having caused X... to fall down in a fainting-fit, Z... had left the trowsers and taking X. 's knife out of his pocket, opened his stomach and cut his throat.

Then, while his victim was in his death agony, he had buried his penis in his anus, taking an abominable as well as filthy pleasure in his spasms of agony, while, perhaps, at the same time he finished devouring the still palpitating parts of his miserable victim.

For the honour of humanity, I should like have to believed the story about the dog, but the Public Prosecutor's version appeared to me to be the only true one.

We see that the divine Marquis de Sade learnt his lesson from the galleys

It is unnecessary to state that Z... was guillotined. The autopsy showed that he was a most characteristic passive pederast. He was however possessed of a male organ which was very developed in proportion to his height, particularly the penis, which, being injected previous to dissection, measured 19 centimètres in length by 5 in width. On his buttocks were found red and black tattoo marks representing a rolled up snake, the head of which reached to the entrance of the anus. The pubis was depilated and bore these words "Death to Whores".

I shall end the subject of Greater Sadism by one last

observation relating to a case of Sadism which had money for its object

**Sadic Murder of a European having Money for its Motive** L., a Government clerk in Cochin China had the bad habit of indulging in buccal coition with *congaïs* (Annamite women) He made them come to his house about 10 o'clock of an evening and placing himself in a reclining posture in a large Chinese armchair of rattan with arms by stretching out his legs on the arms he left sufficient space between his legs for a *congaï* in a squatting position to be able to operate at her ease

Just at that time, L.'s favourite was a little slender woman hardly 17 years old, who used to come regularly on certain days of the week and particularly on Saturdays These details have their importance One Saturday evening while the *congaï* was operating on her client, who was paying no attention to the unusual sounds which may have occurred, two male Annamites whom the *congaï* had hidden on the staircase entered with stealthy steps, slipped silently behind the armchair and at a signal given by the *congaï*, one of them with one stroke cut the unhappy L.'s throat, while the other placed the handkerchief which he used as a head dress over his mouth to stifle his cries The act took place about 10 o'clock, in the rue Catinat one of the best lighted streets in the town, under a verandah of the second story, almost within sight of passers-by

L. did not utter any cry, and died without making any resistance, and it was not until the next day at 8 o'clock that his corpse was found in the position in which death had surprised him

The two men were condemned to death and executed The woman was condemned only to penal servitude and

sent to the penitentiary of Poulo-Condore, where I had occasion to attend her. She related to me the scene of the murder as follows

“ M L . was in the habit of closing his eyes and breathing at the moment of his genital spasm I could see his face perfectly by the light thrown on it by a gas jet in front of the house At the beginning of my work (*sic*) I made the two Annamites come in, they went round and placed themselves behind the armchair of M L....who did not hear them walking on the brick pavement, as they had bare feet. Everything was settled between us. At the moment when M L . shut his eyes and began to feel the symptoms of pleasure, I lifted my left hand in the air. At the same moment my lover's brother held his head against the armchair, while my lover gave him a terrible cut which opened his throat *At the same time, I squeezed sharply his testicles with my two hands and bit his penis violently* M L . uttered a single groan and trembled slightly. He had no time to move or to utter a cry, for he received one after the other two terrible blows which shattered his skull. While my lover's brother held his silk handkerchief to his mouth, my lover and I took the money and jewels All three of us then went out of the house, one after the other, without being observed upon the staircase ” It is a curious detail that a woman's ear-ring found at the foot of the corpse put the police on the track of the guilty parties.

## CHAPTER XIII

### GENITAL MADNESS

#### SADISM (*CONTINUED*)

- Lesser Sadics — Different Categories — Prickers of Girls — Observations  
Pricers of Buttocks — Observations  
The Cutter of Ears — The Cutter of Skin — The Sadist Cutter of Fingers — The Sadist Pincher of Flesh  
The Flagellators — Observations on Flagellators — Symbolic Sadism  
Ideal Sadism  
Inclination to cover Women with Filth  
Man who urinated upon Women  
Stercoraires — Stercoraires in the Paris Brothels — Sadists and Sodomists  
*Mixoscopists or Pelpers* — *The Mixoscopists of Paris* — Observations by Leo Taxil Coffignon and Mace  
A Humane Aphorism — Classification of Sadists — Peepers through Holes — The Provincial and the Pastry cook — The Sauce pan Band — The Peepers of the Champs Elysées — The Magic Lantern

**Lesser Sadics** We have classed under this category the degenerates who find a charm and pleasure in wounding the victim of their desires, and in seeing her blood flow

*Observation* In this category must be classed that Captain whose history is related by Brière de Boismont This Captain compelled his mistress before he had connection with her which was very frequently to apply leeches to



her genital parts. At length the woman was attacked with anæmia and grew very weak.

We next give a series of observations taken from Krafft-Ebing and Thoinot.

**The Prickers of Girls.** *Observations* M. X., was born of a lunatic father who died of *dementia paralytica*, and of a mother with a hystero-neurasthenic constitution. He was an individual feeble in physique, of a neuropathic constitution and bearing various marks of anatomical degeneracy. When a child he already had a tendency to hypochondria and obsessions. Moreover, his state of mind passed from exaltation to depression. When he was 10 years old, the patient already felt a strange pleasure in seeing blood trickling from his fingers. This is why he used frequently to cut or prick his fingers and felt indescribable pleasure from these wounds. When he wounded himself he thus produced erections, and the same thing happened when he saw anybody else's blood, for instance when a nurse had pricked her fingers. The latter caused him feelings of peculiar pleasure. Then his *vita sexualis* awoke more and more. He took to masturbating himself without anybody leading him into it.

During the act of masturbation, images and thoughts of women bathed in blood presented themselves to his mind. It was no longer enough for him now to see his own blood flow. He was desirous of seeing young women's blood flow, especially of those who were sympathetic to him. Often he could scarcely restrain his longing to wound two of his cousins and a maid-servant. But some women who of themselves were not sympathetic to him occasioned him this desire if they impressed him by a particular way of dressing, or by the jewels and coral ornaments which they wore. He was able to resist this inclination, but his imagi-

nation was always haunted by sanguinary ideas which caused him voluptuous emotions. There was an intimate correlation between the two spheres of ideas and sentiments. Other cruel fancies frequently possessed him. Thus, for instance, he imagined himself to be a tyrant ordering the people to be shot down. By an obsession of his imagination, he depicted to himself the scenes which took place if the enemy invaded a town, if they violated, tortured and carried off the virgins. In his calmer moments, the patient who was otherwise of a good character and without ethical defect, was ashamed and deeply disgusted at such cruel and voluptuous fancies. And so this work of the imagination ceased as soon as he had procured a sexual satisfaction through masturbation.

A few years were sufficient to render the patient neurasthenic. Then the blood and the sanguinary scenes evoked by his imagination, no longer sufficed to cause ejaculation. In order to free himself from his vice and from his dreams of cruelty, the patient had sexual relations with women.

Coition was impossible for him except when the patient imagined to himself that the woman was bleeding at the fingers. He could not obtain an erection without having this image present in his mind. The cruel idea of wounding had no other objective than the woman's hand. In the periods of greatest sexual excitation, the mere sight of a sympathetic woman's hand was capable of giving him the most violent erections.

Alarmed by reading a popular work upon the fatal consequences of onanism, he imposed on himself a rigorous abstinence and fell into a grave state of general neurasthenia complicated with hypochondria and *taedium vitae*. Thanks to a very complicated and active medical treatment, the patient recovered at the end of a year. For three

years past, he has been of a healthy mind, he has, as he had before, great sexual requirements, but he is very seldom haunted by his former sanguinary ideas. X .. has wholly given up masturbation. He finds satisfaction in ordinary sexual enjoyment, he has all his powers and no longer requires to have recourse to his sanguinary ideas.

Sometimes these tendencies to cruel pleasure are only produced episodically in blemished individuals and in certain exceptional determinate conditions, as the following case, reported by Tarnowsky (*op cit.*, p. 64), shews us.

“ Z. , a doctor, of a neuropathic constitution, reacting feebly against alcohol, practising normal coition under ordinary circumstances, felt, as soon as he had drunk any wine, that simple coition no longer satisfied his *libido* when augmented by drink. In this condition he was compelled, to have an ejaculation and obtain the feeling of complete satisfaction, to prick the *nates* of the *puella*, to cut them with a lancet, to see the blood and to feel how the instrument penetrated into the living flesh.

But the majority of individuals affected with this form of perversion display this peculiarity, that the woman's charms do not excite them. In the first of the cases quoted above, the imagination was obliged to have recourse to the idea of the flowing of blood for erection to be produced.

The following case refers to a man, who, in consequence of masturbation from his childhood, lost the power of erection, so that, in his case, the Sadic act took the place of coition.

**The Pricker of Girls at Posen** (communicated by Demme, *Buch der Verbrechen*) In 1829, a judicial enquiry was opened upon B .., a soldier, aged 30. At different

times and in numerous places he had wounded young girls with a knife or penknife behind, but in the region of the genital parts in preference. He gave as the motive for these outrages a sexual inclination extending to frenzy and which found no satisfaction but in the idea or act of pricking women. This inclination had possessed him for whole days. This disordered his ideas and the disorder did not cease until he had responded to his inclination by an act. At the time when he pricked them, he felt the satisfaction of having accomplished coition and this satisfaction was increased by the sight of the blood trickling down his knife. Ever since the age of 6, the sexual instinct had shewn itself in him in a violent manner. He had at first indulged in masturbation, and felt that his body and mind were weakened thereby.

Before becoming a 'pricker' of girls he had satisfied his sexual instinct by abusing young girls who had not reached the age of puberty by masturbating them and committing acts of sodomy. Gradually the idea occurred to him that he would feel a pleasure in pricking a pretty young girl in her genital parts, and in seeing her blood run along his knife.

Among his belongings were found imitations of objects referring to his religion, obscene pictures painted by himself, and representing after a strange fashion the Conception of Mary "the idea of God conceived in the womb of the Holy Virgin.

He had the reputation of being a strange and very irascible man, avoiding men, eager for women, and morose. No sign of shame or repentance was to be found in him. He was evidently an individual who had become impotent through premature sexual excesses but whom the persistence of the *libido sexualis* urged to sexual perversion.

— In the years immediately following 1860, the popu-

lation of Leipzig was terrorized by a man who was accustomed to attack young girls in the street with a poignard, and to wound them in the upper part of the arm. They succeeded at length in arresting him, and it was discovered that he was a Sadic, who had an ejaculation at the moment when he wounded the girls, and in whom the act of wounding a girl was equivalent to coition. (Wharton. *A Treatise on Mental Unsoundness*. Philadelphia. 1873.)

In the three following cases, there was also impotence, but it was perhaps of psychical origin, the dominant note of the *vita sexualis* being *ab origine* based upon the Sadist inclination and its normal elements being atrophied.

-- The girl-stabber of Augsbourg, named Bartle, a wine-merchant, already had sexual inclinations at the age of 14, but a pronounced aversion for the satisfaction of the instinct through coition, an aversion which extended to disgust with the female sex. At this time, the idea already occurred to him of inflicting wounds on girls and of procuring for himself by this means a sexual satisfaction. He gave it up however for lack of opportunity and courage

He disdained masturbation, now and again he had pollutions under the influence of erotic dreams with wounded girls

When he reached the age of 19, he for the first time inflicted a wound upon a girl. *Haec faciens sperma ejaculavit, summa libidine affectus* The impulse to such acts became stronger and stronger. He made choice only of young and pretty girls, and asked them previously if they were married or not. The ejaculation and sexual satisfaction were only produced when he saw that he had really wounded a girl. After the outrage he always felt weak and ill at ease, he also had remorse.

Up to the age of 32, he only wounded girls by cutting

their flesh but he always took care not to inflict dangerous wounds upon them From this period, and up to the age of 36, he succeeded in subduing his inclination Then he tried to procure pleasure for himself by squeezing girls by the arms or by the neck, but by this proceeding he only obtained erection and never ejaculation Then he tried to stab girls with a knife still in its sheath, but this did not produce the desired effect any more than the former At length he gave a real stab and had a complete success, for he imagined that a girl wounded in this manner would lose more blood and feel more pain than if her flesh was incised At the age of 37 he was taken in the very act and arrested At his lodgings was found a great number of poignards, stilettos and knives He declared that the mere sight of these weapons, and still more the handling of them, procured him voluptuous sensations and a keen excitation

Altogether he wounded fifty girls, if credit is to be given to his confessions

His external appearance was rather agreeable He lived in a very respectable position, but he was an eccentric individual who avoided society

The *prickers of buttocks* form a numerous variety of the *prickers of girls*

“ I owe the following interesting unpublished observation to the kindness of M Magnan

In the course of June 1896, a certain number of young girls had been wounded in the street in full day-light by an individual who, after pricking them in the region of the buttocks, hastily made his escape These singular aggressions, always identical in character, attracted the attention of the public, the press began to concern itself with this *erotomaniac*, as dangerous as he was undiscoverable At length, on July 2<sup>d</sup>, a young man, Joseph V

was arrested in the Rue Blanche at the moment when he had just stabbed a young girl aged 20 in the buttocks the medical history of this pricker of buttocks is as follows

Joseph V., aged 20, is the son of neuropathic parents and bears physical marks of degeneracy. He feels himself urged at times to stab or prick the buttocks of women who pass beside him in the street, he controls himself sometimes at the cost of a feeling of extreme discomfort, and goes away "with his body covered with a cold sweat." But sometimes also he follows the woman, with his eyes fixed on her buttocks and an open knife in his hand, and, at the idea that he is about to bury this weapon in the woman's flesh, he enters on erection. In a state of distraction and panting for breath, he then strikes. Immediately it seems to him as though "his chest were freed from an enormous weight," and ejaculation occurs.

This *obsession* first appeared in the patient when he was 15 years old. From that time a woman's buttocks became the object of his genesic appetite, in his dreams he sees naked women crouching down as though they were urinating; it seems to him as if he were about to touch their buttocks, a pollution takes place and he awakes. To the idea of woman's buttocks there is soon added the idea of striking, pinching and pricking the buttocks, and his lascivious dreams invariably represent the series of acts which V. would soon realise when awake" (Thoinot.)

"I finish my quotations, says Thoinot, regarding these unhappy perverted individuals, with two, I believe, unpublished ones which I owe to the kindness of M. l'Avocat Général Bounel.

The first refers to a *cutter of ears*, who also displayed the peculiarity of choosing only little boys for his victims, he was a *pricker of boys*

"X... was arrested in 1895 under the following condi-

tions, he took a young boy into the Bois de Vincennes under some pretext or other instigated him to mutual immodest manœuvres, and in the middle of the scene cut the lobes of both his ears, he bound up his victims wounds, brought him back to Vincennes, and left him there

The parents made a complaint, X was discovered, identified, and sentenced to five years' imprisonment, a penalty which the Court confirmed "

The enquiry shewed that this was not X's first Sadic attempt For fifteen years past, he had incurred several condemnations before various French courts for similar acts

Fifty years of age, very intelligent but *original eccentric, and disordered* (no exact medical examination has been made of the subject or of his antecedents), in all places where his wandering profession led him, he used to seek for little boys between 10 and 15 years of age — never girls— seduced them, and terminated the immodest scenes by a uniform and characteristic Sadic manœuvre This manœuvre was at first the wounding (pricking or piercing) of the lobes of the ear, for some time it has been the cutting of those parts with an instrument adapted *ad hoc*

The second refers to a pricker of girls of the same variety as those with whom we are already acquainted What distinguishes him, is the place he selects in which to wound his victim it is the breasts which he pricks

X has been for some time the object of correctional proceedings, which he has evaded by flight The Court received a complaint from a girl who said that she had suffered martyrdom from X, and the enquiry revealed the following facts X a married man and the father of a family occupying a considerable position in the business world of Paris repaired to a house of ill fame and had two girls brought to him He made them take off their



clothes, taking off likewise his own, and arming himself with a cat-o'-nine-tails, he flagellated them. Then, taking some pins, he stuck them into the skin of these unhappy girls' breasts until the blood ran. This manœuvre brought about an erection, and enabled him to perform coition with one or other of his victims. X... was condemned by default.

To end with these prickers of girls, with these individuals to whom the sight of the blood which they shed gives the sexual enjoyment. I ought to point out a very interesting phenomenon. Some of these unhappy creatures, very conscious of their anomaly, very clear about the stimulating power which a bleeding wound exercises over them, are unable to resolve to commit upon another person an action which they deem blameworthy *they commit it upon themselves*. They do not shed the blood of others, but their very own : such was the case with a patient of Krafft-Ebing. More curious still is a case quoted by Garnier. here, it was the *want of a favourable opportunity* for committing an act of Sadic cruelty which caused the patient to make a victim of himself.

Eugene L..., a labourer, was found sitting on a bench where the police-officers were astonished to observe that with one slice of a pair of scissors *he cut a large piece of skin out of his left arm*. He was taken to the police-station, from which he was despatched to the special infirmary.

This individual, who bore marks of hereditary degeneracy, had had *ever since the age of 12 or 13* an impulsion which consequently became more and more overwhelming and imperious. The sight of a young and pretty girl, with white skin and delicately made, provoked in him a genital excitation and the eager desire to *bite and eat a piece of the young person's skin*.

He had purchased a pair of strong scissors in order to

get to business more quickly, and to cut off hurriedly a wide strip of virginal skin, which he would then eat with delight

He had never found an opportunity of accomplishing the object of his obsession, and to appease his longing when it grew too strong *he turned his rage against himself*, and with one slice of his scissors cut off a piece of skin at the place where it was most fine and where it was most like the skin he wanted, and ate this bleeding flesh! " (Thoinot )

**A Sadist Pricker of Fingers** Here is an instance of a pricker of fingers

" H , 25 years of age clearly proved to be neurasthenic and hypochondriac saw one day a maid servant of his mother break a pane of glass and severely injure her hand As he was helping to stop the bleeding he could not help sucking the blood which put him into a state of violent erotic excitation extending to the *complete orgasm and ejaculation* From this moment he tried by every possible means to procure for himself the sight of the fresh blood of persons of the female sex and as far as possible to taste it He preferred the blood of younggirls, he did not recoil before any sacrifice or any expense in order to procure himself this pleasure To begin with, the maid-servant placed herself at his disposal, and allowed him, according to the young man's wishes, to *prick her finger* with a needle, and even with a lancet. But when the mother heard of it, she sent the girl away, and J H was obliged to have recourse to prostitutes and to pay them to allow him to prick their finger (Krafft Ebing )

**A Sadist Pincher of Flesh** " Another Sadist, 15 years of age, whose history is given by Gyurkowchky, the

young L. P., offspring of a family of high rank, was born of an *hysterical mother*, his uncle and his grandfather died in a lunatic Asylum, two of his brothers died at an early age of convulsions, and the young Sadic himself has attacks of epilepsy.

His family one day discovered with astonishment that this child gave money to one of his poorer companions, B., aged 14, to induce him to allow him to pinch his arms, thighs und buttocks. When B., began to cry, P... continued to strike B. with his right hand, while he masturbated himself with his left. The young P. . confessed that the ill-treatment which he inflicted on his friend of whom he was otherwise very fond caused him a peculiar pleasure. The ejaculation which he obtained through masturbation practised during these Sadic scenes, procured him infinitely more pleasure than that gained by solitary masturbation. " (Thoinot.)

**The Flagellators.** We have said that the flagellators occupy a lower rank in the scale of Sadism. The flagellated subject is most frequently a woman, and it may be imagined whether or no coition is the resultant of the sexual excitation procured by flagellation. But the Platonic flagellators, that is to say those, Thoinot says, to whom flagellation procures by itself all the sexual pleasure, may flagellate, and in fact do flagellate, little boys as well as girls.

**Observations on Flagellators.** " R., 25 years of age, a merchant, came to consult me in the spring of 1889 regarding an anomaly of his *vita sexualis*, an anomaly which made him fear a disease and misfortunes in his matrimonial life

The patient is of a nervous family, in his youth, he was

delicate, feeble and nervous, but otherwise healthy except for *morbili*. Later on, he developed physically, and became vigorous

At the age of 8, he was a witness, at school, to punishment inflicted on some boys by the master, who took their head between his knees and then flogged them on their posterior

This sight caused the patient a voluptuous emotion. Without having any idea of the danger and shame of onanism, he satisfied himself by masturbation, and from that time he masturbated himself frequently, always calling up the remembrance of the boys he had seen flogged

He continued these practices until he was 20 years of age. When he learnt what the import of onanism was, he grew alarmed, and tried to put the drag upon his inclination, but he had recourse to psychical masturbation, which he considered to be harmless and justifiable from a moral point of view. To this end, he evoked the remembrance of the children being flogged

The patient became neurasthenic, suffered from pollutions, and tried to cure himself by frequenting houses of ill-fame, but he never succeeded in having an erection. He then made efforts to acquire normal sexual sentiments by seeking the society of respectable ladies. But he soon recognized the fact that he was insensible to the charms of the fair sex

The patient is a man of normal physical constitution, intelligent and witty. He has no inclination for persons of his own sex

My medical treatment consisted in rules to combat the neurasthenia and to stop the pollutions. I forbade either psychical or manual masturbation. I made him promise to keep away from all sexual excitement, and I held out to

him a hypnotic treatment gradually to bring him back to the normal *vita sexualis*.

**Latent Sadism.**N..., a student, came to consult me professionally in December, 1890. Since his earliest youth, he has indulged in masturbation. According to his statements, he has been sexually excited by seeing his father administering a correction to his brothers, and at a later period when the school-master punished the scholars. When he witnessed these acts, he always experienced voluptuous sensations. He cannot say exactly at what date this feeling manifested itself in him for the first time; at about the age of six it had already occurred. He does not know either precisely when he began to masturbate himself, but he states distinctly that his sexual inclination was aroused at the sight of the flagellation of others, and that it was this fact which led him unconsciously to masturbate himself. The patient remembers well that on various occasions between the ages of 4 and 8, he was flogged on his posterior, but that he felt only pain from it, and never any pleasure. As he did not always have the opportunity of seeing others flogged, he represented these scenes to himself in his imagination. This excited his feelings of pleasure, and he then masturbated himself. Every time that he could, he stationed himself at school in such a way that he could be present at the correction of others. At times, he felt a wish to flog his companions himself. At the age of 12, he induced one of his companions to let him beat him. He felt great pleasure in this. But when the other took his revenge and beat him, he only felt pain.

The desire to beat others has never been very strong in him. The patient found more satisfaction in enjoying the scenes of flagellation which he called up in his imagina-

tion He has never had any other Sadic tendencies the desire of seeing blood flow, etc

Up to the age of 15, his sexual pleasure was in masturbation joined to the world of the imagination mentioned above

From this time forward he frequented dances and the society of young ladies then his former play of imagination ceased almost completely, and only aroused in a feeble way his voluptuous imaginations so that the patient has given them up He practises coition once a month, but he has continued to masturbate himself twice every night No trace of neurasthenia is discoverable in him His genital parts are normal (Krafft Ebing)

**Symbolic Sadism** We have placed symbolic Sadism in the lowest scale of Sadism It is due, according to Krafft Ebing to the fact that "if the inclination is not too powerful, or if there is still a sufficient amount of moral resistance it may happen that the Sadist inclination is satisfied by apparently puerile and insensate acts but which for the author possess a symbolic characteristic

Such would be the meaning of the two following cases

— 'A man was in the habit of going once a month at a fixed date, to visit his mistress, and to cut off with a pair of scissors the curls which fell over her forehead This occasioned him the greatest pleasure He did not require anything else of the girl' (D Pascal *Igiene dell Amore*)

— A man residing at Vienna regularly visits several prostitutes only to soap their face and to use a razor upon them as though he were shaving them *Nunquam puellas laedit, sed haec faciens valde excitatur libidine et sperma ejaculat* (1)

(1) Leo Taxil relates that in the Paris brothels there are kept at the disposal of certain clients instruments resembling cudgels but

The following case, which is unique in its kind, has unfortunately not been studied sufficiently from the scientific point of view

“ In the course of a case before the Correctional Tribunal at Vienna, the following fact was revealed. In the garden of a public restaurant, a certain Count N . . came one day and scandalised the public by his proceedings. He compelled the woman who was with him to go down on her knees before him, and worship him with folded hands. Then he ordered her to lick his boots. Then he required her, in public, to do something unheard of (*osculum ad nates* or something similar) and did not give way until the woman swore to perform the act required of her, in private.

What strikes one in this case is the perverted man's want to humiliate the woman before witnesses, and the fact that the wish to humiliate the woman holds the first rank, and that it is only an act of a symbolic nature. Besides this, in this incompletely observed case, cruel acts are also probable. ”

**Ideal Sadism.** There is a fine instance in Krafft-Ebing of *ideal Sadism*, too long to be related in its entirety, and of which we give a summary. “ The subject is complete as an hereditary degenerate. He had for progenitors, a father who died of general paralysis, and a hysterical mother. He is an individual weak in his physique, neurasthenic, and bearing numerous anatomical marks of degeneracy. As a child, he already had tendencies to hypochondria and *obsessions*, he passed in turn from depression to exaltation, etc

which, in reality, are only inflated bladders like those which clowns use in circuses. Sadists thus have the illusion that they are beating women.

His Sadic imagination, which was awakened at an early period, represents to him women bathed in blood, it depicts to him scenes which would occur if an enemy were to invade a town, if they violated tortured and carried off virgins and these evocations of a Sadic nature give him erection and ejaculation with or without the aid of masturbation

### **Inclination to cover Women with Filth**

When the lesser Sadist is not so far affected with his malady to wound women his instinct urges him nevertheless to humiliate them to treat them in a degrading way and he has a tendency to cover them with filth, and to besmear them with dirty and generally disgusting matter

Here is an instance of this which Krafft-Ebing quotes from Arndt

### **The Man who urinated upon Women A**

a medical student at Greifswald *accusatus quod iterum iterumque puellis honestis parentibus natis in publico genitalia suae bracts dependentia plane nudata quæ antea summo amiculo tecta erant, ostenderat Nonnunquam puellas fugientes secutus easque ad se attractas urina oblitit Hæ lucè clara facta sunt nunquam aliquid hæc faciens locutus est*

A is 23 years of age, strong in physique well dressed and with decent manners Skull slightly *progeneum* Affected with chronic pneumonia at the right point of the lung Emphysematous Pulse 60 in emotion, 70 to 80 beats Genital parts normal Complains of periodical troubles of digestion of constipation, of dizziness and of an excessive sexual excitation, which led him at an early period to onanism, but never to the normal satisfaction of his sexual requirements Complains also of a melancholy humour from time to time of ideas which come to tor-



ture him, as well as of perverse tendencies, the motive of which he cannot explain. Thus, for instance, he laughs upon serious occasions, sometimes has the idea of throwing his money into the water, and of running under a torrential rain.

The accused man's father is of a nervous temperament, and his mother is subject to nervous headaches. A brother suffered from epileptic crises.

This inclination also manifests itself in the paradoxical sexual instinct which awakens at the age of senility and which often reveals itself in a perverse fashion.

Thus Tarnowsky relates the following case.

I knew a patient who laid down with a woman in evening dress cut very low, on a low divan, in a brilliantly lighted room. *Ipse apud janum alius cubiculi constitit adspiciendo aliquantulum feminam, excitatus in eam insiluit excrementa in sinus ejus deposuit. Hæc faciens ejaculationem quandam sentire confessus est.*

A Viennese journalist communicated to me the fact that some men, by paying exorbitant prices, induced prostitutes to allow, *ut illi viri in ora earum spuerent, et fæces et urinas in ora explerent.*

In this category may also be included the following case related by Dr Pascal (*Igiene dell' Amore*).

A man had a mistress. His intercourse with her was confined to the following acts: she had to allow him to blacken her hands with coal or with soot from a candle, then she had to place herself before a looking-glass, so that he could see her dirty hands in the glass. During his conversation with his mistress which was often rather prolonged, he kept on looking at the image of her dirty hands in the glass, and then he took leave of her with a very satisfied air.

Very remarkable also from this point of view is the following case communicated to me by a doctor. An officer was known in a brothel at K — only by the nick name of “oil”. The oil procured erections and ejaculations for him — provided that he made the *puellam publicam nudam* get into a bucket full of oil and that he covered her body with the oil.

Let us finish our treatise on greater and lesser Sadies by relating the two stories attributed to the Marquis de Sade, whose name is as well known as that of Blue beard, but who happily never put his theories into practise in such a complete manner.

**The Marquis de Sade's Cantharides Sweetmeats** ‘The *Mémoires du Temps* thus relates the story of a supper which he gave at this period.

“M de Sade gave a ball to which he had invited a large company — a splendid supper was served at midnight. Now, the Marquis had mingled among the dessert a profusion of chocolate lozenges flavoured with vanilla, which were found delicious and of which everybody partook. All at once, the guests found themselves burning with immodest ardour — the cavaliers openly attacked the ladies. The cantharides, the essence of which was circulating in these unfortunate people's veins — permitted them neither modesty nor restraint in their imperious pleasures, excess is carried to the most fatal extremity, blood flows upon the floor and the women only smile at this horrible result of their uterine fury. Foreseeing the outcry which this scene comparable to the orgies of Nero, would occasion when the delirium ceased M de Sade fled away before dawn, with his sister in law who was still bleeding from his brutal embraces. Several ladies of title died from the results of this night of disgusting horror.

**The Marquis de Sade as a Pricker of the Body** Brière de Boismont relates in his turn, in the *Gazette Médicale de Paris*, the fact which, added to his cantharides supper, led to a fresh arrest of the Marquis.

“ Several persons, as they passed along a retired street in Paris, heard feeble groans issuing from a room situated on the ground floor. They drew near, and, after walking round the house, found a small door which yielded to their efforts. They went through several apartments and reached a room at the back, there, on a large table which occupied the middle of the room, was stretched a young woman, entirely naked, as white as wax, and hardly able to make herself heard, her limbs and body were tied with ropes, the blood was flowing from two incisions made on her arms, her breasts were slightly gashed and allowed the same liquid to escape, and lastly, her genital parts, which also were cut, were bathed in blood. When the first aid had been lavished upon her, she told her liberators that she had been enticed into the house by the famous Marquis de Sade, when supper was over, he had had her seized by his attendants, her clothes were taken off, and she was laid upon the table and bound to it. By his orders, a man had opened her veins with a lancet and made a great number of incisions upon her body. Everybody then had immediately retired, and the Marquis had undressed himself and indulged in his usual lewd proceeding upon her. His intention, he said, was not to hurt her; but as she did not cease to cry out, and a noise was heard in the neighbourhood of the house, the Marquis rose abruptly, and disappeared with his attendants. ”

**Stercoraries** Stercoraries are very common; in this mania for covering a woman with the filth of human excrement there is a natural transition between lesser Sadism

and the depravity following on debauchery when an old debauchee becomes impotent he then, in order to excite himself, indulges in all kinds of disgusting acts, and ends by practising labial pollution not only on the woman's vulva but also on her anus

We may nevertheless, I think, distinguish the lesser Sadist stercorary from the mere depraved stercorary. The former is active, urinates in the mouth or deposits his excrement on the breasts of a woman; the latter does the reverse. Here is an observation which came under our own notice.

M. A., a merchant at Saigon, who only made use of Congais for them to pollute him labially, went into an Italian brothel at Alexandria, as he was returning to France with me. The woman with whom he retired for his venereal sport, came downstairs in a state of astonishment, saying that the French gentleman had made her lie upon him the reverse way, had kissed *il cuzzo*, and had compelled her during this operation to put into his mouth *una merda (sic)*, which he had swallowed; and that, at the moment when he made this curious repast, he had ejaculated abundantly.

We must suppose that this young woman was new to her trade.

If this young Italian, who had a scandalized air at seeing a well-dressed *signor* indulging in such abominations, had been in service in the brothels of Paris, her astonishment would have ceased. She would have seen many others.

### **Stercoraries in the Brothels of Paris**

Among the ridiculous practices must be mentioned that of clients placing a burning omelette on the stomach or in the fall of the back. We shrug our shoulders, this strange caprice excites our laughter, and not our indignation.

Our pity is also bestowed on those individuals whose supreme happiness it is to have excrement deposited in their mouth by the prostitute who feels inclined to do so. This kind of filthy depravity is much more common than is imagined. This aberration of the genesic sense approaches picacism; it is a pathological case. Persons afflicted with such a perversion of the pleasure may be classed with the chlorotics who greedily devour coal, plaster, ashes, earth, lice, hairs, mice, spiders, flies, dung. It is known that Domitian excited himself to coition by swallowing insects, particularly flies. Chancellor Bacon used to eat roses previously, and Lalande, the great astronomer, spiders. Dr Paul Moreau of Tours says that it is not uncommon in the hospitals to see men and women who love to devour the scabs taken off persons suffering from small-pox. But, again, ordinary chlorotics are placed under treatment; why then, on the other hand, render it easy for the chlorotics of debauchery to obtain the means of indulging in their ignominiously perverted tastes? If an erotomaniac in a brothel asks a girl to urinate in his mouth, the girl is obliged to yield to his madman's fancy. If he desires excrement in preference to urine, the girl must evacuate. This is what official prostitution has come to!

In Medicine, the individuals who are in this particular stage of picacism are called "stercoraries". But it is a strange fact that there are pardon the expression "platonic stercoraries," so varied are the aberrations of the genesic sense. The first-class brothels keep stools of glass, very curious, at the disposal of their clients. The man, lying on his back, has the glass stool placed above his head, and the woman evacuates upon him as if there was nothing there, the maniac, as it seems, finds a pleasure in seeing the prostitute's sphincter dilate, and he does not

receive her excrement, as it is intercepted by the glass stool. And the glass stool is not unknown to the *police des mœurs*. The State authorizes all these instruments of beastliness.

Certain men to excite them, demand from the woman a prolonged fingering all over their body, this manœuvre, which produces a shock through the whole nervous system is excessively pernicious for the health of those who indulge in it. Others want the woman to pass her tongue between their toes.

Some have themselves suspended vertically by a cord provided with pads and passed under the arms. There is also a kind of trestle armchair, holding the client up in a horizontal position in such a way as to allow several women to "operate" on him at the same time.

A tolerably large number perform the venereal act between the woman's breasts when she is liberally endowed in these parts or under her armpit or even in her hair.

**Sadists and Sodomists** There are Sadists who perform the conjunction according to nature, but who, during the act, have a special instrument shaped like a penis introduced into their anus. All the official brothels are provided in profusion, with these obscene instruments, called *gaude mihi*; they serve besides, for women as well as men. These engines of lubricity are manufactured in Paris at Belleville. The *agents des mœurs* never seize them in the visits which they make to the houses of prostitution. A public scandal is necessary for the police to act rigorously. Thus not very long ago a traveller for a Paris manufactory of these instruments of lust, happened to be on the roof of an omnibus going from Ménéilmontant to the Montparnasse Station, and let fall his box of samples, which broke on the pavement and scattered its contents.

The passers-by were startled, a policeman intervened, the objects were seized, and the traveller was arrested. The latter, as well as the manufacturer, were prosecuted and condemned. The magistrate did not hesitate to do his duty. Ah! if the Public Prosecutor were to order the police to make raids on the official brothels, what strange seizures would be made in the store-rooms of these infamous abodes.

Many Sadists, instead of having recourse to the artificial penis which I have mentioned, have themselves sodomized by a *souteneur*, at the same time as they are performing the venereal act with the woman. The *souteneurs* also serve as passive subjects to certain depraved individuals, who, instead of asking the woman for labial pollution, take pleasure in performing it themselves on an individual of their own sex. The official brothels always have, at the disposal of their erotomaniac clients a *souteneur* or a bottle-washer, who, for 20 francs, undertakes this filthy part. And the *police des mœurs* knows all these things.

Some find pleasure in performing this ignoble practice (i. e. labial pollution) on the public prostitute, at the very moment when, coming from another man's arms, she passes into an adjoining closet, under the pretext of washing herself. "

**Mixoscopes or Peepers.** " There is another peculiar form of sexual perversion which is found among homo-sexual as well as hetero-sexual individuals, and which has not yet been described. I think it may be designated by the name of Mixoscopy (from *μῑξῐς*, the sexual union, and *σκοπεῖν*, to look). To commence with the hetero-sexuals, we may state that there are men who do not find their sexual satisfaction in copulation with a woman, but in the spectacle of another man copulating. There

probably exists a certain relationship between this phenomenon and that of masochism which has been so thoroughly studied by Krafft-Ebing. It is possible that the excitation may be aroused by the pain of seeing the woman possessed by a third party, and I know several cases of individuals arriving at the genital excitation only by this means.

The same phenomenon is observable among the homosexuals. (A. Moll, *les Perversions de l'instinct génital*.)

Despite the high authority which attaches to the name of the German doctor, we are by no means of his opinion. The Mixoscope has been known for a long time in the great towns by the more simple name of Peeper. The Peeper is still more common than the Stercorary. Many persons to whom it would be repugnant to deposit their excrement in a woman's mouth, would consent to see scenes of lubricity enacted in their presence, either between women or between men and women, or between women and animals for all are to be found in the Paris brothels on the sole condition of paying the price. In our opinion, peepers are very anodyne Sadists or impotent debauchees whose lost vitality can only be galvanized by the sight of another person's enjoyment.

**The Mixoscopes of Paris** The proofs of the frequency of acts of mixoscopy, since mixoscopy there is, are not wanting. We find them in all the works which treat upon Prostitution in Paris.

Refer in the first place to Leo Taxil, in his work on *Corruption fin de siècle*.

' We may include with the Sadists a class of maniacs designated by the name of peepers. These persons seek for an excitation in immodest spectacles.

They are themselves divided into three sub-divisions



1<sup>st</sup> Those who, according to the custom inaugurated by Tiberius, have various manoeuvres of saphism performed before their eyes by several women of the establishment, the women are accoupled quite naked on a large black velvet carpet.

2<sup>nd</sup> Those who, through a hole or slit made in the wall, assist, as unseen spectators, at the diversions of a client with one of the women of the house. In the first-class brothels, a special room is arranged for this purpose, on the chimney-piece is a large glass metallized with platinum by the Crawbury and Fontaine process, behind this glass the peepers take up their positions in silence; the client, who thus provides the spectacle, cannot suspect it, for the metallized glass is opaque to him, while it is transparent to those who are on the other side. Sometimes a double-action glass is placed just on a level with the bed at the back of the alcove. The client, when he notices this particular article of furniture, supposes that a luxurious fancy has designed it in order to afford him the opportunity of contemplating his own lubricity, reflected in the large mirror, he does not suspect that there are spectators there, quite close, separated from him only by the thin partition of the treacherous glass.

3<sup>rd</sup> Lastly there are those who ask for *poses plastiques* on tables turning by means of a mechanical arrangement.

The aristocratic brothels, that is to say the first-class houses of legal prostitution, have a perfect paraphernalia of instruments of lewdness; and the so-called *police des mœurs*, who always have the right of entry into these establishments, cannot pretend to be ignorant of the fact.

They are in fact so well aware of it, that Canler, the chef de la sûreté, has devoted a very interesting passage in his *Memoires* to these strange turning tables.

The passion for *poses plastiques* obliges the girl in the brothel to study the art of indecent attitudes as a science (1). As to the passion of individuals which is excited by the sight of that of others, it has a serious inconvenience that of leading to indiscretion. In this way it often leads to dramatic incidents. A rich merchant, M. Poirot Duval, relates, was in the habit of going to a house of ill fame where he was provided with what he sought for one day, he saw the husband of his only daughter in the act of committing sodomy, and the sight so affected him that he had to be carried home in an unconscious condition, and he died a few days after. This is far from being an isolated instance.

Sometimes these scenes of debauchery, present to the gaze of the peeper-clients, are enacted not by a visitor ignorant of the fact that he is visible, but by a *souteneur* payed for playing his part. In this case the clients do not take the trouble to hide themselves behind the double looking glass. The abominable comedy is played in the large drawing room and the clients are seated on divans or in arm chairs, as if they were in a theatre. But then, the obscene actors appear in costume. The great success of the year 1890, in several of the official brothels of the two first categories, consisted in a duet of this kind, including the complete execution of every act of the most crapulous lewdness, played by a *souteneur*, disguised as a Capuchin friar, and by a prostitute, disguised as a Sister of Charity.

I say it again and I cannot repeat it too frequently,

(1) In 1889 the State authorized establishments for immoral exhibitions in the middle of the Paris Exhibition for instance those of the Rue du Caire where the public were provided with the obscene spectacle of the *danse du ventre*. Aphrodisiac dances are likewise performed in the brothels but there the dancers are absolutely naked.

that those in authority are not ignorant of these infamies. All this is absolutely approved by the State I can inform those who hesitate to credit the possibility of the mimic duet which I have just mentioned, that the so-called *police des mœurs*, in their language, call the house of ill-fame a "convent," and give the familiar term of "mother-abbess" to the keeper of it.

Lastly, there are men whose erotic fancy, though it may not entail anything of a disagreeable nature to the prostitute, does not fail to give evidence of an ill-balanced mind. This fancy, like all the rest, is countenanced by the official brothel. Such individuals, for instance, hankering for the possession of a virtuous woman who has always rejected their addresses, search in the tolerated houses for a woman who bears some resemblance to the object of their desires. When they imagine that they have found one, they come to an understanding with the keeper, and, each time the gentleman calls, a comedy is played. The prostitute is dressed and has her hair done in exactly the way which the client has indicated. Every girl in the house is obliged to lend herself to this stupid and scandalous game, she must employ the expressions which have been taught her, hold herself in the way she has been shewn, oppose a resistance to the imbecile who crawls at her feet, struggle with him and appear to yield only to force.

To satisfy those clients whose taste inclines, not to any person in particular, but to a class, the brothels have a ward-robe furnished with every kind of costume. Some of them dress up a woman as a bride, as a *mignon* of the Renaissance, as a *merveilleuse* of the time of the Directory, as one of Watteau's shepherdesses, or as a Marquise of the reign of Louis XV, some desire to have the illusion that they are raping a nun. The brothels of the first and second class have a complete stock of dresses."

Let us now turn to Cossignon (*la Corruption à Paris*) Like us, he classes mixoscopism under Sadism

**Peepers through Holes** "There is an aphorism which has gone all round the world "The man who discovers a new dish does more for the happiness of mankind than he who discovers a planet " Certain men of surfeited tastes are, for this motive, perpetually in search of a new sensation These are the Sadists the descendants and faithful followers of the "divine Marquis", one of the most shameful productions of the human species

There is to be found everywhere a number of individuals enjoying the highest esteem, often occupying an elevated position whose secret manias attest their undeniable madness For a time they lead a double existence then the day comes when their sane and healthy side is no longer in a state to resist the assaults of the madness which they brew, and we are astonished to learn all at once of the shipwreck of an intelligence of high repute

These maniacs are of various kinds We may catalogue them into the surfeited, the monomaniac, and the passionate These three categories of individuals make the fortune of the houses of assignation, and of the fast women's lodgings, and enable these women to live, chevroned with vice, when their personal attractions alone would not permit them to lead a life of luxury when they are one the wane

The surfeited seek for married women and virgins in the houses of assignation, and we have seen that they find them there in reality In the lodgings of fast women, they seek the excitation of their jaded senses by the spectacle of another's passion

A worthy man, who resided in the provinces, had come to Paris for a little amusement He was told where a lady

lodged who dispensed her hospitality at a fixed price. He went there and came away absolutely enchanted with the willingness to indulge his caprices and the refinements of luxury which he met with there, and promised himself to shortly return to this harem of delight.

A few days after, he made his reappearance. He gave a friendly smile to the maid who opened the door to him, and said

You know me? I came here the other day.

All right! replied the maid who thought she remembered, and lowering her voice, she added with a mysterious air. Don't make a noise, and come this way.

At the same time, she shoved him into a dark cupboard feebly lighted by a night-light, and pointed with her finger to a small picture hanging on the wall. Our provincial friend was considerably surprised at this reception. Supposing however that all the rooms were occupied, he determined to wait until his turn came. On turning his eyes to the little picture, he noticed that it represented a pornographic subject which he had a difficulty in distinguishing in the dim light. He tried to take it down in order to examine it by the light of the night-light, but what was his stupefaction to find in the wall at the place hidden by the picture a small round hole, through which filtered a ray of light.

It was evidently this hole which the maid, taking him for one of the frequenters of the dark room, had pointed out to him. He applied his eye to the wall, and his indignation knew no bounds when he saw represented for his benefit, the comedy in which he had previously been one of the actors under the eyes of another.

This story was noised abroad, and came to the knowledge of the Prefecture of Police. It was not known exactly in what gay woman's lodgings the matter had occurred,

but a warrant was issued to search the lodgings and to have all the *peep-holes* stopped up. The warrant was put in force, but the peep-holes still exist, for they were hidden for the greater part with such skill, that the lynx-eyed officers did not succeed in discovering them.

They contrived however to stop up several of them, in consequence of a scandal, the hero of which was a young pastry-cook.

This youth certainly thought no harm, as he climbed the staircase of a house in the Quartier du Palais Royal where he was leaving some goods, going up with his basket on his head.

All at once, he saw a servant maid rush up to him, she seized him by the arm and said volubly

— My dear, my mistress has seen you, she knows you, she's awfully in love with you. Come she wants to see you.

The little pastry cook set like Hercules between the path of duty and that of love, did not feel a moment's hesitation. He let himself be carried off by the maid-servant, who quickly relieved him of his basket, and pushed him into the arms of her mistress.

He too, when he went away to bear his derelict *vol au-vent* to its destination, swore to return again.

But when he came back, the door was shut in his face. Then he fell into a passion, cried and stormed, and disturbed the whole house to such an extent that a policeman, attracted by the noise, wanted to know the cause of the uproar.

What was the reason of the sudden change in the woman's amorous dispositions? Simply that she no longer had need of the youthful pastrycook, who on the first day had been an unconscious actor in an erotic comedy. She had, in fact, received a visit from a *peeper*, a very gene-

rous client, but in order to provide him with the spectacle which he enjoyed, at that particular moment the woman required a male actor. She had waited for a client to arrive, and made signals from the window to passers-by in vain, she was afraid at length that the peeper would become impatient, and put off the satisfaction of his solitary pleasure to another day.

As a last resource, she told her maid to go down into the street and bring her anybody she could, *the concierge* at a pinch. It was on the staircase itself that the maid had caught sight of the young pastrycook, and selected him as suitable for the purpose.

All the stories about peepers are not so comical as those which I have just related. There are some quite as tragic as that of the father-in-law, who fell down struck with apoplexy on seeing his daughter's husband indulging in an act of sodomy.

Among the surfeited individuals and the peepers, little associations are sometimes formed, which select a woman's lodgings for their meeting-place, and as the theatre of their crapulous orgies, and recognize one another by conventional signs in their dress. Thus, those affiliated to the *saucepan band* recognize one another by wearing a miniature of this culinary utensil, worn either as a microscopical trinket on the watch-chain, or as a pin in the cravat, or as a sleeve-link.

What takes place at these meetings of erotomaniacs? Everything of which the most dissolute imagination can dream, for which hypnotism itself is placed under contribution. Among them are reckoned special *artistes* who give private lessons for these reunions—men who magnetize, and women who are magnetized. Two or three hermaphrodites are continually going to and fro between Lon-

don, Berlin Vienna, Brussels and Paris in response to the requests which are made to them

A variety of peepers whom we cannot omit to point out is that of the Champs Élysées, which concerns itself with women of the lowest class. The peepers sit round the tables of those little cafés hidden under the trees of the Champs Élysées. Up to ten o'clock at night nothing unusual takes place. The burning ends of cigars penetrating the darkness alone give evidence from a distance that men are sitting there and drinking late. Besides the neighbouring bushes form a sufficiently thick screen. The woman arrives followed by a sweet-heart or by a *souteneur*. She indulges in the act under the eyes of these strange spectators, after which she goes the round of the honourable company to collect a few bits of silver.

These places were repeatedly watched by the municipal police in order to stop this scandalous proceeding which occurs again each summer. While the watch is kept, everything is in order. As soon as it is withdrawn, the pornographic meetings are resumed. To catch the offenders in the act is almost impossible. (Coffignon)

This quotation from Coffignon is true. The author has not exaggerated anything, any more than Taxil. In support of their statements we give the opinion of Macé, formerly *Chief of the Police de Sécurité of Paris*.

**The Magic Lantern** 'The surfeited debauchees repair to houses of meeting where they are shown the magic lantern—that is to say a procession of groups of individuals indulging in obscene acts. Many of them bring their mistresses with them, as they would to the play. These exhibitions commence at four o'clock in the afternoon, or at nine o'clock in the evening. The cost of the light doubles the price of the evening shows. The debauchees



view what is going on in the next room through holes called peep-holes. A number of women have these holes at their houses, but they do not consent to give these lewd representations except to discreet amateurs. As these women do their business together, and at one another's homes, the result is that by paying the price demanded, it is easy for one to find *academies* ready to indulge, by order, in all the refinements of depravity. But it must not be supposed that the persons thus seen are unaware that they are being examined, this would be a serious error, for everything is foreseen and arranged beforehand, the subjects exhibited form a troop, and a veritable comedy is played between souteneurs and whores. Often, to give a greater amount of attractiveness to their meetings, proxenets receive pederasts, who operate according to their anti-natural tastes " (Macé, *Gibier de Saint-Lazare* Paris. Charpentier, 1888 )

We could also quote Louis Fiaux, who devotes several pages to the question of mixoscopical spectacles, but the preceding quotations will be sufficient for the reader's edification.

## CHAPTER XIV

### GENITAL MADNESS

#### SADISM (COMPLETION)

##### Sadism in the Woman

Causes of the Rarity of Sadism in the Woman — Observations of different Cases of Feminine Sadism — Sadism of Catherine de Medicis — Queen Catherine and the Shoemaker's big Penis

Sadism of Ta K'i Mistress of the Chinese Emperor Cheon Sin — Sadism of a Gay Woman before the Guillotine

Sadic Acts upon Animals — Identity of Bestial Sadism with Human Sadism — Various Observations of Sadic acts upon Animals

Observations upon a Case of Bestial Sadism coexistent with Human Sadism and Pederasty

**Sadism in the Woman** We have stated, in a preceding Chapter, that Sadism like Exhibitionism and Fetishism is almost exclusively the appanage of man. The result is that the known cases of Sadism among women are extremely rare. Krafft Ebing explains the causes of the rarity of Sadism in woman as follows

**Causes of the Rarity of Sadism in the Woman** "It is easy to be explained how it is that Sadism a common perversion in man, as we have verified, is much rarer in woman. In the first place Sadism, one of the constitutive elements of which is precisely the subjugation of the other sex, is, in reality only a patho-

logical accentuation of the virility of the sexual character; and next, the powerful obstacles which stand in the way of the manifestation of this monstrous inclination are still more difficult to overcome for the woman than for the man.

However, there are also cases of Sadism in the woman, which can only be explained by the first constitutive element of this inclination and by the general over-excitement of the motive power

Hitherto only two cases have been scientifically observed."

**Case of Feminine Sadism.** "A married man came to see me, and showed me a number of cicatrices of wounds on his arms. He explained to me the origin of these cicatrices as follows. Every time that he wished to have intercourse with his young wife, who is a little nervous, he is obliged in the first instance to cut himself on the arm. She then sucks the blood from the wound, upon which a keen sexual excitation is produced in her

This case recalls the legend so frequently met with of the vampire, the origin of which may be referred to Sadic facts (1).

"In a second case of feminine Sadism, which has been communicated to me by Dr Moll of Berlin, there are, besides the perverse tendency of the instinct, insensible to the normal proceedings of the sexual life, as it frequently happens, traces of Masochism".

(1) This legend is particularly rife in the Balkan peninsula. Among the modern Greeks, it goes back to the Lamiae, the women who sucked blood, of ancient mythology. Goethe has treated of this subject in the *Fiancée de Corinth*. The verses which refer to vampirism "They suck the blood of thy heart, etc." cannot be perfectly understood without the study and comparison of ancient writings.

M<sup>me</sup> H aged 26 was born of a family in which there have never been any complaints of the nerves or psychical troubles. On the other hand, the patient shows symptoms of hysteria and neurasthenia. Although she is married and the mother of a child, M<sup>me</sup> H has never had any desire to perform coition. Brought up as a young girl in the severest principles, she remained, until her marriage, in artless ignorance of sexual matters. Since the age of 15, she had her monthlies regularly. Not only does coition afford her no pleasure, but it is a disagreeable act for her. Her aversion for coition has become more and more accentuated. The patient cannot imagine how it is possible to consider such an act as the supreme happiness of love, a sentiment which, in her opinion is of too elevated a nature to be coupled with the sexual instinct. It must be called to mind in this connection, that the patient loves her husband sincerely. She has much pleasure in kissing him, a pleasure on the nature of which she could not give any precise indication. But she could not understand that the genital parts could play any part in love. M<sup>me</sup> H is in other respects a very sensible woman, gifted with a feminine character.

*Si oscula dat conjugi magnam voluptatem percipit in mordendo eum gratissimum ei esset conjugem mordere eo modo ut sanguis fluat. Contenta esset si loco coitus morderetur a conjuge ipsaeque eum mordere liceret. Tamen eam pæniteret, si morsu magnam dolorem faceret.* ' (Dr Moll)

Krafft-Ebing rightly adds. We come across in history instances of women some of them illustrious, whose desire to rule, cruelty and voluptuousness lead us to surmise the existence of a Sadist perversion in these Messalinas. We must include in the category of these women, Messalina Valeria herself, Catherine de Medicis who instigated the Massacre of St Bartholomew, and whose greatest pleasure

was to have the Ladies of her Court flogged in her presence. ”

**Sadism of Catherine de Medicis.** We take the following anecdote from Brantôme. The great Lady of whom he speaks, would be, according to the commentators, Catherine de Medicis.

“ I have heard tell of a great and noble Lady, aye! very great, who, was notsatisfied with natural lasciviousness (for she was a great whore, and had been married and was a widow, moreover she was very fair), but to provoke and excite herself more, she had her maids and ladies stripped, they that were fairest, and it delighted her much to see them, and then she used to beat them with the flat of her hand on the buttocks with loud smacks, and the maids who had done aught amiss with stout twigs, and then it pleased her to see them writhe and make twists and movements with their body and buttocks, which, according to the blows which they received, were shewn in very strange and pleasant fashion

Sometimes, without stripping them, she made them tuck up their dress (for then they used not to wear drawers) and smacked and flogged them on their buttocks, according to the subject which they gave her, either to make them laugh or to make them weep, and by these sights and contemplations, so well did she sharpen her appetites, that afterwards she would full often dally with some strong and stalwart gentleman. ” (Brantôme )

**Queen Catherine and the Shoemaker's Big Penis.** “ Lord! how strange are women's fancies! It is said that once having seen from the window of her Castle, which looked on the street, a tall shoemaker, strangely proportioned, pissing against the wall of the said

Chateau, she felt a desire for this fine and large proportion, and for fear of spoiling her fruit for her desire, she bade him through one of her pages to come and find her in a secret alley of her park, where she had gone in secret and there she prostituted herself to him in such wise that she became big with child thereby To such end was the sight for this Lady

And moreover I have heard tell that besides the ordinary women and maids who belonged to her suite, the strangers who came to see her every two or three days, or every time that they came she accustomed them also to this game, having shewn the way first to her own women she went first and they followed, so much that some of them were astonished at this game and others not In truth, that was a pleasant exercise (Brantome )

**Another instance of Sadism in a Lady of the Court** " I have heard tell of a virtuous Lady who when she was a girl, her mother used to whip her twice every day not because she had done amiss but because she thought that she took pleasure in seeing her twisting her buttocks and her body, to give her an appetite elsewhere and the nearer she drew to the age of fourteen the more eager was her mother to whip her and the greater her delight in beholding her (Brantome, *Vie des Dames Galantes* )

**Sadism of Ta-Ki Mistress of the Chinese Emperor Cheon Sin** Queen Catherine de Medicis was, as a Sadist but tame beside the fair Ta Ki, mistress of the Chinese Emperor Cheon Sin, who reigned over the Celestial Empire in the year 1122 B C ,or more than 3000 years ago

" The Emperor Cheon Sin continued his dissolute life

in spite of the most threatening omens. The people were ground down in order to provide for the wild extravagances of Cheon-Sin and his mistress, Ta-Ki, for whom he took a fancy to construct a marble tower called Lon Tai (Parc des Cerfs), the gates of which, P. Mailla says, were of jasper. The interior, magnificently decorated, was the *third of a league* in width, by two hundred metres in height, a monument which took ten years to erect, and which he enriched with an infinite number of precious things. When it was completed, Ta-Ki had such a great quantity of torches lighted, that their light was equal to that of day. She shut herself up in this magnificent palace for six whole months without going out, occupied only in varying her pleasures, and in exhausting every kind of libertinism; she brought together young people of both sexes, made them strip themselves of their clothes and excited them herself to the very utmost limits of debauchery.

The Palace, where no one ever dared to enter, under penalty of death, without an express order, was opened to everybody indiscriminately, with full liberty to commit every kind of crime. Immoral and immodest people repaired thither both by day and by night, and after gorging themselves with the food and wine which Ta-Ki ordered to be served with extreme profusion, abandoned themselves to every act which the most abominable sensuality could inspire, murders were frequent there, at length all the vices were gathered together in the palace, and reigned there with unbridled licence." (*Chine*, by M. G. Pauthier )

To explain the rarity of Sadism in the woman, Thoinot enunciates the following opinion.

" If we knew better how to detect the perversions of the genital instinct which are so difficult to diagnose in the

woman, except nymphomania and sometimes inversion, it is probable that the rarity of Sadism in the woman would be much less striking

I will quote an observation which gives considerable value to Thoinot's opinion

**Sadism of a Gay Woman before the Guillotine** I have the following fact from one of my friends who was formerly a planter in Cochin China, and who affirmed it to me in a positive manner During one of his journeys to France, where he flung about merrily and without counting them the piastres which he had made at Saigon, he made the acquaintance of a lady of easy virtue pretty, very lascivious, a sodomist and hystero-epileptic into the bargain A celebrated murderer, Campi was to be executed Yielding to the urgent requests of his mistress the planter K had hired at a fabulous price a window in a house overlooking the Place de la Roquette, near enough to the spot where the guillotine was to be erected

Having learnt the exact date of the execution he had betaken himself to the room after a good supper at which they had eaten and, above all, drunk well A short time before the time fixed for the execution which was to take place on a fine summer's morning the woman had made love to K polluting and caressing him in different ways, without however letting him reach ejaculation When the gate of La Roquette opened the hysterical woman making her lover sit down on a chair by the side of the window, said to him "We will do it while they are cutting the fellow's head off It will be fine! And seating herself astride across the man, she wanted to introduce his virile member into her vagina But K, sobered by the shock which this monstrous proposal caused him, lost his vigour Still sitting across him, and squeezing his genital parts



violently with one hand, she masturbated herself with frenzy with the other. At the moment when the head fell under the blow from the knife, the woman dropped into the arms of her stupefied lover, a prey to a very serious hysterical crisis. This woman therefore had Sadism combined with hysteria. It is to be regretted that I could not see her, observe her hereditary blemishes, and trace back her ancestry.

**Sadic acts committed upon Animals.** Sadism towards animals is identical with that which has man for its object

“ Substitute (says Thoinot, in the definition of Sadism), the words *to an animal* for the words *to a human being*, and you will have the definition of Sadism towards animals

In reality, Sadism is *one*, it is the sexual enjoyment found in suffering inflicted or seen inflicted on a *living creature*, and it is merely for convenience of description that I have separated the act committed upon man from the act committed upon an animal. ”

There is a deep and intimate relation which unites the two varieties of Sadism. The Sadist commences with the animal, which he has more easily at his disposal, and his next step is with the man, when he finds the opportunity for it. If he does not go on to the latter, it is fear which restrains him, and this fear is often stronger than the passion. This is what Krafft-Ebing also says

“ In many cases, Sadic and perverted men who shrink from a crime committed upon men, or who, generally speaking, are only desirous of seeing some living creature or other suffer, have recourse to the torture of animals, or to the spectacle of an animal dying, to excite or augment their pleasure ”

The number of Sadists who have missed their aim (if

we may use the expression) is greater than is supposed, particularly among nations which are naturally cruel I quote two instances of this further on

**Identity of Bestial Sadism with Human Sadism** The bestial Sadist is identical with the human Sadist. Like the latter he is developed on a basis of hereditary degeneracy usually congenital, which breaks forth at an early age and displays itself with clear characteristics of impulsion obsession "The one (bestial Sadists) are *passive* or *ideal*. They find the Sadic pleasure either in seeing accidentally or of set purpose, animals being tortured or killed, or in evoking scenes of torture or massacre of which animals are the object. The other are active sadists, they torture the animal themselves and love to shed its blood.

And in the same way as the active Sadists whose cruelty is applied to man each one of them have their own Sadic act which they prefer — criminal mischievous or merely symbolic — so we see in animal Sadism that each subject *has his speciality* his cruelty aims in preference at such and such a kind of animal and affects in preference such and such a mode of operation. It is thus that one Sadic only kills and tortures winged animals, and certain winged animals in particular, another only kills rabbits etc. It is to be remarked besides that, in practice the field for the operations of animal Sadism is rather limited and that the inhabitants of the poultry-yard together with dogs and cats, are almost the only objects at which the cruelty of these perverted individuals can aim. But it is no less true that in this limited field each Sadic usually makes his choice.

The *relations* of the animal Sadic act with the sexual enjoyment are already known to you by the description

which we have given of these relations in Sadism with regard to the human being Sometimes the Sadic act precedes, accompanies or follows a normal act of intercourse, of which it is thus the necessary preparatory or adjuvant excitation. Sometimes they are *equivalent to coition* the Sadic is impotent ” (Thoinot, *Attentats aux Mœurs* )

**Observations on Sadic acts.** I give first of all a personal observation

During my youth, in the little school where I was educated, it was the custom to cut the ducks’ necks in the school courtyard, into which the kitchen opened.

One of my companions, a young rascal aged 13, who masturbated himself and masturbated the others as well, was accustomed to assist at the execution of the ducks, and while the animal in its death agony was making leaps and bounds, this vicious youth, with fixed and gleaming eyes, would pollute himself through his trowser pocket, which had a hole made through it for this purpose He confessed to me that the sight of the cook taking her knife to decapitate the duck gave him an immediate erection.

He was equally addicted to bestiality and pederasty, and was one of the three scapegraces who had sexual relations with the bitch Soumise.

The following observations are taken from Krafft-Ebing

“ The case reported by Hofman in his *Cours de Médecine légale* is very characteristic.

According to the depositions of several prostitutes before the Court at Vienna, there was a man in the Austrian capital who, before he performed the sexual act, was in the habit of exciting himself by torturing and killing fowls, pigeons, and other birds This habit had gained for him

among the prostitutes the nickname of " the fowl gentleman " (Hendlherr )

An observation of Lombroso is very valuable to explain these facts. He observed two men who, every time they killed fowls or pigeons, had an ejaculation

In his *Uomo delinquente*, p. 204 the same author relates that a well-known poet was always very excited sexually whenever he saw a calf cut up which had just been killed or when he saw raw meat

According to Mantegazza, the Chinese degenerates are in the habit of indulging in a horrible sport, which consists in committing sodomy on ducks, and cutting off their head with a sabret, *empore ejaculations* (1)

Mantegazza (*Fisiologia del piacere*, 5<sup>th</sup> Ed pp 394-395) reports that "a man who had seen the neck of a cock cut off, had from that moment a passion for groping in the warm and bleeding entrails of a cock when it was killed, because by so doing he felt a sensation of pleasure "

I shall end the part which treats of Sadism by an observation which well shows the intimate connection of bestial Sadism with human Sadism

**Observation on a case of Bestial Sadism coexisting with Human Sadism and Pederasty** P. a Martinique Mulatto, a very intelligent man but profoundly immoral first served at Senegal in the Marine Infantry as Corporal. There, a Senegalese *tirailleur* had made a complaint about him, that he had entered the former's hut seized a dog which happened to be there, tied up its jaws and performed an act of anal coition upon the animal, cutting off its penis at the moment when his own penis ejaculated. The only witness of the act was a little negress, aged 10, whose deposition was not taken in consequence. However, Corporal F. paid the *tirailleur*

for the dog, and the matter was arranged, thanks to the influential protection of one of F . 's fellow-countrymen, who occupied a high situation in the Colony.

In the enquiry which was held, it was however shewn that one day F ., having found a dog in the street coupled to a bitch after coition, had cut off the unfortunate animal's penis with a blow with his sword-bayonet. On his return to France the man was made Sergeant, for he had *to his credit* deeds of bravery which he had displayed in the Soudan

He had been the first to enter a fortified village under a very hail of shot, taking his section along with him, the head of the section, the adjutant, and the sergeant, having been killed.

When the village was captured, F . was seized with a fit of wild fury, killing and stabbing with his bayonet, men, women, and children whom he happened to encounter.

When he returned to France, he asked for and obtained leave to go to Tonkin with his rank of Sergeant, to assist in the formation of the battalions of Tonkinese *tirailleurs*, and served there for several consecutive years. He was named in the Order of the Day and obtained a medal for his conduct in the defence of Tuyen-Quang, where his company of *Tirailleurs* was stationed.

F. was then sent, after the pretended peace with the Chinese, to a post on the frontier, where he often had the chance of a brush with the Chinese Regulars, disguised as pirates, the latter used to invade the French territory in bands, pillaging and stealing women and children in particular, whom they sold in China. On every occasion that a Tonkinese *Tirailleur* fell into the hands of a band of Chinese, they amused themselves by satisfying their perverted passion upon him, and then killed him.

F. , with the intention of avenging the death of his

men, inflicted a singular kind of pederastic vengeance upon the Chinese who had the ill fortune to fall into his hands. He had the Chinaman's head tied to a tree with his face resting right against the bark, his arms encircling the trunk, and his hands tied together by a rope which was also wound round the trunk.

He compelled the patient, stripped naked, to stoop down, after tying round his neck in the form of a running knot, the long pigtail which is the distinctive sign and appanage of every son of the Celestial Empire.

Then he masturbated the prisoner violently until he was in erection. Then he drew the pig tail tight, and just at the moment when the Chinaman was nearly strangled and had a rattling in his throat, he copulated with him anally, squeezing all the time his victim's genital parts with one of his hands.

Did he sometimes go further and cut his victim's throat and testicles? This is what M. A., the Commander of the post where F. was quartered, believes, but is unable to affirm. F. had inspired a profound terror in his subordinates, all of whom he had pederated successively. Therefore they did not speak until F. entered the hospital, where he died of dysentery.

M. A., the officer who related the story to me, had known F. in Senegal and the story about the dogs, and by a curious chance had him under his command in Tonkin. This officer, of a serious turn of mind, is incapable of having fabricated such a tale which would not be out of place in the pages of the *Justine* of the Marquis de Sade.

As regards myself I am extremely sorry that I could not have seen F. questioned him on his antecedents and investigated his hereditary blemishes and his ancestry.

## CHAPTER XV

### GENITAL MADNESS (CONTINUED) MASOCHISM

Definition of Masochism  
Symptomatology and Etiology of Masochism  
Jean-Jacques Rousseau, a Masochist  
Frequency of Masochism  
Grouping of Masochists into three distinct Categories  
A Masochists of the 1<sup>st</sup> Category — Three Observations regarding them  
B Masochists of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Category — Observations regarding this category  
C Masochists of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Category. — Observations regarding them  
Symbolic Masochism — Observations upon symbolic Masochism  
Masochism complicated with Sadism — Observations  
Latent Masochism — Filthy acts having for their object Sexual Satisfaction  
Masochism complicated with Sexual Inversion.  
Masochism in the Woman

**Definition of Masochism.** Masochism is the exact opposite of Sadism. This term was introduced by Krafft-Ebing, who was the first to make a complete study of Masochism, and has published thirty curious observations, a rich mine upon which all the authors who have written on Masochism have drawn

To like to be, in reality or in imagination, humiliated, harshly treated and even tortured by a woman, and to derive from the real or imaginary suffering which is thus

inflicted upon you a feeling of pleasure which sometimes constitutes an exciting addition to the normal enjoyment and sometimes *takes the place* of this enjoyment, to which it is completely equivalent this is masochism ' (Thoinot )

This complete definition gives us the sole clear indication of the various forms of this malady

Masochism, like Fetishism and Sadism, is *almost exclusively*, but not completely *an appanage of man* and like all other perversions of the genital sense, is developed on a basis of degeneracy, generally hereditary

**Symptomatology and Etiology of Masochism** According to Thoinot, Masochism is always heterosexual nevertheless there is an observation of a homo sexual Masochist In almost every case, however, it is to tortures inflicted by women that the Masochist submits or dreams of submitting with pleasure

Like all sexual perversions grafted upon hereditary degeneracy Masochism is *innate* in the subject and awakens with an astonishing precocity doing so either *spontaneously* or under the influence of an occasional cause In observation No 49, which enters into great detail and is a veritable memorandum drawn up by a learned Masochist for Krafft Ebing, we find this open confession " According to my experience, Masochism is in all cases congenital, and is never created by the individual I know as a positive fact that I was never flogged without my Masochist ideas manifesting themselves from my earliest youth and that I cherished similar ideas from the time when I began to think If the origin of these ideas was due to a blow which I received, I should not assuredly have lost all remembrance of it It is characteristic that these ideas were there long before the existence of the *libido* '



**Jean-Jacques Rousseau a Masochist.** The famous philosopher, Jean-Jacques Rousseau, whom we know to have been a masturbator, was also a Masochist, the awakening of whose Masochism was an *occasional* cause. He tells us himself in his *Confessions* how M<sup>lle</sup> Lambercier, who was then 30 years of age, forced it upon him, when, at the age of 8, he was residing with and apprenticed to her brother. The lady's irritation when he could not answer one of her questions promptly, her threats to flog him, made the deepest impression upon him. Having one day received corporal punishment from the hand of M<sup>lle</sup> L. he felt, besides the shame and pain, a voluptuous and sensual feeling which made him very eager to receive similar corrections again. Only the fear of hurting the lady's feelings prevented Rousseau from seeking further opportunities of experiencing this voluptuous pain. One day, in spite of himself, he brought on himself a fresh castigation from the hand of M<sup>lle</sup> L. This was the last, for M<sup>lle</sup> L. could not help noticing the strange effect which this act produced, and from that time she no longer allowed this boy, 8 years of age, to sleep in her room. Afterwards Rousseau felt a longing to be punished in the same way as M<sup>lle</sup> Lambercier had punished him, by ladies who pleased him, although he declares that he never had sexual intercourse before he became a young man.

Rousseau has written these lines which are very characteristic of his ulterior sexual life. "To be on my knees before an imperious mistress, to obey her commands, to have to ask her pardon, was the sweetest delight to me" (*Confessions*)

And his acts were in accordance with his words, for towards the end of his life, at the time when he had become famous, he remained under the domination of a

cook la Thérèse who had been his mistress for a number of years and whose despotic and atrabilious yoke he always endured

How many cases of old age masochism could be brought forward a kind of attenuated Masochism, which are explained by the domination endured by an often intelligent man, on the part of a woman who shows herself the more irritable as she is frequently stupid, and grown old and ugly!

**Frequency of Masochism** Masochism, even complete is more frequent than could be supposed We quote some information given by the author of an autobiography to Krafft Ebing

‘ I was continually preoccupied by the thought whether the strange ideas which dominated me from the sexual point of view, were met with also in other men, and, after the first information, which I acquired by chance, I have made numerous researches with a view to finding this out It is true that observations upon this question are difficult to make, and are not always sure, it being granted that it is a question of an inner processus of the sphere of representations I admit the existence of Masochism where I find perverse acts in sexual intercourse, acts which I cannot explain otherwise than by this dominant idea I believe that this anomaly is very rife

A large number of prostitutes in Berlin, Paris, Vienna, and other places have given me information upon this subject, and I have learnt in this way how numerous are my companions in misfortune I always took the precaution not to tell them stories myself, nor to ask them if such and such a thing had happened to them but I let them relate them at random according to their own personal experience

Simple flagellation is so common that a prostitute is provided with instruments for it. The clear cases of Masochism are also very common. Men affected with this perversion submit to the most refined tortures. With prostitutes who have taught their lesson, they always go through the same. Usually the man prostrates himself in a hurry, and the woman thereupon kicks him, addresses him with commands, abuse and threats to him, which he obeys by heart, then she flagellates him, beats his limbs, parts of his body, inflicts on him all kinds of injuries, pricks him with pins until the blood runs. The scene sometimes ends with coition, and often with a punishment without coition. Some prostitutes have shown on different occasions, iron chains with padlocks, which their clients have had made to be tied up by, drums which they kneel, cushions stuck with needles, which they must sit at the woman's order, and other similar objects. Sometimes a perverted man demands that the woman shall strap up his penis so as to cause pain, or prick his penis with pins, or stab him with a knife, or thrash him with a stick. Others again have been slightly scratched with the point of a knife, and the woman must at the same time threaten him with death.

In all these things, the symbolism of submission is the principal thing. The woman is habitually called "mistress" (*Herrin*), the man the "slave".

In all these comedies performed with prostitutes, which must appear to the normal man as unbecomingly, the masochist has only a meagre equivalent. He does not know if the masochist dreams can be realised in a serious *liaison*.

a consonant taste in the woman (feminine Sadism, as Sacher Masoch describes it) must be but rarely met with. The manifestation of a sexual anomaly in a woman has greater obstacles to encounter (modesty among others) than the manifestation of a perversion in the man. For my own part, I have never remarked the least step made by a woman in this direction and I have never been able to make any attempt towards the effective realization of my imaginations. When once a man has confessed to me confidentially his masochist perversion, he has asserted at the same time that he has found his ideal " (Krafft Ebing )

Another Masochist also confirms the preceding opinion

" Finally I will not lose this opportunity of confirming, through my own experience the statement that the number of Masochists in the great towns, appears to be *very considerable*. The only source of such information for there are hardly any communications *inter viros*, is in the statements of prostitutes, and as they agree together in the principal points, we may consider certain facts as proved

Thus, it is well established that every experienced prostitute is supplied with an instrument intended for flagellation (generally a small stick), but it must be remembered as regards this that some men have themselves flagellated in order to stimulate their sexual desires, and, contrary to the Masochists look upon flagellation as a means

On the other hand nearly all prostitutes are agreed in their assertions in saying that there is a certain number of men who like to play the part of slaves, that is to say, to hear themselves called so, to be trampled under foot and even to be beaten

In short the number of Masochists is larger than is supposed

I gather from a sure source, by the confessions of brothel-keepers, that often men, who appear to be intelligent and of good position, take a pleasure in allowing themselves to be familiarly addressed, insulted, and even molested by prostitutes. There are even some who go so far as to place themselves on all fours, and to come crawling in that position like a dog when they are called by the women, who shove them about, and often apply their boot to their posterior.

**Grouping of Masochists into Three distinct Categories** The sexual life of Masochists does not always display the same type. Thoinot divides them into three very distinct categories.

A Some Masochists never have any normal sexual intercourse, they feel a complete repugnance for the sexual contact of the woman, and are absolutely impotent before her.

“ Their *ideal masochist fictions*, that is to say the masochist scenes invented by their imagination with the mental spectacle of which they indulge themselves, are enough to give them erection and even ejaculation. If the orgasm is not complete through the mere fact of the masochist idea which they evoke, they find the necessary adjuvant in masturbation. For this category of Masochists, the masochist imagination is equivalent to coition.

Let us consider some examples of this category.

**A Observations relating to Masochists of the First category** We shall be content with giving three observations borrowed from Krafft-Ebing, which appear to us to be very characteristic.

Masochism M Z., a public official, 50 years of age, tall, muscular, and in good health, declares that he was

born of healthy parents, at the time of his birth however, his father was thirty years older than his mother. A sister two years older than Z, is affected with the monomania of persecution.

There is nothing strange about Z's external appearance. His frame is perfectly virile and his beard strong, but his trunk has no hair at all upon it. He says himself that he is a sentimental man who cannot refuse anything to anybody; he is however passionate and hasty, but he is sorry for his anger directly. Z declares that he has never practised onanism. From his youth, he has had nocturnal pollutions in which the sexual act has never had a part, but always the woman only. For instance, he dreamed that a woman who was sympathetic to him was leaning hard against him, or that as he was lying on the grass, his wife got on to his back as a joke. At all times, Z has had a horror of coition with a woman. This act appeared to him to be bestial. In spite of this however, he felt attracted towards his wife. He only felt at ease and in his place in the company of pretty girls and pretty women. He was gallant without being importunate.

A woman with a good figure and above all with a good foot, was able particularly when he saw her seated, to put him into the greatest excitement. He then felt a violent desire to serve as a seat for her and to be able to sustain such a splendid load. A kick or a slap in the face proceeding from her, would have given him the greatest happiness. The idea of copulating with her inspired him with horror. He felt that he wanted to place himself at her disposal. It seemed to him that women love to ride on horseback. He grew wild at the delightful idea of tiring himself under the weight of a beautiful woman so as to procure pleasure for himself. He depicted such a situation in all its meanings; he saw in his imagination the spur upon her pretty foot, her splen-

did calves and her soft round thighs Every lady with a good figure and a pretty foot strongly excited his imagination, but he never allowed her to perceive those strange sensations which appeared abnormal to himself, and he knew how to overcome them But, on the other hand, he felt no wish to strive against them, on the contrary, it would have been regrettable to him to abandon these sentiments which had become so dear to him

When he was 32 years of age, Z... happened to make the acquaintance of a woman, aged 27, who was very sympathetic to him, she was divorced from her husband and in poverty He interested himself in her, worked for her for months, and without any egotistic intention One evening she asked him for sexual satisfaction in an imperious manner, she almost offered him violence. Coition took place. Z took the woman home with him, and lived with her, practising coition with moderation, but he looked upon coition rather as a burden than as a pleasure; his erections became feeble; he was no longer able to satisfy the woman and one day she told him that she would no longer continue her connection with him, as he excited without satisfying her. Although he was deeply in love with this woman, he was unable to give up his strange fancies He therefore lived with her as a comrade, regretting exceedingly that he was unable to be of service to her in the way which he would have desired

The fear lest his proposals should be ill received, as well as a feeling of shame, prevented him from opening his mind to her. He found a compensation in his dreams. Among other things he dreamed that he was a handsome fiery steed, mounted by a beautiful woman. He felt the weight of his rider, the reins which he was obliged to obey, and the pressure of her thigh against his sides, and listened to her cheerful voice Fatigue made him drop with

sweat, the impression of the spur did the rest and provoked at times an ejaculation, in the midst of a keen sensation of pleasure

Under the obsession of dreams like these, Z overcame his fears ten years ago, and tried to reproduce an analogous scene in reality

He succeeded in finding "suitable opportunities"

He relates the matter as follows "—I knew how to arrange myself in such a way that, on a certain occasion, she sat down of her own accord on my back. Then I endeavoured to render this situation as agreeable to her as possible and I managed so well that on the next occasion it was she who said to me "Come, I want to have a ride on you." As I am tall, I rested my hands on a chair and placed my back in a horizontal position, she then got astride on me, just as a man would get on a horse. I then imitated, as far as I could, all a horse's movements and I liked her to treat me like a steed and in no other way. She could beat me, prick me, scold or caress me, and do any thing to me that she pleased. I was able to support persons weighing 60 to 80 kilogrammes for a half or three quarters of an hour. After that time, I always asked for a short rest. During this interval the intercourse between my 'sovereign' and myself was always of an inoffensive nature, and we did not even speak of what had just taken place. A quarter of an hour afterwards I was completely rested and placed myself again at the disposition of my 'sovereign'. When time and circumstances permitted, I continued these manœuvres three or four times in succession. Sometimes I thus indulged in the morning and in the afternoon of the same day. Afterwards I never felt any fatigue or any feeling of discomfort, except that I had very little appetite on those days. When possible, I preferred to have the upper part of my body bare so that I could bet



ter feel the blows of the whip. My "sovereign" was compelled to be decent. I preferred her with nice boots, pretty stockings, short drawers and tight at the knee, the upper part of her body completely clothed, wearing a hat and with gloves on her hands.

M. Z. then states that for the past seven years he has never performed coition, but that he felt himself in full possession of his powers all the same.

The "riding by the woman" completely takes the place for him of that "bestial" act, even when he does not reach ejaculation.

Eight months ago, Z. took a vow that he would give up his masochist sport, and he has kept his word. However, he confesses that if a rather pretty woman were to say to him without beating about the bush "Come, I want to get astride on you," he would have no power to resist the temptation. Z. asks to be enlightened, and wants to know if his anomaly is curable, and whether he ought to be detested as a vicious man, or to be pitied as one suffering from disease.

**Squeezed in a China ring!** The case which we next give greatly resembles the one preceding.

A man finds his sexual satisfaction in the following manner. From time to time he visits a *puella publica*. He has his penis squeezed into a china ring, like those which are used for hanging up window curtains. Two pieces of string are then tied to the ring, passed between his legs behind, and then attached to the bed. Then the man implores the woman to flog him without mercy, and to treat him like a restive horse. The more the woman makes him yell, through her cries and the blows from the whip, the more does he feel his sexual excitement increased, he has an

erection, assisted probably mechanically by the compression of the *vena dorsalis penis* which are squeezed by the ring when the strings are drawn tight. As the erection increases the member is compressed by the ring, and ejaculation is at length produced with a keen sensation of pleasure.

In the preceding observations, the act of being trampled under foot plays a part beside other phenomena in expressing, as regards the Masochist, the situation of being humiliated and a laughing-stock. We see the exclusive and most widely extended employment of this means in the following classical case which Hammond quotes from an observation of D. Cox, of Colorado.

These cases form an intermediate degree between another kind of perversion and constitute a special group.

— X, a model husband with rigorous moral principles, the father of several children, is at times seized with a desire to go to the brothel to select two or three of the biggest girls, and to shut himself up with them. Then he bares the upper part of his body, lies down on the ground, crosses his arms over his abdomen, shuts his eyes and makes the *puella* walk on his bare chest, neck, and face, imploring her to dig her heels vigorously into his flesh at each step. Occasionally, he asks for still heavier girls or for other exercises which render the proceeding still more cruel. At the end of two or three hours, he has had enough, pays his bill and returns to his business, only to return again a week after to procure for himself afresh this strange pleasure.

Sometimes he makes one of these girls stand upon his chest, and the others then have to take hold of her and turn her round on her heels like a tectotum, until M X's skin bleeds under the heels of her boots.

Often one of the girls is obliged to place herself in such

a way that she keeps her boot on his eyes with the heel pressing the pupil of one of his eyes, while the other foot in its boot rests upon his neck. In this position, he sustains a person weighing about 150 pounds for four or five minutes.

The author speaks of a dozen similar cases with which he is acquainted. Hammond supposes with reason that this man, having become impotent in his relations with women, sought for and found, by this strange proceeding, an equivalent for coition, while he allowed his body to be trampled upon until it bled, he experienced agreeable sexual sensations accompanied by ejaculation. "

**B Second category of Masochists** Masochists of this category are apparently in possession of their full and normal vigour, they practise coition, but, as Thoinot says, they perform only a masochist coition, for it is by stimulating their imagination by the evocation of a masochist scene that they obtain erection and ejaculation in their intercourse with the woman, who does not really count for them, and who is only the *accidental beneficiary*, and not the one for whom the perverted individual's vengery is intended.

### Observations relating to this Category

Krafft-Ebing's observations relating to this category are numerous, and enter into great detail. We shall be satisfied with quoting only two extracts from them, which appears to us to be sufficient.

**Extract from Observation 44** The subject was unable to effect normal coition with prostitutes, an act which was repugnant to him. He satisfied himself by being masturbated, and he depicted to himself in his

imagination, flagellation, and being trampled under foot

“ At length I overcame my last feelings of repugnance, and one day, to realize my dreams, I had myself flagellated and trampled under foot by a prostitute. It was a great deception. In my opinion it was at the same time brutal, repugnant and ridiculous. The blows caused me only pain and the other details of the situation repugnance and shame. In spite of that I obtained by mechanical means, an ejaculation, at the same time as by the aid of my imagination I transformed the real situation into that of which I dreamed. The situation of which I dreamed differed from that which I had created by the fact above all that I had imagined to myself a woman who would inflict this treatment upon me with a pleasure equal to that with which I received it from her. All my sexual imaginations were founded on the existence of a similar feeling in the woman, a tyrannical and cruel woman, to whom I must submit myself. The act which would show this state of slavery was only of secondary importance to me. It was only after this first attempt at an impossible realization that I clearly recognized what was the true tendency of my desires. In fact, in my voluptuous dreams I had often eliminated all representation of ill treatment and merely represented to myself a woman fond of giving orders, with an imperious gesture, with speech made for command whose foot I kissed, and other similar things. It was only then that I clearly accounted to myself for what really attracted me. I recognized that flagellation was merely a means of strongly expressing the desired situation, but that in itself flagellation was valueless, causing me rather a disagreeable and even painful and repugnant feeling.

— ‘ X a literary man, aged 28, with hereditary blemishes, hyperaesthetic from his infancy, had a dream

when he was 6 years old, several times repeated, that a woman was beating him *ad nates*. He woke up after this dream a prey to the keenest voluptuous emotion, he was led to masturbation. At the age of 8, he one day asked the cook to beat him. He began at the age of 10 to suffer from neurasthenia. Up to the age of 25, he dreamed of flagellations, and sometimes he evoked these images when he was in a waking state, and masturbated himself at the same time.

Giving way, three years ago, to an obsession, he had himself beaten by a *puella*. The patient was then deceived, as neither erection nor ejaculation were produced. He made a similar attempt when he was 27, to force an erection and ejaculation. He only succeeded by the following artifice. While he was attempting coition, the *puella* had to tell him how she beat other men who had lost their vigour, and to threaten to do the same with him. Besides, he was obliged to imagine to himself that he was bound up and altogether at the woman's mercy, and that, without any means of defence, he would receive the most painful blows from her. occasionally, in order to have his vigour, he was obliged to have himself really bound, and in this way he was successful in coition. His pollutions were not accompanied with sensations of pleasure, except when he dreamed (a very rare circumstance) that he was being ill-treated or that he saw a *puella* flogging others. He never had a real sensation of pleasure in coition. In a woman it was the hands only which interested him. Above all he preferred vigorous women, with a solid fist. However, his want of flagellation is only ideal, for, having a very sensitive epidermis, a few blows are enough to hurt him exceedingly. Blows given by men would be disagreeable to him. He wished to get married. The impossibility of asking a virtuous woman to flagellate him, and the fear of

being impotent without this proceeding caused his perplexity and made him wish to be cured ' (Krafft Ebing )

**C Third Category of Masochists** This category is composed of the masochists who pass from the dream to the reality, and who put into action their favourite masochist scene in order to procure with the woman the sexual power and enjoyment which they obtain so effectually through ideal Masochism

“ The real masochist scenes are rather variable but their field is naturally restricted In imagination, as a matter of fact, the masochist can give a free course to his fictions and make himself the martyr of scenes of deep humiliation or of atrocious tortures In the reality, on the contrary, he can only submit himself to humiliations and tortures of slight importance, for masochism does not exclude the natural instinct of self preservation, and on the other hand, the usual theatre for enacting masochist scenes is the brothel, where the Masochist who wanted to carry matters too far and to too serious an end, would naturally meet with an absolute refusal (Thoinot )

**Observations relating to the Third Category of Masochism** ‘ A patient of D Tarnowsky hired, through a person whom he could trust, an apartment for the periods of his attacks, and instructed the staff, consisting of three prostitutes, in what they were to do to him

He came there from time to time, he was undressed, masturbated, and flagellated, as he had given orders He pretended to show resistance, and to ask for pardon then they gave him to eat as it was laid down in the instructions, and he was allowed to sleep but he was retained

in spite of his protestations, and beaten if he was refractory.

This lasted for some days. When the attack had passed off, he was allowed to go, and he returned home to his wife and children, who had not the slightest suspicion in the world of his disease. The attack returned once or twice a year." (Tarnowsky.)

"X., 34 years of age, with numerous hereditary defects, suffers from sexual inversion. For several reasons he has found no opportunity of satisfying himself with a man, in spite of his great sexual wants. He dreamed one night by chance that a woman was flogging him. He had a pollution.

This dream led him to allow himself to be flogged by *meretrices*, to replace in him the homosexual love *Conducit sibi nonnunquam meretricem, ipse vestimenta sua omnia deponit, dum puellæ ultimum tegumentum deponere non licet, puellam pedibus ipse percutere, flagellare, verberare jubet. Qua re summa libidine affectus pedem fœminæ lambit quod solum eum libidinosum facere potest, tum ejaculationem assequitur*. As soon as ejaculation occurs, he is seized with the greatest disgust for a situation morally so degrading, he then takes himself off as quickly as possible."

**Symbolic Masochism** There is, says Krafft-Ebing, quite a group of Masochists who content themselves with symbolic signs of the scene which corresponds to their perversion. This group corresponds to the group of symbolic Sadists.

We give below two original observations which will obviate the necessity of further explanation.

**Observations relating to Symbolic Masochism.** "Every three months a man of about 45 years

used to call upon a certain whore (*sic*) and give her 10 francs to do as follows. The *puella* had to undress him bind him hand and foot, bandage his eyes and draw down the blinds in the room so as to make it darker. Then she made him sit down on a divan and left him in that state. Half an hour afterwards the woman had to come back and loosen the cords. The man then paid her and went away satisfied, to return again in three months time. (*Igiene dell Amore*)

This man thus lying bound in the darkness, figured to himself in his imagination that he was delivered over without defence to the absolute power of a woman, and that his life might be in danger.

The following case, from the same author is still more strange. It is a case of Masochism combined with comedy.

"In Paris, an individual used to repair on certain evenings fixed in advance to an apartment, the proprietor of which was disposed to lend himself to his strange caprices. He came in evening dress into the drawing room of a lady who had to receive him in full dress and with a haughty air. He used to call her "Marquise" and she had to address him as my dear Count. He then began to talk of his pleasure at finding her all alone of his affection and of love's propitious hour. The lady had then to play the part of a lady whose dignity was offended. The pretended Count grew warmer and warmer, and asked the pseudo Marquise's permission to imprint a kiss upon her shoulder. Great scene of indignation! she rings, and a valet, hired expressly for this purpose, comes in and shows the Count to the door. The Count goes away very satisfied, and gives a handsome sum to those who have taken part in this pre arranged comedy.

We give finally an observation of Krafft Ebing relating to a very curious case of Masochism which does not appear



to us to be of a nature to be classed in any of the preceding categories

“ Z . 27 years of age, an artist, of a vigorous physical constitution and agreeable exterior, declares that he has no hereditary blemishes; he has been in good health ever since his childhood, but since his 23<sup>rd</sup> year has been nervous and inclined to hypochondriacal ideas. From the sexual point of view, he has an inclination for bragging, but anyhow is incapable of great exploits. In spite of the advances which women make to him, his intercourse with them is limited to innocent caresses. Together with that, he has a curious inclination to desire women who show themselves distant towards him. Since the age of 25, he has observed himself that women, however plain they might be, provoke a sexual excitement in him directly he perceives an imperious and haughty trait in their character. An angry word from a woman's mouth is sufficient to produce in him the most violent erections. He was sitting one day in a café and heard the cashier, a very plain woman, vigorously scolding the waiter in an energetic tone. This scene caused him a violent sexual emotion which, in a short time, ended in ejaculation. Z . demands from those women with whom he would have sexual relations that they should repulse him and abuse him in every possible way. He says that only those women can excite him who resemble the heroines of Sacher-Masoch's novels ”

### **Masochism complicated with Sadism.**

Masochism and Sadism, which are the very antipodes of one another, may nevertheless coexist together, and this is not one of the least curious characteristics of these two affections.

Observation 57 of Krafft-Ebing gives a very clear case of this.

" M Z , 22 years of age, unmarried has been brought to me by his guardian for medical consultation the young man being nervous and sexually abnormal besides His father at the time of the conception had a disease of the nerves

The patient was a lively child and gifted with talent He was observed to be masturbating himself when he was 7 years of age, and from the age of 9 he was absent-minded forgetful, and unable to make any progress in his studies

He had much trouble in completing his education, and during his year's voluntary service he occasioned remark through his indolence, want of memory, and desperate acts

Z's father considers his son to be a youth originally good and moral, but without energy, weak, disordered, often in despair at the want of success of the life which he has led hitherto, and as an indolent man who interests himself only in music, for which he has a considerable talent

The physical exterior of the patient, particularly his plagiocephalous skull his large ears set widely apart the innervation of the right side of his mouth, the neuropathic expression of his eyes, indicate a neuropathic degenerate

Z is tall, robust and of an altogether virile appearance The pelvis is virile the testicles are well developed the right testicle comes down lower than the left, the cremasterian reflex on the two sides is weak From the intellectual point of view, the patient is below the average He feels his insufficiency himself, deplores his indolence, and begs that his force of character may be restored to him His awkward, embarrassed attitude his scared look and his listless bearing indicate masturbation The patient

admits that from the time when he was seven up to a year and a half ago, *he masturbated himself from 8 to 12 times a day*. Until the last few years, the time when he became neurasthenic (pains in the head, intellectual incapacity, spinal irritation, etc.), he declares that he always felt considerable pleasure in masturbating himself. Since then he no longer has this sensation, and masturbation has lost all its charm for him. He has become more and more timid, soft without energy, sluggish and fearful; he takes no more interest in anything, does not attend to his business except through feelings of duty, and feels debilitated. He has never thought of coition, and from his point of view of onanism, does not understand how others find any pleasure in it.

I sought for sexual inversion; I obtained a negative result.

He declares that he never felt any inclination for persons of his own sex. He believes however that now and then he has had a feeble inclination for women. He declares that he was led into onanism by himself. When he was 13, he remarked for the first time the emission of sperm after onanistic manipulations.

It was not till after I had insisted on it for a long time, that Z. agreed to entirely reveal his *vita sexualis*. It appears from the following information that the case may be classed as one of ideal Masochism combined with rudimentary Sadism. The patient remembers very distinctly that, ever since the age of 6, "ideas of violence" sprung up spontaneously in his mind. He was possessed by the idea that the chamber-maid would stretch his legs apart by force in order to show his genital parts to other persons, that she tried to throw cold or boiling water upon him in order to cause him pain. These ideas of violence were accompanied by sensations of pleasure, and provoked

masturbation Later on, it was the patient himself who evoked these pictures in his imagination in order to stimulate himself to masturbation They even played a part in his dreams but they never brought about pollution, evidently because the patient masturbated himself beyond measure during the day

In course of time Sadic ideas were joined to these Masochist ideas of violence In the first place it was the sight of boys who, through violence, masturbated one another and cut each others genital parts Sometimes he put himself in imagination into the place of one of these boys sometimes in the active part, sometimes in the passive part

Later on his mind was preoccupied by the representation of girls and women exhibiting themselves to one another, he represents scenes to himself in which the chamber maid was forcibly stretching apart the thighs of another girl, and drawing out hairs from her pubes in other scenes it was cruel boys who were pricking girls and pinching their genital parts

All these pictures provoked sexual excitations in him, but he never had any inclinations to play an active part in these scenes or to endure them passively It was enough for him to make use of these scenes for automasturbation For the last year and a half these scenes and desires had become more rare, following on the diminution of the *libido* and of the sexual imagination, but their subject has remained always the same The Masochist ideas of violence prevail over the Sadist ideas Latterly when he sees a lady the idea always occurs to him that she has the same sexual ideas as himself This partly explains his embarrassment in his intercourse with the world As the patient has heard it said that he would be freed from his sexual ideas which have become troublesome to him if

he accustomed himself to a normal satisfaction of his instinct, he has, in the course of the last eighteen months, twice attempted to perform coition, although the act was repugnant to him and he did not promise himself any success. Therefore the attempt ended in complete failure on each occasion. The second time, at the moment of his attempt, he felt such a repugnance that he pushed the girl away and ran off as fast as his legs would carry him." (Krafft-Ebing.)

**Masochism and Animals.** In the following case, Masochism is complicated with Sadism towards animals.

"A vigorous young man, 26 years of age. What excites him in the fair sex, is solely the elegant boots on the feet of a very "smart" woman, especially when the boots are of black leather with a very high heel. The boot without the wearer is enough for him. It is his supreme pleasure to see the boot, to handle it and kiss it. A lady's bare foot, or one with only a stocking on, leaves him absolutely cold. From his childhood he has had a weakness for ladies' boots. X .. has all his manly vigour during the sexual act, the woman must be elegantly dressed, and, above all, be wearing nice boots. When he reaches the apogee of voluptuous emotion, cruel ideas are mingled with his admiration of the boots. He is obliged to think with delight of the agonies of pain suffered by the animal which supplied the material for the boots. From time to time, he feels induced to take fowls and other living animals to the Phryne, in order that she may crush them under her elegant boots and thus procure him a very great pleasure. He calls this proceeding, "sacrificing to the feet of Venus." At other times the woman has to trample upon him with her boots on, and the more she does so the greater pleasure he feels.

Up to a year ago, as he found no charm in the woman

herself, he satisfied himself with caressing the boots of women who were to his taste, and, in the midst of his caresses he had ejaculations and a complete satisfaction (Lombroso *Archiv di psichiatria*, IX )

**Latent Masochism** Krafft Ebing includes in this separate category, the acts of passive stercoraries We have, as a matter of fact, described *stercoraries* in connection with S1dism, and under this general denomination we have included the simply deprived sufferers or subjects who sully women with their excrement, these may be termed active stercoraries Passive stercoraries are those who like to receive the woman s excrement on their abdomen and often even in their mouth Others are satisfied with the illusion The case quoted among the Stercoraries in which a man making the figure 69 with a woman licked her anus, and ejaculated when he received her excrement in his mouth, is a case of debauchery and not of Masochism

**Filthy actions having Sexual Satisfaction as their Object** Under reservation of the above remark, I give however, from Krafft Ebing some observations which, according to him, are to be referred to latent Masochism

“ H R G a landowner and retired Major, who died at the age of 60, was a member of a family in which frivolity, debts, and absence of all moral feelings are hereditary From his youth he was addicted to the wildest debauchery He was well known as one who organized nude dances Of a brutal and cynical character, but severe and exact in his military duties (he was compelled to resign on account of some low affair which was never divulged) he lived for seventeen years as a private individual Careless in looking after his fortune he tried to gain admittance

everywhere as a free liver, but he was avoided on account of his lewd conduct. In spite of his rough character, he was made to feel that he was under the ban of decent society. This led him to mix in preference with the common herd of cabmen, labourers, and the frequenters of public bars. It was impossible to prove the fact that he had sexual relations with men, but it is quite certain that he got up drinking bouts in very doubtful company, and, to the end of his days, he kept up his reputation as a debauchee.

In the latter years of his life, he was in the habit of taking up his post of an evening near houses which were in course of construction, he selected the dirtiest of the labourers as they left the building, and invited them to accompany him.

It is positively proved that he used to make these labourers take off their clothes, that he would then suck their great toe, and that by this proceeding he aroused his *libido*, which he then satisfied. "

Cantanaro has also published in *la Psichiatria* (5<sup>th</sup> year, p 207) an observation of an individual who, before he performed coition, and for the same reason, used to suck and bite the great toe of the *puella*, who had not washed for a long time.

I have known several cases besides of other Masochist acts (ill-treatment, humiliation, etc.), in which the patients were addicted to these disgusting inclinations, and the depositions made by these same individuals left no doubt whatever as to the signification of these dirty acts. Such facts assist us to understand other cases which, if we did not view them in their associations with the Masochist inclination for humiliation, would be absolutely inexplicable.

It is probable however that the perverted individual has no knowledge of the true significance of this inclination, and accounts to himself only for his desire for disgusting

objects. Consequently, latent Masochism exists there also.

To this category of perverted individuals belong other cases observed by Cantarano (*mictio*, and in another case even *defecatio puellæ ad linguam viri ante actum*, and the use of food with a fæcal odour to gain virile power), and lastly the following case has also been communicated to me by a doctor.

— A very decrepit Russian Prince made his mistress defæcate on his chest, she had to crouch down over him and turn her back towards him. In this way he was able to arouse the remnants of his *libido*.

Another man used to keep a mistress in a very handsome manner, on condition that she ate only ginger bread. *Ut libidinosus fiat et ejaculare possit, excrementa feminae in ore excipit*. A Brazilian doctor told me of several cases of *defecatio feminae in os viri* which had come to his knowledge.

Similar facts occur everywhere and are not uncommon. Every possible kind of secretion the saliva, the nasal mucus, and even the cerumen from the ears are employed for this end and swallowed with avidity *oscula ad nates* and even *ad anum* (D. Moll, *op. cit.* reports analogous facts among homosexuals). The very prevalent perverted desire of performing the *cunnilingus* often proceeds perhaps from Masochist proclivities.

Pelanda (*Archivio di Psichiatria* X, fascicolo 3 4) reports the following fact.

— 'W', 45 years of age, with hereditary defects, has been addicted to masturbation ever since he was 8 years old. *A decimo sexto anno libidines suas bibendo recentem feminarum urinam satiauit. Tanta erat voluptas urinam bibentis ut nec aliquid olfaceret nec saperet, hæc faciens*. After he had



drunk it he always felt disgust, was sick, and swore to himself that he would not do it again. Once only did he feel the same pleasure in drinking the urine of a boy 9 years old, with whom he had once indulged in *fellatio*. The patient suffers from epileptic delirium.

The facts quoted in this group are in exact opposition to those of the group of Sadists.

In this category must be grouped the oldest facts of Tardieu. He described as "sniffers" those *qui in secretos locos nummum theatrorum porticos convenientes quo complures feminae ad micturiendum festinant, per nares urinæ odore excitati, illico se invicem polluent*" (Krafft-Ebing)

We hold to our opinion that these are for the most, cases of debauchery rather than cases of latent Masochism. These are the common practices of perverted individuals.

**Masochism complicated with Sexual Inversion** Those who suffer from sexual inversion may be Masochists, just as Pederasts are very often Sadists. We have given observations applying to this state of coexistence. We give below, after Moll, the summing-up of a very curious case of an inverted Masochist.

The subject is a Monsieur A, affected with sexual inversion who, residing abroad, had engaged a servant, B without knowing anything of him. A. hired a villa in the country, and sent his servant there while he still remained abroad himself, and gave him instructions by letter how he was to receive a certain C. and compel him to lend himself to pederasty. C. would come to the villa, according to A.'s letter to B., bearing a letter from A., and B. was to do with C. as he was told by A.. The instructions sent by A. to B. are of such a cynical nature that, did we not know the end of the story,

we might take A for a dangerous malefactor Now, C is really no other than A who had adopted this ingenious means of being a Masochist constrained by his own will

The instructions begin with hands being laid on C, surprised in the very act of stealing some silver spoons, who must become a slave (*sic*) under pain of being denounced to the police The dress which he must wear, the diet which he must follow, the painful and repugnant labours which are to be imposed on him the wages which he must receive are all noted down in these instructions

The most curious articles are those which treat upon the sexual vexations which C has to endure

### § 3

‘ When you are quite at your ease, you will undress him and do what you wish He will be compelled to wash your feet, and you can ejaculate your semen into his mouth He must even kiss your buttocks, if that amuses you

### § 11

“ When you beat him you will do so in the Russian manner You will take a ladder which you will place against the wall Then you will bind him to it his feet below and his hands above his head to the steps of the ladder Then you will strip him quite naked if you like

His body will be bound with a rope You will then take a knout and you will apply a few strokes to his naked buttocks Never beat him with all your strength for he is a weakly youth and will suffer atrociously where a vigorous man would feel nothing

### § 13

‘ And now I will describe to you certain pleasures which are known only in Russia and Turkey

## § 14

“ The pleasures in question are rather uncommon, but when we possess, like you, a youth who can be made to do everything, we must not deprive ourselves of them. ”

. . . . .

A beginning was made to put this into execution.

B . , at the villa, received C with a letter from A and wanted to treat him according to the instructions he had received, but C... took to his heels, and the affair went no further.

**Masochism in the Woman** Ever since the origin of the human species, woman has always been subject to man. Among primæval men, she was considered as a slave in a state of submission before her lord and master. Through the progress of civilization, her part has gradually increased Among the Aryan races, she is considered as the companion of the man to whom she owes, as the Civil Code tells us, respect and fidelity She does more, she wishes to become the equal of man!

It is no less accurate that Atavism weighs heavily on the woman's shoulders It is not with impunity that during hundreds of generations her grandmothers have endured the yoke of their husbands

If Sadism is, naturally, the almost exclusive appanage of man, Masochism ought to be, quite naturally also, the portion of woman.

We ought therefore more frequently to meet with cases of Masochism in the woman, but their manifestation is held in check by social conventions. Besides, we know that a number of women, the young ones in particular, like to be on their knees before their husbands or lovers

Among all the Slav nations, it is said, the women of the lower class do not believe in their husband's love until they have received a sound thrashing. It is the same with the Hungarian peasants.

"It is almost impossible," says Krafft-Ebing, for the medical observer to bring forward any human documents upon the Masochism of the woman. Internal and external opposition, modesty and propriety, oppose almost insurmountable obstacles to the exterior manifestations of the perverted sexual inclinations of the woman.

Thus it happens that hitherto it has been possible to verify *scientifically* only one single case of Masochism in the woman, moreover this case is surrounded with accessory circumstances which render it obscure.

"M<sup>lle</sup> V. X., aged 35, born of a family with numerous hereditary defects, found herself a few years ago in the initial phase of *paranoia persecutoria*. The cause of this malady has been a *neurasthenia cerebrospinalis*, the origin of which must be sought for in a sexual surexcitation. Since the age of 24, the patient has been addicted to onanism. In consequence of a disappointment in her hopes of marriage and of a violent sexual excitement, she had recourse to masturbation and psychical onanism. There has never been any affection in her for persons of her own sex. The patient deposes as follows: "When I was between 6 and 8 years of age I was seized with a wish to be flogged. As I had never been beaten and had never assisted at the flagellation of another, I cannot explain how this strange desire was produced in me. I can only imagine that it is congenital. I experienced a veritable feeling of delight at these ideas of flagellation, and I represented to myself in my imagination how nice it would be to be flogged by a friend. I never had any fancy for allowing myself to be flogged by a man. I enjoyed the idea

alone, and I have never tried to put my fancies into execution From the age of 10, I lost these ideas It was only at the age of 34, when I had read Rousseau's *Confessions* that I understood what this desire to be flagellated signified, and that it was a question of the same morbid ideas in me as in Rousseau I have never had any similar tendencies since the age of 10 "(Krafft-Ebing.)

According to Krafft-Ebing, this would be a case of Masochism. " That it was a friend who, in her imagination played the part of flagellant, is explained simply by the fact that in this case the Masochist ideas entered into the mind of a child before the *vita sexualis* was developed and the inclination for the man manifested In this case sexual inversion is altogether absent "

## CHAPTER XVI

### GENITAL MADNESS (*continued*)

#### EROTOMANIA

Definition of Erotomania — Don Quixote and Dulcinea

Epilepsy — — Observations relating to Epileptics committing abnormal Sexual Acts — Hysteria — Averred Eroticism of Epileptic Women — Remarkable cases of Hysteria — The Bordeaux Scandal — *Madame la Pironne* — Mental Condition of Hysterical Women — Hysterical Men

Various forms of Mental Alienation connected with the Genito-Sexual Function — Observations relating to various cases of Mental Alienation

The Insanity of Puberty

Insanity of the Menopause

Utero-ovarian Insanity

Post Connubial Insanity

Relation of Mental Alienation to Pregnancy and the Menses

**Erotomania** Erotomania is nothing more than Platonic Love carried to delirium. Erotomania must be carefully distinguished from some mental disorders which are connected with a functional perturbation of the sexual organs. The erotomaniac's cult is unalloyed and exempt from all carnal reservations. It is addressed to an imaginary being, or to persons who, by reason of their rank, their fortune or their social position, would not consent to accept it. This eccentricity is perhaps more common in the woman than in the man, or, at least in her case it more frequently ends in confirmed madness. It is met

with at all ages of life, but much more frequently in youth and even in childhood

“ Veritable erotomaniacs are to be met with in the school-room There are certain young girls who willingly imagine that men take an interest in them, that they look at them and that they are in love with them There are some collegians who indulge in an interminable correspondence, which they address in the first instance to an unknown object, but which finally takes the shape of some actress, or fashionable lady, or well-known woman of light character. ” (Cullerier )

**Don Quixote and Dulcinea** The erotomaniac realizes what Laurent calls, after Stendhal’s expression, the *crystallization of love* No one knows better than he how to delude himself, and to deck his love with attractions as charming as they are false Don Quixote, when he shares the bed of the maid-servant at the tavern, finds that her red and dirty hands are as fine and delicate as those of a princess, that her coarse skin is as soft as satin, and that her chemise of coarse brown linen is of finest lawn

Laurent gives a summary of a curious observation by Renaudin

**Observations of cases of Erotomania.** “ A lady aged 32, who had been well brought up, saw, some time after her marriage, a man of higher rank than her husband, she fell very deeply in love with him directly, she murmured at her position, and spoke of her husband only with disdain He whom she loved has every imaginable quality She wrote him letters in which a chaste, and at the same time ardent passion, breaks forth She was often found in a state of ecstasy, with her eyes fixed on some chimerical vision, her lips murmured the name of

him she loved She rejected her husband's caresses, refused to see him, to speak to him to sit beside him or to share his bed She saw only her loved one and her eyes were eternally fixed on the dear image In short, she became so insupportable and committed such extravagances, that her husband had to separate from her, and even to have her shut up (Renaudin, *op cit* )

Not only does the erotomaniac see the beloved object through a prism which changes it more or less, and always does so to its advantage but he moreover gives to facts a false interpretation, which makes him refer everything to his love Where another person would feel that he had been refused, or that he had met with an awkward repulse, he, by a singular error of judgment finds an encouragement to his love The least incident the slightest gesture or word, he interprets in his favour

The celebrated Italian physiologist Fodera, fell desperately in love at the age of 50, with a young girl who lived opposite to him One day as he happened to be in the street he looked up in ecstasy at the darling child who to free herself from his importunity, threw a pail of dirty water on his head Fodera did not take this as an answer on the contrary he saw in it a proof of love and went home, quite beside himself with joy In the court-yard he came across a chicken which he declared to be extremely like the young girl he loved he bought it immediately, and covered it with kisses and caresses, everything was permissible for this precious animal it might dirty his books, his furniture, and his clothes, and even perch upon its master's bed

I give an analogous fact with which I was acquainted myself and which I came across in a village of La Champagne

P is simple minded, and almost an imbecile Em



ployed as a carter on a farm, his pretensions to fine language and his eccentricities have made him the laughing-stock of all. His exaggerated love of order leads him to pile a heap of dung with an almost geometrical regularity, he sweeps the farm-yards where he is employed with the minutest care, not leaving behind him a wisp of straw or a withered leaf, and levelling with a stamper the stones which project, beginning his labour over again each time they are raised by the frost. He indulges in all kinds of eccentricities, one day, he wanted to go and work by moonlight, declaring that it was too hot during the day, another time he tore up a thicket which formed the boundary of a property, because he said it worried him. In order that it might not be observed, he dug a deep ditch and buried in it the branches which he had cut off. He grows exceedingly angry when his masters speak to him in a rude or ironical way. One of them, the *Maire* of the village, one day gave him an order which he obstinately refused to carry out. He often displayed this invincible stubbornness, nearly always working as the fancy seized him.

You want to do as you please then? said his master.

Certainly.

Then go and be damned.

This apostrophe, frequently used by the peasants, hurt him deeply.

He often passes whole nights in singing the *Dies Irae* and the penitential psalms. Nor is this all. P. was once in love. Instead of turning his affections to some girl on the farm, poor and humble like himself, he aspired to the daughter of a large farmer in the village. Naturally his pretensions were received with amusement, and they formed a joke for all the village. This had no effect. the sarcasms

of the other young people the rebuffs and cruel jests inflicted on him by the young girl who openly laughed at him, could not turn him from it. "I loved her when she was still in her mother's womb and when her mother did not yet know the fruit she bore." He was always in hopes of overcoming the coldness of his *inamorata* following her with sentimental declarations which sent her into fits of laughter. One day his master sent him to take a letter to the young girl's father. Instead of simply handing it to the father, he went up to the young lady, knelt down to kiss the hem of her dress, and like a knight of olden days, laid the missive on her knees. Her sister took a pail of water and poured it over the lover's back amidst the shouts of laughter of those who stood by. When he came back to his master quite drenched, the latter suspecting what had happened said to him with a laugh

— Has it been raining, then?

— No, Master he said sadly and you know very well it has not. But I love her still." (Laurent, *L'Amour Morbide*)

**Epilepsy** Epilepsy, which is a powerful cause of psychical weakness, may give birth to all the genital aberrations which have already been mentioned. Moreover, in the case of many epileptics, the sexual instinct is very keen. Many youthful epileptics are masturbators, and even pederasts.

We have no intention to describe here, with Chevalier, the psychical symptoms of epilepsy. They display the double characteristic of impulsion obsession. During the crisis, the epileptic indulges as though set off by a spring, in the most insensate as well as the most mischievous acts.

The abnormal sexual acts which epileptics may commit during the crisis are so frequent and so various, that Arndt

has gone so far as to declare that every anomaly of the sexual sphere is certainly a manifestation of epilepsy. "One goes out perfectly naked on the public road, another attempts to offer violence to his mother, a third attacks the first woman he meets, violates her, and then kills her, or kills her first and violates her after, rips up her body and devours her heart It is thus too that the impulsion to pederasty has been observed several times with or without delirium " (Chevalier )

In the intervals between the attacks, epileptics do not display any symptom of excessive sexuality, but only at the moment of the epileptic attacks, when they are in an equivalent or post-epileptic state of psychical excitement According to Krafft-Ebing, the alterations of the brain which are produced as a consequence of epileptic affections may occasion a morbid excitation of the sexual life Moreover, in the states of psychical excitation, the epileptic has his senses disordered, and is unable to offer any resistance to his sexual impulsions.

**Observations relating to Epileptics committing Abnormal Sexual Acts** " I have known a young man, an epileptic, for some years past who every time he has a reiterated attack, springs upon his mother and tries to violate her The patient recovers his senses after a certain time, but does not remember anything which has occurred In the intervals, he is a man of severe morality, and with no sexual wants "

" A few years ago, I knew a farm-servant. who, at the moment of his epileptic attacks, indulged in unbridled masturbation During the intervals, his conduct was irreproachable " (Krafft-Ebing )

Simon (*Crimes et Délits*) makes mention of an epileptic girl, aged 23, highly educated and of the most severe mo-

rality, who in the attack of vertigo, murmurs some obscene words, then lifts up her petticoats, makes lascivious movements, and tries to tear open her drawers

Kiernan (*Alienists and Neurologist*, 1884) relates that an epileptic always had as *auræ* of his attacks the vision of a beautiful woman in a lascivious posture and that from this he had an ejaculation

The same author makes mention of a very respectable man who, two or three times a year had epileptic attacks followed by dysthymic fury and impulsion to pederasty which lasted a week to a fortnight

— W without hereditary defects, otherwise healthy, intellectually normal, tranquil, good with decent manners not addicted to drink lost his appetite on April 13<sup>th</sup> 1877 On the morning of the 14<sup>th</sup> in the presence of his wife and children, he suddenly rose from his seat sprang upon a friend of his wife and implored her, and subsequently his wife as well, to let him copulate When repulsed he was immediately seized with a crisis of an epileptic nature, after which he fell into a frenzy breaking what he could find, throwing boiling water upon those who wished to come near him and hurling a child into the fire place Soon after he grew calm but continued in a state of disorder for some days, and then recovered his senses but having totally forgotten everything which had occurred (Kowalewsky, *Jahrbuescher f Psych* 1879)

— In another case, a man who was usually very respectable attacked at short intervals four women in the street (once even before two witnesses) and violated one although his wife, young, pretty, and healthy, lived quite near The individual totally forgot his scandalous acts (Casper)

— A man aged 26, possessing a fortune had lived for a year with a woman whom he loved deeply He practised coition rarely, and never showed any perversity

During the year, he had on two occasions, after alcoholic excesses, epileptic crises. One evening after dinner, at which he had drunk a quantity of wine, he went with a firm step into the apartment of his mistress, although the maid told him that she had gone out. From there he went into another room where a boy aged fourteen was sleeping, and began to violate him. At the cries of the child, whom he had hurt on his prepuce and on his hand, the nurse hastened up. Then the patient left the boy, and offered violence to the nurse. He then went to bed and slept for twelve hours. When he woke up he had but a slight recollection of his intoxication and coition. Later on he had several returns of these epileptic crises." (Tarnowsky, *op. cit.*)

"X ., a man of good position, had led for some time a very dissolute life, and had attacks of epilepsy. He then became engaged to be married. On the day fixed for the marriage, a short time before the nuptial ceremony, he appeared leaning on his brother's arm in the room filled with the wedding guests. He went up to his bride-elect, *denudat coram populo genitalia et masturbare incipit*. He was immediately conveyed to a psychiatric asylum, on the way he masturbated himself unceasingly, and was still, several days after, a prey to this temptation. When the paroxysm had passed, the patient had only a vague remembrance of the incidents which had occurred, and could not give any explanation of his proceedings." (Tarnowsky.)

"Z ., aged 27, affected with hereditary defects, an epileptic, violates a girl 11 years of age and then kills her. He denies the fact. Amnesia. The exceptional psychical condition at the time of the crime has not been demonstrated." (Pugliesi *Arch. di Psich.*, VIII.)

"V ., aged 60, a doctor, committed acts of obscenity upon little girls, and was condemned to two years

imprisonment D Marandon afterwards proved that he was subject to epileptoid attacks of fear to dementia, and to erotic and hypochondriacal delirium at times (Lacasagne *Lyon médical*, 1887 )

— “ On August 4<sup>th</sup>, 1878, a girl named H nearly 15 years of age, was picking currants on the high road, in company with several little girls and boys All at once H threw little L , aged 9 down on the ground, laid her bare, held her tight, and invited A aged 7 1/2 and D , aged 5, to make a *conjunctio membrorum* with the girl which the two little boys actually did

H had a good reputation For the past five years she had suffered from nervous irritability, headaches, dizziness and epileptic attacks, her physical and intellectual development had been arrested She had not yet menstruated but she showed the *molimen menstruale* Her mother is suspected of epilepsy For the past three months H had often, after her attacks done wrong things without having any recollection of them

H appears to have been deflowered She does not display any intellectual defects She declares that she knows nothing of the act of which she is accused

According to her mother's evidence she had had on the morning of August 4<sup>th</sup> an epileptic attack, and on that account her mother ordered her not to leave the house (Purckhner *Friedreichs Blätter für ger Med* 1879 )

We will close this enumeration with the following case of indecent assault a summary of which is given by Krafft Ebing who observed it himself

— “ P , aged 49, married clinical clerk accused of indecent assault on the person of little D aged 10, and of little G aged 9

Deposition of little D

“ I was with G... and a little sister J , aged 3, in the meadow. P.. called us into his work-room and bolted the door. *Tum nos exosculabatur, linguam in os meum demittere tentabat, faciemque mihi lambebat, sustulit me in gremium, bracas aperuit, vestes meas sublevavit, digitis me in genitalibus titillabat et membro vulvam meam fricabat ita ut humidam fierem.* When I cried out, he gave me 12 kreutzers, and threatened that he would shoot me if I said a word about what had happened. Finally he asked me to come again the next day ”

The deposition of little G... is as follows

*P.. nates et genitalia D. . ac exosculatus isdem me conatibus aggressus est. Deinde filiolum quoque tres annos natum in manus acceptum osculatus est nudatumque parte suæ virili appressit. Postea quæ nobis essent nomina interrogavit, ac censuit genitalia D. . ac meis multo esse majora. Quin etiam nos impulit, ut membrum suum intueremur, manibus comprehendere et videremus, quantopere id esset erectum*

In his interrogatory of the 29<sup>th</sup> of May, P. declared that he had but vague remembrance of having, a short time before, caressed and kissed some little girls, and of giving them presents. If he had done anything else, he could only have acted so in a state of complete irresponsibility. Besides, since the time when he had a fall several years ago, he suffers from head-aches. On June 22<sup>nd</sup> he knows nothing of what happened on May 26<sup>th</sup>, and does not remember anything of his interrogatory on May 28<sup>th</sup>. This want of memory is fully confirmed in the discussion after the hearing of both parties.

P .. is born of a family of cerebrals, one of his brothers is epileptic. P. was formerly addicted to drink. He is certain that he had a lesion of the head a few years ago. Since that he had, with intervals of several weeks or months, attacks of mental disorders preceded by morose-

ness, irritability, an inclination for the abuse of alcohol, a mania of persecution extending to dangerous menaces and acts of violence. At the same time he had acoustic hyperaesthesia, dizziness, head aches and cerebral congestions. All this caused him great disorder of mind and a want of memory for the period of the attack, which often lasted for whole weeks.

In the intervals he suffered much from head aches on a level with the wound, which caused him to attempt to commit suicide, an act of which he had no recollection afterwards.

Otherwise he was a worthy man, laborious and one who never showed any trace of sexual excitation, besides that, he had quite latterly had sexual intercourse with his wife. P. declares that since his fall he can no longer endure an excess of heat or alcohol, which causes him head aches, and disorders his senses.

The medical observation confirms his other assertions regarding his weakness of memory, his weakness of mind, irascibility, and insomnia. (Krafft Ebing.)

**Hysteria.** It is not our business to give here the description of that great nervous disorder named Hysteria, which the public wrongly confuses with Nymphomania. Suffice it to say that, with hysterical subjects, the sexual life also is very often abnormal. All the possible anomalies of the sexual instinct may be met with here, with varied aspects and strange complications. When there is hereditary degenerative basis of imbecility or idealism the most perverse forms may be noticed. In hysterical subjects, says Krafft Ebing, the sexual life is often morbidly excited. This excitation may manifest itself in an intermittent (menstrual) manner. It may have as its effect a shameless prostitution even in married women. When the sexual impulsion man



ifests itself under an attenuated form, then there is onanism, walking about in a state of nudity in the room, mania for anointing the body with urine or other filthy matter, for dressing up in men's clothes, etc

Krafft-Ebing's opinion is disputed by Cullerier. According to the latter authority, "contrary to the common opinion, hysterical individuals are not necessarily salacious and inclined to lewdness. We confuse with the exaggerated sexual appetite, to which they are very often completely strangers, a depravation of the moral sense which leads them to seek for opportunities of using their power of seduction, and of satisfying their taste for romantic and amorous adventures. It is the everlasting want to attract attention which leads the hysterical subject into ticklish situations, into improper acts, and into equivocal and cynical talk, in which she compromises at the same time her dignity as a woman and the honour of her home."

Cullerier's opinion is in no wise shared by the following authors. Schule (*Klin. Psychiatrie*, 1888), on the contrary, makes special note very frequently of a morbidly accentuated genital instinct "which transforms girls thus predisposed, and even wives who have lived happily in marriage, into Messalinas." This author quotes cases in which wives have attempted to run off during the honey-moon with men whom they have chanced to meet, and cases in which highly respectable women have formed haphazard illicit connections, and have sacrificed all their dignity to their insatiable sexual avidity.

Laurent is no less positive than Schule "Who is not acquainted, among his own circle of friends, with at least one of those examples of nervous, queer, eccentric women, who all at once display an immense and insane love for an almost unknown man, who often does not in any way deserve their affection. They love him without knowing

why He has come, it seems to them as though they had been waiting for him, he is their Messiah of love, and they will proceed to every kind of extravagance. Again we see women, mothers of families, whose conduct has always been irreproachable, suddenly leaving the path of rectitude and of duty, compromising themselves with adventurers, abandoning their children, and plunging their whole family into affliction. And when they have once entered upon this road, nothing can stop them, neither prayers, nor remonstrances nor threats. It is the woman's soul maddened with love, which rises to the surface and which out of an honest woman makes a Bacchante and a pagan. (E. Laurent, *l'Amour Morbide*)

### **Averred Eroticism of Hysterical Subjects**

Lombroso to whom it is impossible to deny a remarkable power of compilation, is extremely positive and sums up the different opinions on the eroticism of hysterical subjects.

'Their most prominent characteristic is eroticism. It is true that some authors affirm the contrary frequently (according to Legrand du Saule) they give themselves to the man from a spirit of adventure from a desire for unexpected emotions, or under the influences of passions more fugitive than violent but however this may be, I observe that here again the sexual element is latent and besides if many of them are really apathetic, some of them are very excited. Among the 83 hysterical patients of Legrand, I find 12 o/o who prostitute themselves without necessity 2 commit monstrous outrages on decency one mother tried to compel her daughter to masturbate her, and I am struck by the fact that all the criminality of hysteria is developed around the sexual functions. Among 21 who brought calumnious accusations, 9 charged someone with committing rape, 4 with assaults on their husband,

and, among others, one with unnatural sexual violence

The majority of Krafft-Ebing's *tribades* were hysterical subjects, as, for instance, that "woman X" aged 28, affected with spinal irritation and great debility, who before the manifestation of hysterical phenomena, had never had any inclination for persons of the other sex, and who after it had an inclination only for women. Lombroso then proceeds to quote Schule, and the history of the woman Laborde of Bordeaux "The denunciations of rapes committed by minors are nearly all of them made in the same manner, and with erotic details which would be repugnant to adults. Let us not speak here of the *succubi*, or of the sorceresses, or of the Saints (frigidity)

In the face of these facts, I shall assert that the sexual instincts in hysterical subjects are often exaggerated to the point of hallucinations of coition, sometimes extinct or transformed (*tribades*), but above all they are paradoxical, these women manifesting frigidity at the same time as a prepossession for sexual acts, just as we observe also in people in a state of intoxication, and in lascivious old men " (Lombroso, *la Femme criminelle et la Prostituée* )

Let us now proceed to consider a few remarkable cases of Hysteria.

**Remarkable Cases of Hysteria** Let us first quote a case, which may be called typical, reported by Dr Andrian di Lucera

"The niece of a lunatic, cousin to an imbecile and sister to a degenerate, M<sup>me</sup> R. , had a brilliant but severe education. She fell in love with a young man, but was unable to marry him, owing to his losing his fortune; she subsequently married M R , but without any taste or enthusiasm for the match. She had six children whom

she loved so passionately that she did not like to see anybody take them in their arms or kiss them. On one occasion, when owing to the failure of her milk she was obliged to entrust one of her little daughters to a nurse, on seeing the child in the nurse's arms she was seized with such frenzy that she nearly killed the unfortunate woman. She was very religious and her modesty was so exaggerated that she would cover up her breast when giving suck to her children, even before the most intimate friend of the family. Usually she shut herself up alone in her bed room to give her children suck. Another time, she dismissed a servant because he had lifted up her clothes that she might get into her carriage more easily. She had an exaggerated fear of dogs and cats. Very impressionable, and of a susceptible character, she grew angry very easily and, at any moment for no cause she passed from the liveliest exaltation to impulsive violence.

A few months ago, a carpenter named M was sent for to come to the house to do some work. He was a fair man, about a dozen years younger than Madame R. She conceived such a love for him that she had no rest day or night. For him she put on her finest dresses covered herself with jewels and painted herself. She danced with him, squeezing him tight, and devoured by jealousy, would not suffer him to dance with other women. She, who listened to Mass every day so devoutly and took the Communion who made the sign of the Cross in the streets before the images of the Madonna and the Saints came to pronounce gross and obscene words. Her severe and taciturn character completely changed, she grew gay and sang unceasingly. The husband got wind of the affair, and sent the carpenter away. Then a correspondence began between M and M<sup>me</sup> R, who did not conceal her despair lamenting before everybody and tearing her hair.

She gave money to her lover to enable him to buy himself fine clothes, and to spend considerable sums in games of chance. One evening, the carpenter who had remained on intimate terms with M<sup>me</sup> R. 's son, came to give her a serenade. With no concern for the just anger of her husband, she had scarcely heard the sounds of her lover's clarinet before she ran to the window. You can imagine how the matter ended, and how the minstrel carpenter took to flight. But, a short time after, M<sup>me</sup> R. , while everybody was asleep, left her house and took herself to M. 's, leaving behind her the child she was suckling. She wanted to run off with the carpenter in order to get away from her husband, who, she said, ill-treated her. Her reply to her husband, who implored her to return home, was . " I have nothing to do with you, or with those with you; I have no longer a son, I no longer have anybody " When she returned home, she refused to suckle her child, and would not know her niece who had just come from Naples.

The husband wished to get M. . out of the country, but the latter refused. M<sup>me</sup> R. . continued to give him money, and even the title deeds of property which she had bought out of her savings for her children At night, M. . climbed into a window of the house, and had interviews with her

M<sup>me</sup> R. . continued to show forth her love for him by insensate acts, continually calling his name aloud. She who had formerly been so modest, now made confidants of her own daughters.

One evening she had an absolute attack of delirium, believing that her daughter was M. 's sister, and that he had been killed. She was then taken to Naples, from which place she fled away with her lover to Lucera There they

passed the night together at an inn, and then returned to M s, where they were arrested (1)

**The Bordeaux Scandal** Marianne Laborde, of Bordeaux sent her master and mistress to sleep one night, with a narcotic, and then went out with the two children, a little girl aged 12 and a little boy aged 11. She took them to her lovers where she handed them over to these men's sexual passions, making them assist at erotic scenes of the most shameless kind, and making them copulate together for the vile satisfaction of those who were present. She compromised an honourable officer of high rank in the French Army, who was acquitted by the Court. It was discovered that L was hysterical (hemianæsthesia and convulsive attacks) and that before her disease, she was a very respectable person and worthy of all confidence. Since her attack she had prostituted herself in a shameless manner and had lost all sense of morality.

**Madame la Baronne Trélat** relates to us the history of a hysterical woman a frequent visitor at the Salpêtrière where she had, each time she stayed left terrible memories behind her. She cleverly passed herself off as the widow of a General and managed thereby to make dupes of every kind. 'I do not know,' says Trélat, speaking of her any instance of a life so mischievous and hurtful to Society. Madame B passed all her time, when she was in her right mind, in planning the most skilful robberies and in establishing high class haunts of debauchery. She admitted to them only pretty, clever, and mu

(1) The husband brought an action against M accusing him of having taken advantage of his wife seeing that at this time she was not in her right mind. The Magistrates of the *Chambre du Conseil* at Lucera before whom the case was brought, non suited the husband.

sical young women, who spoke several languages, and there she prostituted her own daughters. The father and grandfather of this woman were lunatics, and her two daughters, like herself, were hysterical, and of extraordinary moral depravity. ”

The fictions of hysterical subjects are often drawn out to a great extent, they often assume the form of serious imputations and of accusations against others.

### **Mental Condition of Hysterical Subjects.**

One hysterical woman furiously denounces her servants as thieves. Another accuses a young man of gaining entrance to her bed-room in the night, and of offering her violence

Another, who is proved to be a *virgin* by medical examination, accuses a priest of having violated her under the most dramatic circumstances, after he had been twice stabbed with a dagger. Another falls fainting on the threshold of her door. Her wrists are bound, her mouth is gagged, her clothes are covered with dirt. When she recovers, she describes how she has suffered an attempt at rape on the part of two young men, who, being unsuccessful, have in revenge cut and wounded her on her face, arms, and breast. The enquiry ending in no result, she finally confesses that her adventure was imaginary, and she had herself made the cuts which were observed on her body (Legrand du Saule.)

A young girl said that she had been the object of an attack in a railway-carriage, and showed a very slight wound below her left breast. It was discovered at last that the assassin's knife had been purchased a month before by the pretended victim (Brouardel.)

The whole life of some hysterical subjects is only a tis-

sue of deceit and fiction as may be seen by the following observation

“ On the 23<sup>d</sup> of Nov 187 , Pauline R was affected with extreme exaltation as the consequence it was said, of a violent indecent assault Half naked, with her chemise in rags she uttered imprecations on her assailant, who was no other, she declared than the manufacturer by whom she was employed

This man was prosecuted, and sentenced to a month's imprisonment, although he was innocent and a victim of Pauline's machinations She had, in fact, made her preparations beforehand for the scene she had enacted, by spreading a report that her master was persecuting her with his attentions, and by circulating anonymous letters

Moreover this was not her first attempt Of a light and frivolous disposition she had married two husbands in succession, and had led a gay life without any attempt at concealment

Having lost her reputation, she had changed her residence and started afresh In the new locality where she established herself, she pretended to have visions to see apparitions, and to work miracles The Curé distrusted her whereupon she betook herself elsewhere On this occasion in order to substantiate her accounts of trances and conversations with the Saints, she broke the windows in her house, and accused the free thinkers of persecuting her These scenes of violence were renewed again and again the police interfered but were unable to unravel the question, and enquiries led to no results she figured as a martyr

A month afterwards she pretended that a burglary had occurred in her house Lengthy proceedings ensued, but again they led to no results the *gendarmes* were tired out, and the *juge de la paix* was accused of incapacity



Three months later, she pretended that an attempt had been made to murder her. The authorities visited her house for the third time, and the *Juge d'instruction* saw at length that he had hitherto been the dupe of this clever impostor."

We will complete this short study of Hysteria in woman, by the account of a criminal case, in which the lies and pretences of an hysterical woman had the most disastrous consequences.

"The story is not unknown of a young cavalry Lieutenant (E. de la R. .) who was accused by the hysterical daughter of General X. ., commandant of the Cavalry School at Saumur, of having violated her.

This young person commenced with a series of complaints against M. de R. ., that he had made improper proposals to her at a dinner-party, at which she happened to be sitting beside him, and continued her campaign with a shower of anonymous letters, very compromising, of M<sup>me</sup> de X. . and her daughter Marie, in which another officer was accused of being the lover of M<sup>me</sup> X. . and also of her daughter at the same time.

The General also received letters warning him that Lieutenant de R. . was laying a plot against his honour and that of his family. When therefore that officer presented himself at an evening party given by the General at his Hôtel, the latter requested him not to show himself there again.

While the young man, overwhelmed with surprise, was seeking to obtain an explanation of the affront which had been inflicted upon him by his superior, X. .'s Hôtel was two days afterwards the scene of a most dramatic event.

At two o'clock in the morning, Marie de X. .'s governess heard groans in her mistress' bedroom, she entered and found her lying on the floor with her chemise stained

with blood, a handkerchief drawn tightly round her neck, and a rope round her waist. The young Marie declared that a man, whom she had recognized as Lieutenant de R , in spite of a piece of cloth which hid his face had entered her bed room by the window, breaking a pane of glass had thrown her on the floor and, after trying in vain to violate her, had stabbed her with a knife in her most secret parts. Her parents, who were only informed of it on the following day, kept silence about the outrage. The fact must be noted that two days after she was wounded, Marie de X was dancing at a ball, that she did not show even to her mother the secret wounds which she said she had received, and that three months afterwards, a doctor commissioned by the magistrate, was only able to discover a scarcely visible scar three lines in length by one in width.

Nevertheless, the family of X continued to receive letters signed F de la R , in which the writer boasted in the most odious terms of his crime. Marie came one day out of her dressing room, holding in her hand an anonymous letter full of threats towards her parents, which she had just found there. She was seized with terrible nervous spasms, she had hallucinations. 'A red man! The paper! they are murdering my father and mother!' she cried. She remained for two days in such an alarming condition that Extreme Unction was administered to her.

After that the affair was reported to the authorities Lieutenant de la R , who had fought a duel in the interval with M d E , was imprisoned and, nevertheless it was an extraordinary fact that letters signed by him still managed to reach his victim.

The counsel for the defence, in a speech which may be considered as a model of medico legal sagacity, tried to bring out the material impossibilities contained in the account of the outrage as given by the victim.

Putting the question on its true ground. M<sup>e</sup> Chaix d'Est-Ange, with foresight which was very remarkable at that period when nervous pathology was still so little known, came to the conclusion that the anonymous letters were the work of Marie de X , and that there had been no outrage, except in the imagination of a young girl, suffering perhaps from hallucination, and in any case a prey to a neurosis which was strange, no doubt, but certain. It was proved by the reports of D<sup>rs</sup> Bailly, Recamier, and Ollivier (of Angers) that Marie de X . was affected with very pronounced spasmodic movements, and with morbid symptoms, presenting at the same time the characteristics of catalepsy and somnambulism. She had several such attacks every day, returning at a stated hour, characterised by an atrocious head-ache, the queerest grimaces, automatic movements of the limbs, and a state of complete insensibility of the sight and smell, she could be made to breathe ammonia with impunity

The jury declared M. de la R... guilty of the attempted rape, and of wilfully wounding, admitting extenuating circumstances - the Court condemned the unfortunate man to 10 years' imprisonment which he underwent in its entirety at Clairvaux, he nearly lost his reason in consequence of this long ordeal.

M. de la R.. was at length reinstated in 1849, upon the favourable report of the Keeper of the Seals, Odillon Barrot, who had been counsel for the prosecution " (Legrand du Saule, *les Hystériques*.)

**Hysterical Men.** Although Hysteria may be considered as the almost exclusive appanage of the female sex, observations have nevertheless been made of hysterical men We will give an observation which is conclusive upon this point

"L is a peasant, whose nervous heredity is most marked. The son of a hysterical mother and a lunatic father, he is himself a convulsive hysterical subject, a remarkable instance of greater hysteria in a man. His life has been but a long series of extravagances, which in the end have brought him to prison. In love also he was eccentric and deficient in balance. When quite young he fell in love with a young girl in his own village, and wanted to marry her in spite of her lack of fortune. However, on this occasion he yielded to the paternal authority, and married, contrary to his inclination, another woman for whom he felt no affection. The nuptial ceremony was performed under almost comical conditions: as soon as he left the *Mairie*, L disappeared and at the time of the religious ceremony in church, the bride was at the altar alone; he was discovered in a tavern at an adjoining village, imbibing freely with one of his drunken friends. Quarrels soon broke out between husband and wife, and, at the end of a few years, a divorce ensued.

His conjugal misfortunes did not impart any wisdom to L. He continued on the contrary to lead an irregular life. He took two mistresses in succession who deceived and robbed him. He wanted even to marry the latter of these, in spite of the prudent remonstrances of his father. He was completely under this woman's influence and she was able to induce him to commit a robbery. It was only in prison that his eyes were opened and that he saw he had been deceived by her he loved. His love was then changed into violent hatred, and he did all he could to involve his mistress in his fall. (E. Laurent, *l'Amour Morbide*.)

**Various Forms of Insanity connected with the Genito Sexual Function**      Menstruation,

which is the pivot of the sexual life in the woman, is often the cause of various forms of insanity. The woman in fact, owing to her eminently nervous temperament, is predisposed to reactions of the brain upon the matrix, and on the other hand, the province of the matrix renders it subject to the reactions of the brain.

**Insanity of Puberty Observations** At the period of Puberty, the nervous system is profoundly disturbed, and undergoes considerable modifications, which, in some individuals, become the origin of serious disorders, especially if heredity and certain vicious habits favour their development.

The following case, reported by Servaes (*Archiv f psych*), shows us that the sexual sentiment may then have a perverted character.

“ Catherine W. , 16 years of age, has not yet menstruated. Her father is of a choleric and passionate nature.

Seven weeks after her admission (Oct. 3<sup>rd</sup>, 1872), melancholy depression and irritability. On Nov. 27<sup>th</sup>, an attack of wild frenzy which lasted for two days. Then melancholy again. On Nov. 6<sup>th</sup>, normal condition.

On Nov. 24<sup>th</sup> (28 days after the first attack of wild frenzy) calm and depressed. On Dec. 27<sup>th</sup>, state of exaltation (gaiety, laughter, etc.) with amorous desire for her nurse. On Dec. 31<sup>st</sup> a sudden attack of melancholy, which passed away after a duration of two hours. On Jan. 20<sup>th</sup>, a fresh attack exactly like the former. A fresh attack on Feb. 18<sup>th</sup>, at the same time as some traces of the *menses*. The patient retained no recollection of anything which had occurred during her paroxysms, she blushed and was greatly surprised at hearing an account of what had taken place.

Afterwards she still had abortive attacks, which, thanks

to the regulation of the *menses* in June, have given place to a complete state of psychical comfort ”

**Insanity of the Menopause** If Puberty is often the cause of mental disorder, the Menopause is also observed to be the origin of intellectual disorders which display the following symptoms attacks of depression alternating with agitation, delirious apprehensions hallucinations, ideas of suicide knowledge of her condition, dread of a misfortune which she cannot define

‘ Lady of tranquil disposition, arriving at the Menopause Serious hereditary defects Always eccentric and violent, rigid moral principles, no children from her marriage Several years ago, she had hystero epileptic attacks after strong moral emotions Post epileptic mental disorder followed, then insomnia for several months Afterwards, at times, there was insomnia due to menstruation, and the impulsion *pueros decimum annum nondum agentes allicere, osculari et genitalia eorum tangere* At the present time she has no desire for coition and no wish to approach an adult man

The patient at times speaks freely of this impulsion, and asks that she may be watched, for she cannot answer for herself During the intervals, she anxiously avoids all conversation on the subject, she is very decent in her behaviour, and has no sexual wants of any kind (Angel, *Archiv f Psych*)

“ It is true, says D Paul Bruant, that a great number of women are strong enough to pass the menopause without feeling any disagreeable consequence, it is not uncommon however to observe, not an absolute mental disorder, but a condition bordering on it, and ready to turn into mental alienation The woman s character is totally trans-

formed (Dr P Bruant, *De la Mélancholie survenant à la Ménopause* Thèse de Paris, 1888 )

“ The consequences of this psychical condition are easy to foresee. At its formidable approach, women, who have hitherto been virtuous, will be seen neglecting their duties as mothers of families, and becoming inflamed with foolish passions, most frequently for youths, whom they will follow in an open and almost cynical manner. They will lose every feeling of modesty, and preserve hardly any restraint. Feeling that this passion will be their last, and, as it were, the Saint Martin’s summer of their amorous life, they grasp it with a tenacity which nothing can shake off, and nothing can weary. And God knows how the majority of them place their affections. They do not select the best or the most worthy, but ordinarily the youngest. They are not content with throwing their family into mourning by their scandalous conduct, with dishonouring themselves and their husbands by culpable *liaisons*, they purchase, if need be, the love of him they covet. Their charms have passed, they are no longer beautiful enough to inspire a passion. So much the worse ! They must have love by some means or other ! And if no one is willing to give it to them, they purchase it. If necessary, they will retain their youthful lover by overwhelming him with gifts, by offering him fine suppers, and by lining his pockets with gold.

“ Is not this a veritable delirium ?

“ And these cases are far from rare. I have quoted a certain number in my book on *les Habitudes des prisons de Paris*. The story may there be read of a woman who had a wine business of her own, she was over forty, and fell in love with a young good-for-nothing, whom she housed and fed and paid. Each love-meeting brought this rascal in a little present, without counting the tips he thought proper to offer himself by dipping his hand into the till.

Prado was for some time kept by elderly women, who gave him their savings, together with their last love Pranzini too inspired a love in a woman of forty-five, who kept him, and tried to save his life " (E. Laurent )

**Utero-ovarian Insanity** Moreau (of Tours) designates by this name a species of insanity, which, according to him, is the portion of old maids. " Every doctor, he says, has seen in the course of his practice aged women displaying signs of mental aberration more or less connected with the sexual passion. Some of the patients become the heroines of scandalous cases, and accuse respectable men of having violated them. Skae had the opportunity at a time when a suit of this kind was being tried, of enquiring into the frequency of this delirious conception, and he found that, out of 250 women the majority of whom were demented, 23 firmly believed that men cohabited with them every night."

Pathological anatomy has given the key of these strange phenomena, which are almost always connected with an affection of the ovaries or of the neighbouring organs. One woman believed that the spirits penetrated through her entrails into her vagina, and violated her that way. She had a generalized cancer uniting the ovaries, the uterus, and the epiploon. Another was persuaded that some one violated her every night by the rectum, while the marital coition was effected by the ordinary way. She displayed at the umbilicus a fistular passage due to the persistent permeability of the urachus?

" Nevertheless there are cases in which the closest examination does not reveal any organic lesion, and in which the delirium may be ascribed to the menopause alone. This is what we have been able to observe at the Salpêtrière, in the case of an unmarried woman, 45 years of age, who



had genital hallucinations. She was convinced that she was violated every night, and that steel instruments were introduced into her vagina to cut the umbilical cord..Another, now under treatment, displaying the same hallucinations, has a fibrous tumour of the uterus. " (Moreau.)

**Post Connubial Insanity.** This is a very curious condition, happily very rare, supervening in some individuals the early days after marriage. Instances of insanity brought on by the first conjugal intercourse are not uncommon. Esquirol says that he attended a lady who had an attack of mania the first night of her marriage, her modesty having revolted against the necessity of sleeping with a man. A young and nervous wife was so painfully affected by the first approaches of her husband that she immediately lost her reason.

This name of post-connubial insanity is due to Skae.

Post-connubial insanity is observed in the case of vigorous individuals who have preserved a severe continence until the period of their marriage. The first night of happiness is followed in their case by attacks of short duration, similar to the epileptiform convulsions of progressive general paralysis most frequently the symptoms presented by these patients are those of acute dementia They are stupid and incapable of giving an answer These symptoms are transitory, and the prognosis is favourable In the case of women, the disorders are more serious, it is notably a change of humour which causes the woman to detest the man for whom she previously felt adoration Such patients, says Moreau, are dangerous to themselves and to others. Suicidal delirium is of an intensity which necessitates the greatest watchfulness, the patients displaying incredible address in order to attain their ends

**Relation of Insanity to Pregnancy and Menstruation** Moreau is of opinion that the forms of insanity, the origin of which is traced back to disorders of the menstrual functions, do not deserve our attention. What we state here with regard to psychical disorders in the menstrual function, applies equally to cases of insanity resulting by modifications occasioned to the organism by the gravid condition of the uterus. These forms of insanity, which have always been known, have been studied by a large number of authors and in our days principally by Marcé, who, in his treatise *la Folie des Femmes enceintes*, has passed successively in review the forms of insanity which happen in the course of pregnancy to women who have recently given birth to a child and to nursing women. He has quoted cases where the delirium was complicated with erotic delirium, which disappeared with the confinement.

We accept the correctness of Moreau's opinion but we consider it proper to state in a few words the relations which exist between insanity and the genital sense.

We find in Lombroso (*op cit*) certain indications which we reproduce. According to this author "one of the peculiar characteristics of criminal insanity, which is however only an exaggeration of the normal state, is the over-excitement which is manifested at the menstrual period in pregnancies and menapauses."

"Several tranquil lunatics, writes Ball, feel a return of the frenzy at the menstrual period, and require assistance."

"At every menstrual period a young girl used to *castrate* the first animal which fell into her hands without having any delirium in the intervals."

"During pregnancy writes Cabanis a kind of animal instinct dominates the woman and may lead her to any

kind of excess, it may be the same at the return of the first menstruation, and during the period of lactation. ”

“ Another prominent characteristic of the female lunatic, and consequently of criminal insanity, is sexual exaggeration. While in the case of madmen the genésic sense is almost always tranquil, I have almost always found it excited in the case of female lunatics. I have seen a woman, aged 80, who masturbated herself with a copper crucifix. Another woman filled her vulva with knives, rags, and egg-shells, a third used to masturbate herself in the middle of all the rest with a candle and with eggs. And while habits of *tribadism* are concealed even by prostitutes, *tribadism* is openly practised in the wards, and is widely spread there (I found it in 10 cases out of 200) even among girls who have not yet reached puberty : it has not even that appearance of platonism, and that jealousy which partly idealizes it among prostitutes. ” (*Archives de Psychologie* )

“ In mania (writes Schule) the women unbosom themselves in a continual chattering, which is a mixture of true and false perceptions, and especially of transitory fantastic conceptions, accompanied by grimaces and erotic boasting. They have a tendency to strip themselves naked, to assume cynical attitudes, and to smear themselves with their food, urine, and drugs. Nymphomania transforms the most timid young girl into a bacchante, who in immodesty cannot be even compared with a prostitute. Every man she meets excites her lust, she provokes him by the most refined coquetry, and even by violence ; she often has a burning thirst, a dry mouth, and a foetid breath, and an agitation of her sides as if she were taking part in coition, while she shows a tendency to bite those whom she meets, to such an extent that she might be thought hydrophobic, and the more so as she sometimes

has a horror of liquids and feels a choking sensation

“ A mitigated form is more frequent, in which only an excessive cleanliness (or dirtiness) is observed in the woman, and a tendency to strip herself or to tear up her clothes and also to speak of her own marriage or of that of her friends ’ (Enninghaus *Allgemeine Psychopathologie* 1878 )

Before men, the patient has a more frequent respiration, a more rapid pulse, and a more animated expression, reserved at first, she soon abandons all restraint, and indulges in loose conversation she avoids women and sometimes maltreats them when she is not possessed by *tribadic* impulses I knew one who boasted of having had 44 lovers, and when she came across any of the students she invited them to share her bed

Female lunatics in general, in all these sexual aberrations as in the erotic tendencies, far surpass the men, owing no doubt to the greater number of local diseases After long years of observation, I do not think that Hergt has exaggerated (*All Leits Psych*) in calculating that two thirds of the female lunatics suffer from hypertrophies of the neck of the uterus, from ulcers of the orifice, from utero vaginal adherences and from ovaritis either, according to Flemming as a complication of the disorder of the abdominal function, or through hyperæsthesia and irritation of the spinal marrow which render the uterine reflexes more active, and the psychical activity more weak provoking convulsions inducing abnormal sensations and transforming them into illusions into hallucinations, and into obscene impulsive acts, or into deliria

Krafft Ebing has observed that insanity in the woman assumes more generally than in the man a turbulent and indecent aspect

**Obscenities of Insane Females and Criminal Lunatics** Lombroso demonstrates finally among female lunatics, just as among criminals, the inversion of the most specific characteristics of the woman, such as decency, docility, and sexual apathy. The same author says further on "More constant is the relation of prostitution with common moral insanity, that is to say with that of women who have recovered their health in Asylums. Excessive hate, it is true, is to be observed there, but above all obscenity and *tribadism*. Thus C. , observed by Bouvechiato, hated not only those who offended her, but also those who came near her even if they did good to her, one day she asked to be allowed to beat two dogs, because it had irritated her to see them caressed by others.

Cath. , studied by Salmi-Pace, wanted to prostitute her own daughters, not for gain, but only to oblige them to feel a pleasure which they abhorred.

Through a singular obscene altruism, which we have already met with in great criminals, the woman X. , quoted by Legrand, under the pretext of saving her son from syphilis and other evils, urged him herself along the road to carnal love, and then accustomed him to it progressively *rationnement* so that he might not suffer by it she then wanted to obtain a miscarriage, so that she might not lose her beauty and so displease him, for in that case she should kill herself. she would not accept reproaches. "I am pardoned by God, she said, who is infallible."

This same C. , observed by Bouvechiato, was a *tribade*, and in order to have accomplices in *tribadism*, she pretended to be paralytic, and summoned nymphomaniacs to assist her, she imagined many diseases in order that she might not work. she had created an absolute association of calumny among the hysterical women of her set."

" I knew one, who was of an illustrious family who wrote verses, and was even of a literary turn, and who while she gave herself to everybody from the highest dignitaries to the lowest crossing-sweeper, accused her husband, with extraordinary skill, of being an adulterer, and of wishing to shut her up in order to pursue his love-affairs with greater freedom she ended by disquieting the authorities At the Asylum she boasted of having never passed a day without a love-affair and laughed at the matrons who could not do as much

In the Asylum even she succeeded, although she was watched in stirring up intrigues calumniating and accusing in turn all who assisted her just as she calumniated the doctor to such an extent that there was great unpleasantness about it The only perversion which marked her out as a lunatic, was that of sometimes mixing her excrement and urine with her food and that sometimes on the very day on which she had depicted in verse of wonderful feeling the purity of platonic love

Another possessed of great intelligence a poet also, passed from one love to another, exacting from her lovers a fidelity which she did not return, and betraying them the same day, often revealing her infidelity herself, and urging them to avenge themselves

Although she was rich she obtained from each of them bank notes which she then carefully hid she looked for scandal in love and did not give herself for instance, to the lover by whom she might profit in her own room but in a café, or in a box at the theatre

Another woman who displayed all the characteristics of degeneracy, purchased by her husband to whom she had been sold by her mother did nothing from the very day of their marriage, but poison his life This woman declared that he had relations with her sister-in law, with

her servants, and with her mother, and accused him before the *Maire* and the doctors.

When he wished her to have an operation performed for an internal polypus, she declared that his object was to kill her. She passed her whole day in complete idleness, interrupted only by excessive drinking, by sexual intercourse and by games of cards, through which she declared that she was able to divine the intentions of her husband and her lovers.

In the passages of the Infirmary, she allowed herself to be seen almost naked by the male nurses. She detailed in cynical language the pretended obscenities of her husband, and described the most intimate peculiarities of her own body. Sometimes she would touch and eat her excrement, a fact which we have often seen joined with obscenity; she also washed her eyes with urine. But in a Court of Justice and before her doctors, she knew how to justify all her strange behaviour." (Lombroso, *la Femme criminelle et la Prostituée* Paris, Félix Alcan, 1896).

From all that has gone before, we can deduce the absolute conclusion that the uterus and the encephalon are, even more in the woman than they are in the man, in a state of close dependence one upon the other, and that if the uterus reacts upon the encephalon, so the mental affections of every nature react in their turn upon the uterus.

The latter therefore is the true pivot of the nature of woman, and it was the divine Plato who enunciated the celebrated aphorism "*uterus, animal in animale.*"

END OF THE ABUSES,  
ABERRATIONS AND CRIMES  
OF THE  
GENITAL SENSE

# INDEX

OF SUBJECTS, WORKS AND AUTHORS DEALT WITH

in the

‘ MEDICO-LEGAL EXAMINATION ’







# INDEX

## ABUSES, ABERRATIONS AND CRIMES of the GENITAL SENSE

<i>Aberrations du sens gé-</i> <i>nésique</i> MOREAU 77	<i>Anomalies Sexual —</i> pathological trans- formation of Sexual
<i>Aberrations genital</i> 208 232 254 281 305	Instinct 21
<i>Abuses genital,</i> 68 104, 128 173	Antipathy love chang- ed into 11
ACTON D (Foreword) 11	Aprons and underlinen azoophilism directed
Anaesthesia acquired 66	to women s 258 260
— congenital 58	APULEIUS, <i>Golden Ass</i> 314 316
— sexual 58	<i>Archiv für Psychia</i> <i>trie</i> 62
Ancients bestiality among the 312	Atia defiled by a snake 310 344
Andromania 34 85	<i>Attentats aux Mœurs</i> THOINOT D 26 30 79 91
Annamite pirate chief, vengeance on 410-415	AUGUSTINE St 16
Annamite race, innate cruelty of 406	Azoophilism 254
<i>Anomalies de l'Instinct</i> <i>sexuel</i> D LEGRAND 23 24	— definition of 254
<i>Anomalies etc, se-</i> <i>xuelles</i> MAGNAN 19	— directed to aprons and underlinen 258 260
<i>Anomalies of Sexual</i> <i>Instinct</i> Classifica- tion of (MAGNAN) 19	— directed to caps 264 266
	— directed to a cos- tume 254 258
	— directed to fabrics 270 278

- Azoophilism directed  
to handkerchiefs 260-262  
directed to shoes 267-270  
directed to statues . 279, 280  
homosexual 262, 263  
Venus of Praxiteles 279
- BAYARD, *Uteromanie* 75
- BELMER, *Nymphomanie* . 99
- BELOT, Adolphe, *La bouche de Madame X* 243
- BERGERET, Dr, *Fraudes genitales*. . . . 108
- Bertrand the Disinterer of Corpses . 297-302
- Bestiality . 21, 29, 305  
anal, with a bull 326  
— anal, with dogs 320, 325  
Ancients, among the . . . 312  
— definition of . . 395  
— depravation or aberration of mind 306-309  
— diseased 336 343  
dogs, with 316, 326-331  
— history of 309  
— men, mares and she-asses 332, 333  
men and poultry 334-335  
— men and she-goats 331, 332  
modern 316-322  
— Paris brothels, in . 343, 344  
— permitted to Mohammedans 310, 311
- BINET, *Fetichisme dans l'Amour* 233, 253, 256
- Blanchard, case of 392-394  
"Bluebeard", see Gilles de Rays
- BLUMRODER, *Ueber Irresein* . 347
- Bona Dea, mysteries of the 313
- BRANTÔME, *Dames Galantes*. . . 192, 346
- CANTARANO, *Psychiatria* . 249
- Cantharides sweet-meats . . 439
- Caps, azoophilism directed to women's. . 264-266
- Catherine de Medicis 458  
"Chasseur et lapin" 110  
"Chaussieurs de l'Ouest 409
- Chinese duck trick . 335
- CHEVALLIER, L, *l'Inversion sexuelle* . 16, 17
- CHIVET, *la Folie chez les Vieillards*. . . 52
- Clemens, case of. . 74-82  
"Club-shaped" penis . . . 116
- Cochin-China — sadic cruelties during revolt of 1867 . 409  
— sadic murder of a European 419, 420
- COFFIGNON, *la Corruption a Paris* 449
- Coition and onanism compared as to effects . . 148-152  
"Commissary's hat" 124
- Copulation, desire for — the basis of human love . 5
- Costume, azoophilism directed to a particular 262, 263
- CRELAT, *Folie lucide* 48
- CULLIERE, A, *Frontieres de la folie* . 70

- « Danse du ventre » 447
- DEBAY, *l'Homme et la Femme* 84
- Defects fetichism of physical 244
- Degeneracy mental 26 28
- Dégénères (les)* MA GNAN et LEGRAINE 30
- Delirium acutum ex abstinencia 34 35
- DESCARTES *Traité des Passions* 244
- Dogs criminal tongue 36
- Dogs anal bestiality with 320 325
- Dogs bestiality with 316 326-331
- Don Quixote and Dulcinea 500
- Duck trick Chinese 335
- Ear and month fetichism of 243
- Erotic temperament 32 33 34
- ENNINGHAUS *Allgemeine Psychopathia* 529
- Epilepsy 503 509
- Erotomania -1 30 56, 499 532
- Excesses genital 31
- Excrement eating 531 532
- Exhibitionism 208
- characteristics of (THOINOT) 209
- definition of 208
- degenerates among 2 3 229
- epileptics, among 220 223
- general paralysis in 212 213
- imbeciles and idiots among 209 212
- senile decay and alcoholic dementia in 213 219
- Exhibitionists rubbing 229-231
- types of 209
- Eyes, fetichism of the 237, 238
- Fabrics azoophilism directed to 270 278
- Factors which constitute human love 3
- Fellation of mares 333 334
- Fetiches diversity of 233
- Fetichism 29
- definition of 232
- ear and month of the 243
- eyes of the 237 238
- foot of the 248 251
- general characteristics of 234 236
- hair of the 245 248
- hand of the 238 243
- homosexual 262
- odor of femina of the 251 253
- opulent forms of 243
- origin of 233
- physical defects of 244
- voice of the 253
- Fetichistes (les)* GARNIER 264
- Fetichistic love 233
- Fetichistic necrophilists 289-294
- Flagellators 432
- Folie lucide la* TRE LAT 48
- Folies passionnelles* PICHON 18
- Foot fetichism of the 248 251
- Forçats (les)* LAUVERGNE 37 38
- Forty seven 109
- Fraudes genitales* D

BERGERET	108	lism	262, 263
French Court, "Gode- michets" at	143-193	Homosexual fetichism	245-248
"Frigidity"	20	Hottentot Venus, The.	4
<i>Frontières de la Folie</i> ,		HUGUET Dr, <i>l'Onanis-</i>	
CULLIÈRE	10	me	284
GALL, <i>Phrenology</i>	37, 51	<i>Human Gorillas</i> (Car- rington)	344
GARNIER, 33, 69, 72, 73,		Hyperaesthesia, sexual	34
117, 121, 207, 264, 275		Hypertrophy of the ce- rebellum	135
GARNIER, <i>l'Onanisme</i> ,		Hysteria..	509-520
46, 107, 184		Hysterical men	520
Genesis anaesthesia	20	Impotence	58
Genesis excitation,		Impotence, psychopa- thic	60
morbid	54, 55	<i>Impuissance sexuelle</i> ,	
Genital aberrations,		HAMMOND	60
26, 208, 232, 254, 281, 305		<i>Impuissance et Sterilité</i>	
— abuses, 20, 69, 104,		ROUBAUD	191, 255
128, 173		"Ingratitude, the hei- ght of"	127
excesses	26, 31	Insanity, forms of —	
— follies	26	connected with Ge- nito Sexual Junction	521
madness	345, 421, 455,	— menopause, of the.	523
468, 199		obscurities	530-532
— perversions	26	— post-connubial	526
— perversions, law of	17	— puberty, of	522
Gilles de Rays, le Sei- gneur	346, 355, 368-392	— utero-ovarian	525
"Godemichets"	126	Inversion, sexual	29
— at French Court	192, 193	<i>Inversion sexuelle</i> , CHE- VALLIER, L	16, 17
HAMMOND, <i>Impuissance</i>		JACOB, P -L, <i>Curiosi- tés de l'histoire de</i>	
<i>sexuelle</i>	60, 257, 258	<i>France</i>	372
Hand, fetichism of the	238-243	Justification of title of present Work	16
Handkerchiefs, azoo- philism directed to	260-262	Kanakanecrophilists of New Caledonia	302-304
"Height of ingрати- tude,"	127	KRAFFT-EBING, Dr	
HELWICH, <i>Ephemerides</i>		(Foreword)	
<i>des curieux de la Na- ture</i>	100		
HERODOTUS, instances of necrophilism from	283		
Homosexual azoophi-			

- 10 33 34,77 243 244 255  
275 349 435 457 529  
KRAFFT EBING D *Psy*  
*chopathiasexualis*, 17 53 60
- LAFOREST DUBUT DE  
*Pathologie sociale*  
41 42 86
- LALANNE 209 220
- LALLEMAND 112 141
- LAURENT C *l'Amour*  
*morbide* 53 234 251 280
- LAUVERGNE *les For*  
*çats* 37 38
- Laval Seigneur de *see*  
*Gilles de Rays*
- Law of genital perversions 17
- LEGRAND, *la Folie de*  
*vant les Tribunaux*  
284 300 530
- LEGRAINE Dr, *Anoma*  
*lies de l'Instinct*  
*sexuel* 19 21 23 24
- Lepage case of Joseph  
366 368
- Letter of a masturbator  
139 140
- Letter of a masturbatress 205 207
- LOMBROSO, 259 347 365,  
530 532
- London Minotaur A 43
- LOUYER VILLERMAY 99
- Love basis of human  
— changed into anti  
pathy 11  
— factors which con-  
stitute human 3  
— influence of tempe-  
rature on 31  
— psychical element of 6  
— suicides from 9
- LUCAS PROSPER *l'He*  
*rérite naturelle* 86
- LYDSTONE, *Sexual Per*  
*version* 245  
Lypomania 219
- MACE *Un joli monde*  
247, 261  
— *Gibier de Saint*  
*La are* 454
- Madness genital 345 421  
455 468 499
- Madness relation of  
genital perversions  
to 24
- MAGNAN 19 21 225
- MAGNAN et LEGRAINE  
*les Degeneres* 30
- Maniacs masturbation  
by 139
- Mares bestiality with  
332 333
- Marriage savage 14
- Masochism 456 468-498  
— and animals 490  
— complicated with  
Sadism 486-490  
— complicated with  
Sexual Inversion 494  
— definition 468  
— frequency of 471  
— Rousseau 47  
— Symbolic 484 486  
— Symptomatology  
and etiology of 469  
— three categories 474 484
- Masturbation 104
- Masturbation acces-  
sory practices of 184  
— among animals 104 105  
— bestial 186  
— clitoridian 178 181  
— maniacs of 139  
— pederasts by 111  
— prostitutes 116  
— urethral 181 184  
— uterine 177

- Masturbation vaginal 174  
     vagina-uterine . 177  
 Masturbator's letter 139, 140  
 Masturbatress's letter  
     . . . 205-207  
 Mendes, he-goat and  
     woman at . 312  
 Mental degeneracy 26, 28  
 Mental deviations 18  
 MINIME, Dr, *la Prostitution a Londres*. 43  
 Minotaur, a London . 43  
 Microscopes or Peccipers . 444-445  
 Mohammedans, bestiality permitted to. 310, 311  
 MOLL, *Perversion de l'Instinct genital*.  
     243, 445, 457  
 MOREAU, *Aberrations du sens genésique*. 77, 285  
 Mouth and ear, fetishism of . . 243  
 Mutilation loving workman, a . . 64  
  
 Necrophilist, a convict  
     . . . 285-289  
 Necrophilists, fetish 289-294  
 Necrophilists, Kanaka —  
     of New Caledonia 302-304  
 Necrophilists, sadistic  
     . . . 294-296  
 Necrophily . . 29, 280  
 — artificial — in Parisian brothels . . 280  
 — Bertrand, case of  
     . . . 297-302  
     definition of 280  
 — general characteristics of . . . 281, 282  
 Necrophily, instances  
     of — from HERODOTUS 283  
     THOINOT and  
     KRAFFT-EBING on 282, 283  
  
 Nervous system, diseases of . . 27  
 Neurasthenia . 433  
 Nymphomania 27, 46, 47, 85  
 — cases of . 92-101  
     classification of  
     (THOINOT) . 91  
     degenerate . 91  
     senile. . 91  
 — three phases of (MOREAU). . . . 86  
 Nymphomaniac, an imbecile . . . 102  
 Nymphomaniac love, exclusive . 101  
 Nymphomanie, BELMER 99  
  
 Obscenities of insane females . 530  
 "Odor di femina", fetishism of. 251-253  
 Onan . . . 104  
 Onanism. . . 32, 104, 433  
     causes of (in man).  
     . . . 128, 129, 132-135  
 — classification of 106  
     classification of  
     causes of. . . . 129  
 — consequences of 155-172  
 — definitions of 105, 106  
 — syndromes and  
     signs of . 145-148  
 Onanism and coition  
     compared as to effects . 148-152  
 Onanism in woman 107, 173  
     accessory practices 184  
 — bestial masturbation 181  
 — causes of. . 185-192  
     classification of 174  
 — clitoridian masturbation 178-181  
 Onanism consequences of 196-205  
 — in woman, — instru-

- ment used in the  
east for vagino uté  
rine masturbation 177
- Onanism — in woman ob  
jects extrated from vagina  
174 176
- syndromes and  
signs of 193-196
- urethral masturba  
tion 181 184
- uterine masturbation 178
- vaginal masturba  
tion 174
- vagino uterine mas  
turbation 177
- Onanisme (l)* GAR  
NIER 46 107 184
- Onanisme (l)* HUGUET 284
- Onanisme (l)* POUILLET 48
- Opulent forms, fetich  
ism of 243
- Parisian brothels arti  
ficial necrophily in 290
- bestiality in 343 344
- stercoraires in 441
- PASCALO D *Ygiene  
dell amore* 249 435, 438
- Pasiphae's bull 313
- Passionate dame a 39 40
- Pathologie sociale*  
LAFOREST 86
- Pederasty 21
- Peepers or Mixosco  
pes 444 445
- Perversion de l Instinct  
génital* MOLL 243
- Perversions genital —  
relation to madness 24
- PICHON D GEORGES,  
*Folies passionnelles*  
18 24 25 139
- PILLAUX 5 6
- PLATO 532
- Platonics 21
- PLUTARCH 313
- Pollution 112
- compression of pe  
nis by 112 114
- extraneous 110
- friction of penis  
by 114 115
- hanging by 119
- in common 107
- maladies due to 153 154
- manual 111
- personal 107
- personal and in  
common 108, 110
- posterior 125
- solitary 107
- tickling the penis  
by 118
- Postilion of Mar  
seilles 124
- ' Poses plastiques 447
- POUILLET *l Onanisme* 48
- POUILLET 69 74, 105  
141, 144 177 190
- Poultry bestiality with  
334, 335
- Precocious sexual ins  
tinct 45
- Priapism 69 70
- Prickers of girls 422 432
- Prostitution a Londres*  
D MINIME 43
- Psychiatria* CANTA  
RANO 249
- Psychiatrie Archiv  
für* 62
- Psychical element of  
human love 6
- Psychopathia sexualis*  
D KRAFFT-EBING 53 60
- Psychopathic impo  
tence 60
- Rays (Cilles de) see  
Gilles



- Reciprocal affection . . . 10  
 REGLA, PAUL DE, *Al* 311, 333  
*Klab.* 53  
 RICHEPIN, JEAN 125  
 "Rose Leaf" . . . 191, 255  
 ROUBAUD, *l'Impuis-*  
*sance et la stérilité*  
 Rousseau — a Maso-  
 chist 470  
 Sade, Marquis de 390  
 — cantharides sweet-  
 meats 439  
 Sadism 345, 421, 455-467  
 — acquired and con-  
 genital 349  
 — amongst Annamites 406  
 — antiquity of 346  
 — Blanchard, case of 392-394  
 — Catherine de Me-  
 dicis 458  
 — causes of 347, 348  
 — covering women  
 with filth 437  
 — definition of 409  
 — during Cochín Chi-  
 na revolt of 1867 409  
 — greater 355-365  
 — Gilles de Rays 368-392  
 — ideal 436  
 — jealousy, through 415-419  
 — latent 434  
 — Lepage, case of 366-368  
 — lesser 421  
 — more common in  
 men 347, 348  
 — murder of a Euro-  
 pean in Cochín Chi-  
 na 419, 420  
 — pinchers of girls 431, 432  
 — pinchers of girl's  
 fingers 431
- Sadism, — Sade, mar-  
 quis de . . . 390  
 — Saurel, murder of  
 the boy . . . 394-397  
 — symbolic 435  
 — symptomatic and  
 etiological elements  
 — la-Ki, Empress of  
 China 459  
 — urination upon wo-  
 men 437  
 — various modes  
 and instances 397-406  
 — vengeance on an An-  
 namite pirate chief 410-415  
 — Verzeni,  
 case of 361-365  
 — victims of 355  
 Sadistic necrophilists 294-296  
 Sadists, classification  
 of . . . 350  
 Sadists and Sodomists. 413  
 Salacity in boys 48  
 SANDRAS, *Maladies ner-*  
*veuses* . . . 88  
 Satyr, a human 38  
 "Satyr and the She-  
 Goat et Naples. 312  
 Satyriasis . . . 74, 79  
 — causes of . . . 77  
 Saurel, murder of the  
 boy 394-397  
 Savage marriage 14  
 SCHWARTZ 190  
*Secrets of Women* (Car-  
 rington) . . . 344  
 Sexual instinct, ano-  
 malies merely pa-  
 thological transfor-  
 mations of 21  
 — classification of ano-  
 malies of . . . 19  
 — precocious. 45

Sexual inversion	29	Tempérament influ	
She goats bestiality		ence of — on Love	31
with	331 332	THOINOT <i>Attentats aux</i>	
Shoes azoophilism di		<i>Mœurs</i> 36 30 79 85	
rected to womens		91, 213 282 283 289	
	267 276		290 340
Siphniacs	125	Title of present work	
Sombreuse marquis		justification of	16
de	44 42 52		
SPENCER HERBERT	19	<i>Untrodden Fields of</i>	
Statues azoophilism		<i>Anthropology</i> (Car	
directed to	279 280	rington)	331 408
' Stercoraires	440 441	Uterine frenzy	85
SUETONIUS <i>Vita Au-</i>		Uteromania	85
<i>gusti</i>	310 344	<i>Uteromanie</i> BAYARD	75
Suicides from love	9	' Uterus animal in	
Sweethearts of the		animale (PLATO)	532
regiment	332		
		Venus, Hottentot	4
TARDIEU, <i>Attentats</i>		Verzeni, case of	361-365
<i>aux Mœurs</i> , 32 49,		Voice, fetichism of	
	300, 308	the	253
TARNOWSKY	438		
TAXIL LÉO <i>Corruption</i>		<i>Ygiene dell amore</i>	
<i>fin de siècle</i>	290 445	D PASCALO	249 435 438





